





# GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 09

*Zi Chan Bao Zeng*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

# Synopsis

---

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 801: Emissary!

---

Yue Zhong looked at the excited Ma Lei and asked with a frown, "Blood-Sucking Bees? What's special about them?"

Ma Lei replied excitedly, "They are a special variation of bees found only in the Green Region. They suck blood to survive and can make blood honey from their prey. This blood honey is extremely precious to any biological life form, helping to nourish and can even help evolve. If one consumes it over a long period, he or she can even reach the Type 4 Divine Warrior realm. While their corpses might not be as precious as the blood honey, they still have energy and is helpful to us humans in terms of evolution. With so many corpses here, we can definitely produce more strong warriors."

Yue Zhong frowned and asked deeply, "With such enticing features, has anyone tried to rear them before?"

Ma Lei continued, "It's rumored that one particular clan of the Dino-race does rear it, treating humans as the source of blood to be fed to these bees. Each time, there would be over tens of thousands of humans sacrificed to these bees, and the produced blood honey is used to nourish the Dino-Generals."

"Tens of thousands?!"

Yue Zhong finally understood why those dino-people would send their units to capture humans. It was likely to farm them and to rear the blood-sucking bees.

A sense of danger suddenly arose in his heart. With the Green Region spanning such a huge area, there should be more than a million humans around here. To those dino-people, they were a good source of bait. Since they ruled the land, there would be no reason for them to let off any human.

Yue Zhong spoke, "Gather some people to keep these bees in

storage. Give them out as per rewards for merits or contributions."

Sun Lan Lan was standing beside Yue Zhong, decked in a black uniform and her entire look clean and fresh, her huge chest threatening to burst out of her clothes, giving off an extremely irresistible charm.

When she heard Yue Zhong's order, she replied with confidence, "Yes!"

After this period of training, she had successfully transitioned from being a self-entitled idol to a government official, handling every affair Yue Zhong delegated to her with ease and confidence. She had thus regained her natural pride and dignity as well.

Yue Zhong looked at the corpses of the blood-sucking bees and felt regret, "What a pity! If I had known their use, I would chase after them to find their nest and harvest some blood honey."

When the swarm of bees receded, Yue Zhong's energy consumption had been huge, thus he did not think of chasing them. Had he known that they were capable of such an ability, he would definitely find the nest and gather the blood honey.

Within the Sun Alliance quarters, inside the palace.

Shinya Takahiko slapped the edge of his throne, causing a huge part of it to be destroyed, as he roared in rage, "WHAT?! The Sun Warriors have all perished, even Kisame Shinji is dead? Are you certain that this information is real, Kuma Hikaruni!!"

A skinny man was kneeling and trembled as he replied, "Yes! Chief, your subordinate has gone there to verify it personally. General Kisame Shinji is truly dead, and the 100 Sun Warriors have perished as well!"

Hearing this, all the generals within the palace had ugly expressions.

The Sun Warriors were the trump cards of the Sun Alliance, in the past, when they were at a disadvantage in any battles, the

entrance of the Sun Warriors could change the tide almost instantly.

Any of the Sun Warriors in their Sun Armor could become a peak expert out there. When a hundred of them worked together, as well as Kisame Shinji acting as the center of operations, even Type 4 Divine Warriors were no match for them.

Based on their intelligence, Yue Zhong had single-handedly taken down the Vulture Tribe as well as the surrounding tribes. Based on that, Kisame Shinji had acted accordingly with the confidence that their forces could take him down.

Now that they received the report of their troops being lost in the battle, everyone was shocked beyond belief.

After his outburst, Shinya Takahiko forcefully suppressed his rage and asked coolly, "Shinji and the hundred Sun Warriors have been lost, seems like Yue Zhong has some other trump cards. Now he has some prehistoric technology as well, as well as a Type 4 Mutant Beast?"

He fell into a silence, contemplating deeply. If he were to send all his forces, there was an 80% confidence that he could annihilate Yue Zhong.

However, within the Green Region, there were still the Storm Valley and Pterosaur Mountain. If the Sun Alliance were forced back by Yue Zhong, then they would be left open for the Storm Valley and Pterosaur Mountain to launch an attack and conquer them.

As he contemplated, his eyes flashed coldly, "Nishigakete, go tell Yue Zhong, I'm willing to pass him some technology, however, in exchange, I want him to help me hunt a Type 5 Mutant Beast. As long as he agrees to this condition, not only will I pass him the tech, I can even offer a friendship, and conquer the whole Green Region together."

Nishigakete kneeled and kowtowed his respects, "Yes! Your subordinate understands!"

After that, he rose and left the mountain gorge for the distance.

In the Vulture Valley.

Inside a hall, Nishigakete was smiling at Yue Zhong, "Sir Yue Zhong! I'm glad to see you again."

"Glad? More like disappointed, aren't you?" Yue Zhong laughed out sarcastically, leaning back on his sofa that was covered in a Mutant Beast pelt, as he shot coldly, "Nishigakete, you don't think that the matter of your Sun Alliance sending troops to attack my army will be forgotten just like that, do you?"

"That? That was a misunderstanding! General Kisame Shinji had acted out of line and gone ahead without approval from the higher-ups. If he and the velociraptor troops had offended and cost you, let me extend my sincerest apologies now." Nishigakete put on an apologetic expression, as though he really did not know that it had happened. Such thick skin was required when matters of diplomacy and politics were involved.

Nishigakete continued unabashedly, "Sir Yue Zhong, our Sun Alliance had made preparations to discipline General Kisame Shinji, however, we heard that you had already wiped them out. His selfish actions have really caused us to be extremely sorry since they have offended you, and were killed by you, that's only right. However, their armor belongs to our Sun Alliance, and we hope that you can return them to us."

Yue Zhong looked at him incredulously and laughed coldly, "And what if I don't?"

The Sun Armor was a precious treasure, Yue Zhong was naturally not willing to return it.

Nishigakete chuckled and threatened, "Then I'm afraid that it will affect our friendship, and our Sun Alliance will view you as an

enemy, sparing no means to wipe you out. Sir Yue Zhong, you might have a few Type 4 Divine Warriors here, but if we were to go all out, we have the ability to deal with a Type 5 Divine Warrior even, I don't think you want to see that, do you?"

Yue Zhong narrowed his eyes, a chilly light in them, and he was about to declare war on them.

However, Nishigakete was astute, and caught the change in Yue Zhong's temperament, as he quickly continued, "Sir Yue Zhong, since you hope to obtain some technology, our Alliance Chief has already agreed to sell them to you, on a condition, after you have helped us with it, not only will we forgo the issue of the Sun Armors, we can even give half our tech stash to you, and recognize you as an ally, sharing Green Region between the both of us."

Yue Zhong's heart was stirred, "What is it?"

If it did not have to come down to fighting to obtain the technology of this world, Yue Zhong did not mind helping out. After all, the roots of the Sun Alliance were deep and unfathomable.

Nishigakete chuckled and replied, "We hope that Sir Yue Zhong can extend a helping hand with hunting a Type 5 Mutant Beast."

Yue Zhong looked at him and snorted coldly, "Hunting a Type 5 Mutant Beast? He truly dares to dream! Don't you guys know the terror of a Type 5 Mutant Beast? Even if a Type 5 Divine Warrior were to lend a hand, it would be hard to kill one in a hit. If you guys want to kill yourselves, please do. I'm not interested."

A Type 5 Mutant Beast could easily capsize a battleship, if they used their innate abilities, they were capable of causing a disaster.

Even Type 5 Divine Warriors would be extra careful when dealing with Type 5 Mutant Beasts, almost 80 or 90% of those who challenged them alone would usually perish.

Even Yue Zhong had to expend all his strength to kill the heavily

injured Type 5 Crocodile-Head Beast, trying to hunt a normal, live one was equivalent to committing suicide.

Yue Zhong felt that it would take all of the human experts of the Green Region to work together to hunt a Type 5 Mutant Beast successfully, but even so, it would cost them thousands of lives.

Nishigakete grinned, "Sir Yue Zhong, we're more than clear on the horrors of a Type 5 Mutant Beast at optimal conditions. We will naturally not antagonize one. What we want to deal with is, is a heavily injured one. However, even so, our ordinary Type 4 Divine Warriors aren't its match. If you were to join us, we would succeed. There might be risks, but we feel that it's worth it."

Yue Zhong sunk in deep thoughts, "Alright, I can help, however, if it's not heavily injured, I will not do anything."

Nishigakete smiled, "Fine!"

# Chapter 802: Trap!

---

Yue Zhong traversed through the forest quietly, walking towards a certain predetermined destination. He had arranged to hunt a Type 5 Mutant Beast together, all he required was the location and time to gather, before making his move alone.

Nishigakete tried to mention the alliance with Yue Zhong but was rejected immediately. Yue Zhong did not yet know what the prehistoric technology was capable of, he was not overconfident to the point where he thought he could saunter into their base and leave easily.

Yue Zhong continued quietly through the forest, avoiding a few herds of dinosaurs, before arriving at the location where an injured Type 5 Mutant Beast was rumored to be.

It was a large and vast lake, in the middle, a number of long necks stuck out the water, munching on the various plants around the lake, it was apparently a resting grounds for a herd of diplodocuses.

Their bodies measured more than 100 meters in length, and they were like little moving mountains. In front of them, Yue Zhong was like a grain of rice.

All around the lake, other than the diplodocuses, there were a number of stegosauruses as well. A few Microraptors were gathered at another area, while Aanatosauruses and ferocious velociraptors had their own corners. It was as though the dinosaurs were gathered together for a party.

Other than the various dinosaurs, there were even huge prehistoric mosquitoes that were larger than humans, giant dragonflies with wingspans longer than 10m, and many other Mutant bugs.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong could not help but suck in a cold breath.

The dinosaurs and Mutant Beasts and bugs here were on another level. Each of the seemingly harmless diplodocuses was actually Type 4 existences, even the Stegosauruses as well.

The Microraptors were smaller and weaker, only at the Type 2 level, however, when gathered together, with over hundreds or thousands in numbers, they were not easy targets to provoke as well.

With the various species lording over their individual territories, even a Type 5 Divine Warrior might be ravaged if he or she entered casually.

After all, Mutant Beasts were stronger than other lifeforms, a Type 4 Mutant Beast would already possess more strength than a Type 5 Divine Warrior. Their only weak point was their speed, and perception senses and intelligence being lower. That was why it was possible for a Type 5 Divine Warrior to kill them, or even some weaker Type 4 Divine Warriors. However, in terms of pure power, it was definitely higher than a Type 5 Divine Warrior.

Yue Zhong came to the lake and saw a man in silver Sun Armor about 2 kilometers away. The person also saw him locked in his position immediately with a strange glint in his eyes.

The man pointed to Yue Zhong's position and muttered, "He's here! Over there!"

The man beside Nishigakete had a disdainful look as he ordered coldly, "He's actually on time, do it!"

In the skies, a warrior with a Sun Armor rode on a pterosaur as they flew across the lake at a high speed. As he shot past, he released a number of red powder.

When the powder descended on the dinosaurs, all of them began to get agitated. Pandemonium ensued as they started to charge in various directions in a mad frenzy.

The warrior on the pterosaur continued to fly towards Yue

Zhong.

Yue Zhong's heart turned cold as he retreated explosively, "Not good! This was a trap!!"

The Pterosaur was only a Type 3 Mutant Beast, however, its speed was even faster than Yue Zhong at his peak Type 4 speed.

The Sun Warrior atop its back closed in on Yue Zhong, with a wave, he sent a large amount of powder towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed as he waved his hands, sending a blazing tower of Devil Flames soaring into the skies. The flames ate away at the powder, burning them into nothing.

All of a sudden, Yue Zhong felt an intense sense of danger. He activated his Shadow Steps and dodged to one side.

At that instant, a terrifying electromagnetic beam shot from afar, slamming into his right shoulder, blasting it apart in a shower of blood. His entire right arm was gone.

"Sniper! A top-level sniper!!"

Yue Zhong felt a sense of dread as he suppressed the pain, waving his left hand. The spider ring on it spurned out silk that covered his wound, while he leaped through the woods.

At a distance, a man with an insignificant appearance and a mustache laid on the ground, wearing a silver Sun Armor and holding an Electromagnetic Sniper in his hands. He eyed Yue Zhong coldly while aiming. It was this man who had caused Yue Zhong such a grievous injury.

The Sun Alliance was a gathering place for many experts. There were countless talents, and while the human physique was weak and most peaked at a limit of Type 3 Divine Warrior, with the right equipment and weapons, not to mention Type 4 Divine Warriors, even Type 5 Divine Warriors would suffer.

Without the proper weapons, humans were weak, whereas those

with the right gear were difficult warriors to contend with.

Shinya Takahiko asked through a voice transmitter, "Fujiki, is it done?"

The short man was called Fujiki Ichiro, the most feared sniper of the Sun Alliance. He had assassinated countless enemies for Shinya Takahiko. In fact, few knew that Fujiki Ichiro had actually assassinated a Type 4 Divine Warrior before.

Fujiki Ichiro continued to aim at Yue Zhong, ascertaining his possible location, while coldly saying, "Not yet. His danger perception is truly outstanding. I only managed to hit his shoulder."

Shinya Takahiko laughed coldly, "That's enough then. Even if he could deal with the Dinosaur Separation Powder, his blood scent would attract those greedy bugs. He's definitely dead this time."

He then turned to the man beside him, whose eyes were filled with a strange glow, "Shenmu, are the large bugs all attracted away?"

Shenmu Xiongnan replied, "Yes, they've been led away."

Shinya Takahiko's eyes lit up as he ordered, "Good! Do it now! Kill that fat bug right now!"

This time, Shinya Takahiko had plotted against Yue Zhong, on one hand, it was to eradicate this enemy, while the other, was to target the injured Type 5 Mutant Beast within the lake.

Once they managed to kill this Type 5 Mutant Beast, they would obtain a huge, rich resource, and train up a new batch of warriors. If the nucleus could be used together with the tech on Shinya Takahiko's hands, then the combat might of the Sun Alliance would go through a huge change, and they could even take down Storm Valley and Pterosaur Mountain at one go.

Under his orders, 10 Silver Sun Armor warriors led 400 white Sun Armor warriors towards the lake. They were about 2/3 of the

current Sun Alliance forces, in order to take down the Type 5 Mutant Beast, Shinya Takahiko was ready to go almost all in.

A distance away, Yue Zhong continued to sprint through the forest, behind him, a large number of dinosaurs and Mutant Beasts, as well as bugs, were chasing after him, one part agitated by the powder, the other, by the scent of his blood.

"Damn it!!"

Yue Zhong continued to flee while pulling out his Stinger to fire at the sky.

In the skies, the Sun Alliance warrior was sticking close on his Pterosaur. At the same time, the flight pattern was unpredictable, causing Yue Zhong to have no way of hitting even with his Second Order Firearms Manipulation.

The rider was extremely crafty, knowing the terror of a Type 4 Divine Warrior. He only followed Yue Zhong from afar, not intending to get close, nor come to blows.

At the same time, due to the mixture of blood and powder, many Type 3 Pterosaurs were flying over.

Eying the warrior in the sky, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and he activated his Summon Tamed Beast technique.

A void appeared in the sky, and Greenie, which had evolved to its Type 4 realm, flapped its wings and descended.

Its wingspan was now over 100m and was like a huge beast from legends. The Type 3 pterosaur was merely like a child in front of it.

Seeing the monstrous Greenie suddenly appear over him and his steed, the Sun Warrior felt despair and fair, hitting the pterosaur to flee quickly.

With a single flap of its wings, Greenie's speed reached Mach 2 and appeared above the rider, its sharp beak pecking down at the pterosaur, causing a large hole in its brain. The Sun Warrior was

also pecked in two.

After dealing with that Type 3 Pterosaur, Greenie charged into the midst of the other Type 3 pterosaurs, attacking them wildly, causing them to drop dead from the skies.

# Chapter 803: Type 5 Diplodocus!

---

On the ground, the terrifying horde of dinosaurs was charging over at Yue Zhong. All the trees and vegetation in the way were directly crushed and flattened.

Of their numbers, the diplodocuses were the most, while they were Type 4 Mutant Beasts, their speed was relatively slow. It was about half the speed of sound, comparable to 20 times that of a normal person. Such monstrous sizes usually equated to a dangerous strength, as well as innate abilities. However, their speed was sacrificed as a form of balance.

Even so, there were those Type 2 Microraptors which were even speedier. When they ran at their fastest, they were even 30% faster than Yue Zhong.

They continued to pounce on Yue Zhong from the back, using those claws that could rip little tears in the hide of Type 4 Mutant Beasts as they attacked him.

Behind them were the larger Megaraptors, and Velociraptors. As long as Yue Zhong slowed down slightly, he would end up in their midst and be torn apart.

He could almost smell their putrid breath right on his tail, and he took in a deep breath, pushing his Devil Flame to shoot up and at the horde of dinosaurs.

When those Microraptors were caught in the flames, they were instantly cooked like ants licked by fire, giving out crispy, crackling sounds as they fell to the ground, charred.

As a whole bunch of them were burnt to death, the larger Velociraptors and Megaraptors pounced on those bodies, consuming them. Some even fought among themselves, kicking off a domino effect of slaughter.

Still, many of the dinosaurs had been affected by the powder and

were latched onto the scent of Yue Zhong's blood. Thus, they continued to chase after him wildly.

Yue Zhong gazed at Greenie which was slaughtering those in the air and commanded in his mind, "Come down!"

Greenie gave up on chasing after those scattered Pterosaurs and flapped its wings to swoop down towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong leaped up onto its back, and Greenie soared back towards the skies with a flap of its wings.

When the dinosaurs on the ground lost their target, they became even wilder and more violent, slaughtering one another under the effects of the powder.

A large number of prehistoric Mutant bugs formed a terrifying cloud that continued to chase after Yue Zhong.

There were Mutant Mosquitoes with wingspans of 3m, Mutant Dragonflies with wingspans of over 10m, as well as Mutant Cockroaches with wingspans of over 6m. Each of them was fearsome, if released on Earth, they could cause a calamity. The most fearsome thing was, these bugs did not go around individually, but an entire swarm. They were chasing after Yue Zhong with numbers.

A single Mutant Bug's strength might not exceed a Type 2 Mutant Beast, but a cloud of them could even swallow and devour an entire Type 4 Mutant Beast.

Yue Zhong gazed at the cloud of insects behind him, sending a powerful blast of Devil Flame towards them.

While controlling the Devil Flame, he chose not to condense the output, instead, allowing it to spread out. The area of effect was larger, reaching almost 10 times the original space. When he was dealing with those blood-sucking bees, he had used the same method.

When those bugs were torched by the cloud of fire, their wings

began to burn and they fell from the skies.

These bugs had tenacious vitality, even after their wings were burned, and they slammed to the ground harshly, while many of them died upon impact, there were many others which survived. Especially the Mutant Cockroaches, they were the hardiest, only a few were burned to death.

As the cloud of bugs was dealt with, Yue Zhong sat on Greenie and charged straight into the clouds.

The bugs also had a limit to their altitude, after reaching a certain height, they could only give up and fly back down.

In the skies, Yue Zhong had a dark expression as the killing intent in his eyes burned, "Damn bastards, Sun Alliance! I'll remember this!"

He had been cautious but was still plotted against by the Sun Alliance, almost becoming prey for a horde of Mutant Beasts and Bugs that had lost their rationality.

Yue Zhong then took the broken arm and placed it by his shoulder wound. As the Dark Dou Qi circulated, the tendrils and flesh began to reconnect. After an entire five minutes, the wound finished healing, although the expenditure of his Stamina and Spirit was not light.

"Looks like I need to give them a good taste of their medicine."

After recovering, he got Greenie to fly back down.

In the lake, a number of Sun Warriors were treading on the water, supported by abilities. Each step they took caused more ripples out, while they continued to float above.

The elite troops soon came to a huge, meat mountain at the center of the lake, of about 100 meters in height, covering a span of over a kilometer.

Near the mountain, there was a huge hole of about 30m in

diameter, its depths unclear, with a thick stench wafting out. There was disgusting black discharge oozing out from the hole, a truly revolting sight.

Shinya Takahiko ordered, "Do it!!"

With his order, the hundreds of soldiers aimed at the hole and fired out countless beams of white light.

As the light beams shot down the hole with unknown depths, huge chunks of flesh and blood blasted outwards.

With such a critical hit, the huge meat mountain shuddered, causing the water to churn and spread out like waves.

The Sun Warriors quickly leaped out of the way, dodging the towering waves.

A long and thick neck came out of the lake, extending towards the sky. This mountain was actually a Type 5 Diplodocus, its body over 2km long. Its neck itself was already a kilometer, and its eyes flashed with a ferocious light. All along its neck, there were many claw marks, bite marks to be seen, the injuries not healing entirely, giving off a putrid stench.

The regenerative abilities of a Type 5 Mutant Beast were no joke, however, on this world, many dinosaurs and beasts had lethal venom and viruses in their claws and teeth. Once injured, it was easy for infection to occur, slowing down the healing process.

With his Regeneration skill, Yue Zhong's recovery abilities were faster than most Type 3 Mutant Beasts. However, when he was bitten by the Velociraptor upon arriving at this planet, he had almost died as well. It was simply due to the bacteria in the Mutant Beast's mouth.

The 400 Sun Warriors were like ants in front of the Type 5 Diplodocus, when they saw it rise up, they could not help but shudder in fear. However, because they were the elites of the Sun Alliance, they did not allow it to affect their mindset. Instead, they

readied their spears, pushing their attacks and concentrating them on the wounds of the Type 5 Diplodocus.

The various attacks slammed into the body of the Type 5 Diplodocus.

When the white radiance hit the scales of the Diplodocus, the scales were dented, but the beast was not affected greatly. However, when the attacks hit the huge wounds, the flesh and blood of the Diplodocus would be blasted apart, aggravating them.

Had the Type 5 Diplodocus been at its peak condition, these humans would not even stand a chance. However, it was riddled with injuries, thus, it could only suffer from the opportune attack by them.

As it was assaulted at such a critical stage, the behemoth became infuriated, swinging its massive tail and slamming it on the numerous Sun Warriors.

Without any warning, those who were struck by that tail were turned into meat paste instantly, the Sun Armor on them that was made out of special alloys also dented beyond recognition.

The Type 5 Diplodocus's strength was truly not weaker than most Type 7 Divine Warriors of the various species. It did not matter how strong the Sun Armor was, there was no way of defending against that attack.

With a single slap, over 40 Sun Warriors were killed. The rest of them suppressed their fear and continued to channel their attacks, firing their beams of light at the injured Type 5 Diplodocus.

Faced with an onslaught of over hundreds of attacks, even the Type 5 Diplodocus felt the impending sense of doom. Its eyes flashed and it swung its tail left and right.

Large parts of the lake water were churned up into towering waves that roared towards the Sun Warriors.

As the waves slammed into them, the Sun Warriors were swept

away like ants and scattered, many of them forced down under the surface.

All the remaining soldiers were sent flying back, suffering heavy injuries.

The Type 5 Diplodocus then turned around and sucked up large amounts of the lake water, causing hundreds of Sun Warriors to enter its body along with the water.

# Chapter 804: Monstrous Threat!

---

Even in its injured state, the Type 5 Diplodocus was no pushover, as it easily consumed over a hundred Sun Warriors.

At this time, an electromagnetic beam shot from afar, slamming into the eye of the Type 5 Diplodocus.

The right eye of the Diplodocus was already injured before this. That single electromagnetic beam blasted the entire area, causing mucus and eye matter to leak.

As expected, such an accurate shot was carried out by the top sniper of the Sun Alliance, Fujiki Ichiro.

Its right eye heavily injured, the Type 5 Diplodocus began to thrash about in pain.

The lake began to churn as though a hurricane had appeared above it, causing devastating tsunami waves to spread out in all directions.

A number of the Sun Warriors saw the waves and their faces fell, quickly retreating backward.

Shinya Takahiko looked at the struggling Type 5 Diplodocus, his expression ugly, "Damn it, why is it still not dead?!"

By this time, the Sun Alliance had already lost 200 soldiers, and yet, while the Type 5 Diplodocus was heavily injured, it did not show any signs of dying yet.

He looked at the monstrous beast before barking at 10 Sun Warriors in silver Sun Armor, "Go! Attack! Make sure that you attack its injuries! It must die today! Otherwise, we'll fall to the bottom of the 3 overlords of this Green Region!!"

The silver Sun Armor of these generals all lit up, as the runes expanded and covered them, enhancing them to reach the realm of Type 4.

They then blasted forward, charging towards the Type 5 Diplodocus.

As the Type 5 Diplodocus was still focused on its eye wound and was struggling about in pain, the 10 Sun Warrior generals managed to get close to it.

They leaped up nimbly onto its back and charged towards its neck in a few steps.

When they were all located near a wound on the long neck of the Diplodocus, they began using the battle spear to thrust wildly and viciously, tearing more meat and blood from the wounds, chipping away at the life force of the behemoth.

Under the efforts of the 10 Type 4 experts, the wounds on the neck of the Diplodocus became even more serious as time passed.

The beast could not help but unleash an earthshaking roar of pain, causing a powerful shockwave to spread throughout the lake.

Over a hundred ordinary Sun Warriors immediately suffered burst eardrums, blood flowing out of their orifices, as they doubled over on the floor in pain.

The 10 Sun Warriors continued to dig deep into the body of the Type 5 Diplodocus and did not suffer the effects of the shockwave. They continued to unleash blow after blow, nourished by the Sun Armor on them. Without the armor, these soldiers would not have been able to burrow into the body of the beast, after all, they were just human.

Facing the humans who were burrowing into its body like a virus, the Type 5 Diplodocus roared out in rage and pain, slamming its tail on its own neck.

When the huge tail slammed into the wounds, its muscles tightened, directly crushing 2 of the Sun Warriors into meat paste.

Seeing this, the remaining 8 Sun Warriors felt fear, and quickly dashed out from the wounds, fleeing.

Noticing that the humans were finally forced out, the Type 5 Diplodocus's eyes flashed fiercely, and it swung its tail again, smacking into 3 more Sun Warriors with the entire force of its monstrous weight, turning them into meat paste, mixed together with the alloy of their armor.

After killing another 3 of them, the behemoth swept its tail once more, bringing with it a frightening force towards another 2 Sun Warrior generals, crushing the 2 of them.

The huge tail of more than a hundred meters in length was the strongest weapon of this Type 5 Beast. It could even injure a Type 5 Tyrannosaurus Rex. If a Type 6 Divine Warrior were to be slammed with this tail, he or she would likewise be crushed. With the enhancement powers of the Sun Armor, the various generals were already at the Type 4 Divine Warrior realm, but in front of the Type 5 Diplodocus, it was nothing.

"Fucking strong! This beast is truly too frightening!!"

Up in the clouds, Yue Zhong was riding Greenie's back as he looked down. Seeing the Sun Warrior generals being smashed into meat paste, he could not help but feel a chill down his back. His own fate would not be any different if he went down now. The fact that he had managed to kill the heavily injured Type 5 Crocodile-head Beast was because the beast was heavily injured. Had it still been moving, he would have been squashed.

10 Sun Warrior generals had acted, but only 2 managed to make it out alive, escaping to Shinya Takahiko's side.

The Type 5 Diplodocus was truly enraged, its bloodshot eyes staring straight at the Sun Alliance, and it began to charge towards them.

While the beast had monstrous strength, it had a single weakness, which was its speed was the lowest of the Type 5 realm. However, due to its length easily exceeding 2km, each step it took exceeded a hundred steps of a human, hence, when it moved at its

maximum speed, its speed was still nearing that of sound, equivalent to a Type 4 Divine Warrior.

Seeing the movements of the Type 5 Diplodocus, the 2 Sun Warrior generals who were thoroughly frightened screamed out and ran towards the city.

The eyes of the Shinya Takahiko flashed coldly, as he roared out coldly into the voice transmitter, "Fools!! Don't lead that monster to the city!! Run elsewhere!!"

The Type 5 Diplodocus had exceeded his expectations, having never fought with a Type 5 Mutant Beast before. He had not expected it to be so terrifying even when injured.

He was an intelligent man and as he eyed his fleeing men, he barked into the voice transmitter, "Storm Valley! Run towards the Storm Valley!"

The 2 Sun Warrior generals adjusted their route when they heard Shinya Takahiko's voice, and quickly dashed towards the direction of Storm Valley.

The Type 5 Diplodocus continued to chase with bloodshot eyes, its entire frame like a mountain. Along its path, all the trees and vegetation were either knocked away or crushed.

The difference between Mutant Beasts and intelligent evolved life forms were that Mutant Beasts had lower intelligence. That was why, a Type 4 Mutant Beast had a strength that could frighten a Type 5 Divine Warrior, but likewise, it could be hunted by a Type 3 Divine Warrior. Furthermore, Type 5 Divine Warriors were intelligent beings and given enough time, they would be able to find the weaknesses of such beasts.

Yue Zhong patted Greenie's back and ordered, "Greenie, go kill those 2 men!" He thought silently, "You want to head to the Storm Valley? Impossible! Today will be your Sun Alliance's demise!!"

Greenie shot towards them instantly.

With its Mach speed, the 2 Sun Warrior generals were instantly grabbed after 2 breaths and Greenie's claws pierced through their heads before it charged back into the skies.

"Yue Zhong!! Damn it!! It really is him, he has a flying Type 4 Beast!! Fuck!!" Shinya Takahiko caught sight of Yue Zhong on Greenie's back, and he was instantly enraged. As he cursed, he had a terrifying thought, as to why Yue Zhong would choose this time to appear.

Quickly, his deepest fears came through, Yue Zhong made use of the spider silk to hand the bodies of the 2 Sun Warrior generals, dragging them in front of the Type 5 Diplodocus as they flew forwards, leading the beast towards the city of the Sun Alliance.

"Shit!! Shit!!"

Shinya Takahiko flew into a rage, the Sun Armor on his body glowing. He was enveloped by a powerful strength, and he immediately charged after them with a peak Type 4 strength.

At this moment, Yue Zhong was still on Greenie's back, constantly activating his Shadow Steps, preventing the sniper Fujiki Ichiro from hitting him. Shinya Takahiko had no choice but to act personally.

With his enhanced speed, he quickly caught up to them.

"You're here? Even if you're here personally, it's useless!"

Yue Zhong saw Shinya Takahiko and his eyes flashed coldly, tapping Greenie's back, and it slowed down slightly, pulling the distance between them and the Type 5 Diplodocus closer.

Seeing this, Shinya Takahiko had no choice but to slow down and run on the outskirts, not daring to get close to the Type 5 beast.

# Chapter 805: The Sun Alliance City is destroyed!

---

Shinya Takahiko did not dare to get close, only shouting at the top of his lungs, "Yue Zhong, I'm willing to hand all the tech to you, and send you 100 Sun Armor. As long as you lead the Type 5 Diplodocus away, and lure it to the Storm Valley, I will also send you 5 absolute beauties, and work together with you to control the entire Green Region!!"

Yue Zhong watched him and laughed coldly, "Can your words be fucking trusted, you slimy bastard? Today will be the date your Sun Alliance falls."

Since the Type 5 Diplodocus had been injured so heavily, it was sure to bring forth a calamity. When it reached the Sun Alliance City, it would definitely destroy everything in its path.

Shinya Takahiko's face turned pale as he tried another tactic to convince Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, this time, it's my fault. However, the 100,000 people in the city are innocent! If you were to lure this beast over, are you going to sentence those people to their deaths? Their homes would be destroyed because of you!! And their future will become bleak because of your actions!!"

He continued hastily, "Yue Zhong, lure this beast away. I know where another Type 5 Beast is residing, as long as the 2 of them clash against each other, we have a chance of killing them. With their nuclei and meat, we can become the overlords of the Green Region!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, "Fine! You commit suicide, I can still consider letting Sun Alliance City off. For the sake of the 100,000 people there, you can go ahead and kill yourself!! Otherwise, they will die because of your actions, and their future will become bleak because of you!"

When Shinya Takahiko heard that, his expression turned ugly, as he gritted his teeth and said, "Yue Zhong!! You'll regret this!! I will use all I have to annihilate everything you hold dear!! Your subordinates, your women, and your people!! I will kill them all!!"

After that, with a tap of his foot, he made his way crazily towards Sun Alliance City.

"Trying to flee?"

With a thought, he channeled his Summon Tamed Beast technique, and Type 4 Lightning appeared out of a void, pouncing towards Shinya Takahiko.

The speed of Type 4 Lightning was incredibly fast, exceeding even some Type 5 Divine Warriors. In a flash, it had caught up to Shinya Takahiko and slashed at its head.

"Another Type 4 Mutant Beast!! You can actually command 2!!" Shinya Takahiko stared in horror at the approaching beast and a huge sense of danger arose. The Type 4 nucleus in his Sun Armor glowed brightly, pushing his strength to the realm of a Type 5 Divine Warrior.

He then made use of his surge in strength to slam a fist at Lightning's claws. His power exploded out, sending Lightning soaring back.

As an Agility-based Mutant Beast, its speed exceeded that of a Type 5 Divine Warrior. However, its Strength was at most comparable to a Type 3 Mutant Beast.

Lightning was sent flying backward by a single blow. It tumbled in mid-air, the moment it landed, it disappeared from its location and appeared right behind Shinya Takahiko in a bid to slash at his head.

He was prepared for it, sending another fist out at Lightning.

Both parties became tangled, in a short span of time, it was unclear who would emerge victorious.

Lightning's speed made it hard to kill, while Shinya Takahiko held the advantage with the help of his Sun Armor, he could not do anything about Lightning.

With its harassment, Shinya Takahiko's speed of retreat was reduced drastically and was only able to maintain momentum alongside the Type 5 Diplodocus.

Just like that, the group made their way closer to the Sun Alliance City.

"What the hell is that?"

"Shit!!"

"Monster!!"

"..."

When the people in Sun Alliance City saw the massive Type 5 Diplodocus appearing in the horizon, their faces turned to one of horror and fear. Many began to scream and the city was plunged in chaos.

In front of such a behemoth, even Ultraman would seem like a dwarf in front of it.

Many started to lose their shit as they ran around frantically within the city walls. The entire city fell into chaos, as some took the opportunity to rob and rape, giving into their desires before they died.

"Fire arrows!! Fire arrows!!"

In such a critical time, the warriors stationed at the top of the city wall maintained their calm and listened to orders barked by their captain, a man with a huge beard, wielding a large curved blade.

With his orders, the soldiers of the Sun Alliance City released their arrows at the approaching Type 5 Diplodocus.

Most of those on top of the city wall were Type 2 Divine

Warriors, their arrows could pierce even armored vehicles. However, as these arrows met the flesh of the Type 5 Diplodocus, they bounced off without doing much. Some of the arrows managed to pierce through the injuries, but they did not cause much harm.

To the Type 5 Diplodocus, these arrows were not even like toothpicks.

The commander saw that their attacks were ineffective, his face turning pale, yet he continued to grit teeth to order, "Load up the God-Breaking Crossbow!!"

A hundred soldiers quickly came up to a huge crossbow made out of the bones of a huge mutant beast, it was about 10m in length, loading up an arrow, also a mutant beast bone sharpened. They pulled the crossbow before releasing it at the maximum tautness.

The bone arrows soared through the air with a loud swish, slamming into the body of the Type 5 Diplodocus.

The might of God-Breaking Crossbow was truly terrifying, penetrating the scales of the Type 5 Diplodocus and blasting out a bloody wound.

However, with a slight shake, the large bone arrows would be squeezed out by its muscles, and the large bloody holes began healing at a visible rate.

This was the true terror of the regenerative ability of a Type 5 Mutant Beast, if it wasn't for the many festering wounds on its body, injuring this behemoth through human means were unimaginable.

Seeing this scene, all the soldiers felt despair. There was nothing they could do to cause any noticeable damage to the Type 5 Diplodocus.

The God-Breaking Crossbow was indeed enough to hurt the Type 5 Diplodocus, and the enraged beast was even more furious now. It

increased its pace, and charged towards Sun Alliance City. With every step, the earth seemed to shake.

Within 3 seconds, the behemoth had arrived at the city wall. It swung its huge tail and slammed it against the wall.

Hong!

The entire wall that was sturdy and resilient enough to fend off attackers came crumbling down in multiple chunks.

The hundreds of soldiers stationed on top the wall became buried beneath the rubble.

Inside the city, a hundred Sun Warriors in white Sun Armor came charging out, led by 5 silver Sun Warriors. These were the final guards stationed in the city.

On top of that, a thousand more soldiers came rushing out with large bows.

They clamored up to high vantage points situated throughout the city and began to fire at the Type 5 Diplodocus.

As the Sun Battle Spears fired out light beams, arrows flew through the air as well, together with a few electromagnetic beams, assaulting the Type 5 Diplodocus on all fronts.

Faced with such an onslaught of attacks, the injuries of the Type 5 Mutant Beast worsened, as fresh blood sprayed everywhere.

The massive beast bellowed in rage and pain, charging further into the city.

Due to its weight, each step caused the ground to tremble, and its footprints were etched deep into the ground. Its tail swung towards the palace, turning it into a mountain of debris, as countless soldiers perished.

There did not seem to be anything that could impede its rage and carnage. Over 2,000 soldiers fought with their lives on the line, yet were like ants, not doing anything to the monstrous beast.

Shinya Takahiko watched his city crumble to the ground, the efforts of his predecessors before him going to waste. He felt his chest stifled, and spat out a mouthful of blood, before roaring like an enraged demon, "Beast! Yue Zhong you fucking beast!! I will kill you!! I will kill all those close to you!!"

Yue Zhong disposed of the 2 Sun Warrior generals with a swing, causing their corpses to land in the center of the city.

The Type 5 Diplodocus charged forth, stomping all over the corpses, causing the ground to be filled with blood, unleashing its anger at being injured by those measly ants beneath it.

# Chapter 806: Treasury!

---

The Type 5 Diplodocus continued to rampage throughout Sun Alliance City, its tail swinging across multiple buildings. Everything was being destroyed, and the casualties count was rising.

The elite soldiers were easily crushed like ants beneath the Type 5 Diplodocus. Many people were crying and screaming as they tried to flee in various directions.

Yue Zhong rode on Greenie's back, appearing within the luxurious palace in a breath.

He had just leaped down from Greenie's back when 8 elite soldiers wielding long spears charged out suddenly, thrusting towards Yue Zhong.

He flashed about and evaded their strikes, dashing through their midst.

The 8 soldiers felt their eyes vision go blurry, and their bodies were instantly sliced in countless pieces, as blood splattered everywhere.

After casually killing 8 Sun Alliance soldiers, Yue Zhong pulled out a small handheld computer with a radar component attached.

He looked towards the display and asked Bai Yi, "Within this region, are there any signs or traces of any computers?"

The tablet with the radar component was able to send out radio waves, as long as there were any computer or electronics in usage, it would be picked up by the computer.

Bai Yi's eyes flashed with data lines, in the end shaking her head, "No, there're no traces of any computers."

"Seems like I can only use the other method."

He caught sight of 4 Sun Alliance soldiers running towards him

in a frenzy. With a tap of his foot, he disappeared from his position, and immediately smacked the back of the heads of the 4 soldiers, knocking them unconscious.

He then pointed at their foreheads, sending out 4 Puppet Runes into their foreheads.

Their bodies shuddered momentarily before standing up, their eyes blank and vacant.

"Which of you know where the prehistoric tech is being kept?"

The 4 soldiers shook their heads, obviously, their ranks were not high enough to know classified secrets.

Yue Zhong then ordered, "Take me to your original captain!"

"Yes!"

They replied respectfully, turning around, and began weaving through the palace.

Inside the palace, every few seconds, there were soldiers coming at them, and they were easily sliced in two by Yue Zhong.

While these soldiers were strong existences to normal humans, to Yue Zhong, with his peak Type 4 Divine Warrior status, they were just measly ants.

Under their guidance, Yue Zhong came to a secret basement and sliced it open with a single slash.

The moment the door was cut open, 6 elderly men looked towards Yue Zhong in fear, each of them flanked by 2 Type 3 Divine Warriors. They were the 6 leaders of the major clans within the Sun Alliance.

Shinya Takahiko was the strongest expert within Sun City and was the clan leader of the Shinya Clan. In order to control the entire Sun Alliance, the clan required the support of the other clans.

One burly Type 3 Divine Warrior tapped his feet and dashed

towards Yue Zhong with a terrifying speed.

With a casual wave of his sword, the Type 3 Divine Warrior was immediately sliced in two, fresh blood spraying everywhere.

"All together!!"

One of the soldiers roared and with a tap of his feet, he charged towards Yue Zhong by summoning multiple clones.

Another soldier waved his hands, firing darts at Yue Zhong.

Yet another narrowed his eyes, channeling a powerful gravitational force to envelop Yue Zhong.

The 11 Type 3 Divine Warriors all revealed their strongest abilities, doing their best to bury Yue Zhong at where they were.

Facing such a fearsome attack, Yue Zhong simply took a step, his blade flashing through the air, and the 11 Type 3 Divine Warriors were turned into slabs of meat that fell to the ground.

One of the old men squeaked out in fear, "Don't kill me!! Spare me!! I will lead the Sakata Clan to submit to you!!"

One old man trembled with fear as he pleaded, "Don't kill me!! I'm willing to exchange gold for my life! I can also take out a Type 4 Nucleus as well as 200 beautiful girls in exchange!!"

These powerful old men within the Sun Alliance were all rich, yet fearful of death. They already lost their courage and vigor of youth. The moment they saw Yue Zhong turning their guards into minced meat, they threw all dignity and pride out the window.

"I can spare you guys, but as my puppets!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, and slapped at their necks, knocking them out, before shooting Puppet Runes into their foreheads.

After gaining control of these 6 clan heads, he asked them solemnly, "Where are the prehistoric tech being kept?"

The Fujita Clan head, Fujita Shiki, spoke up, "In the center of the

palace, there's a treasury about 3 levels underground. In order to go there, there has to be Shinya Takahiko's written consent as well as the agreement between us 6 leaders."

Yue Zhong directly ordered, "Take me there!"

"Yes!"

Since he gave the order, the puppets led him quickly through the center of the palace. Along the way, more soldiers appeared to obstruct them but were easily taken care of by Yue Zhong.

In front of a huge alloy door, with 2 headless corpses lying beside it, Fujita Shiki pointed at it and remarked, "This is it, in order to get through, you'll need Shinya Takahiko's authorization!"

"Break for me!!"

Yue Zhong pulled out his Flame Blade and slashed down once, causing the door to break into multiple pieces.

He stepped through and immediately noticed a bunch of Electromagnetic Guns, Sun Battle Spears, as well as Sun Armors laid out neatly within.

The total number of equipment could easily equip 2,000 soldiers. However, the concave sphere shapes within each equipment were all empty. Without Mutant Beast nuclei, it was impossible to utilize them.

Within this treasury, the silver Sun Armor numbered the least, only 20 sets were laid out. It was obvious that this particular equipment was rare.

At the center of the treasure, there were 2 light-gold Sun Armor, on them, there were numerous mysterious runes engraved on them. At the same time, the armor was covered with small sharp spikes, giving off a threatening feel.

# Chapter 807: Killing Shinya Takahiko!

---

Underneath the two light-gold Sun Armor, there was a gold box, as well as a golden canister.

Seeing the equipment within the treasury, Yue Zhong's eyes lit up. With a single wave of his hands, the Storage Ring on his finger was activated and sucked everything in, from the Electromagnetic Guns to the sniper rifles, to the Sun Battle Spears and even all the Sun Armors.

After the Storage Ring was upgraded to a Level 10 Treasure, its space was incredibly huge, accommodating everything within the treasury easily. If it had been the Level 6 Treasure still, then he could only keep a portion of it.

Yue Zhong came up to the 2 light-gold Sun Armor, taking them into his ring with a single wave.

He then opened up the golden box, revealing a 30 cm-thick stack of documents, as well as something that was 70% similar to a disc.

Yue Zhong took out the documents and looked through them carefully, revealing a number of blueprints and diagrams for the Electromagnetic Guns and the Sun Battle Armor.

Looking at them, he finally heaved a sigh of relief, "This is great, with these, we finally have some means to defend against the Saint Clan."

After a few months, the Gates of Hell would be opened fully, and the Second World would converge with Earth, allowing the Saint Clan to invade.

The strength of the Saint Clan was truly terrifying, far surpassing the human race. Even with the strength of the humans prior to the apocalypse, it was impossible to contend with the Saint Clan. Under the current conditions where the human race was almost crippled, there was almost no chance that they could defend at all.

With the blueprints of the Electromagnetic Guns and Sun Battle Armor, Yue Zhong could then utilize the research facilities on Earth to manufacture them and empower the human race.

"What is this?"

After retrieving the gold box into his ring, he opened up the golden canister, as a sweet and bloody scent wafted out from it.

He looked carefully, before smiling, "This is the blood honey of the Blood-Sucking Bees!!"

Yue Zhong had obtained information from his subordinates of this world, that this blood honey was an extremely precious resource, allowing humans to evolve. However, it was hard to produce, requiring over a million people to be sacrificed, or hundreds of thousands of Mutant Beasts. At the same time, a single canister could allow an ordinary human to immediately leap into the realm of a Type 4 Divine Warrior.

The Shinya Clan could support the Sun Alliance was not only because of their control over the prehistoric tech but also because they had this valuable blood honey.

Hong!

Suddenly, there was a loud explosion at the entrance of the treasury. Yue Zhong turned around, noticing Shinya Takahiko with his silver Sun Armor. All around him, there were many corpses and blood.

Shinya Takahiko saw the empty treasury, his expression turning savage as he laughed maniacally, "Good! Good! Good! Yue Zhong you bastard, you actually destroyed all that my Shinya Clan has built up. Today, I will make sure to dismember you, and hunt all those that are linked to you!!"

Without the treasury, especially the precious canister of blood honey, the Shinya Clan would become nothing. The moment Shinya Takahiko fell from his position, there was no way the

Shinya Clan could continue to maintain their supremacy and dominance over the Sun Alliance.

The Type 4 Nucleus behind his back radiated brightly, filling his body with energy, as his muscles became taut. His aura rose constantly until he reached the peak of Type 4 Divine Warrior realm.

With his Strength raised, he tapped his foot and his entire body appeared right in front of Yue Zhong like a specter, thrusting his spear out at the speed of sound.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, and enveloped his body instantly with his Dark Dou Qi, raising his own constitution. He pulled out his Flame Blade and slashed at the Silver Battle Spear in Shinya Takahiko's hands.

Hong!

The blade and spear clashed in a loud sonic boom, causing shockwaves to spread out with them as the center. Yue Zhong was sent soaring back a few meters by the enhanced Shinya Takahiko, his hands feeling numb and his blood flow turning awry.

Upon landing on the ground, the ground beneath him cracked, forcefully dissipating the residual strength. He had just gotten his bearings when he felt an immense gravitational force pressing down on him, preventing his legs from lifting.

"Gravity Manipulation! He actually has this annoying ability!"

Yue Zhong frowned, and activated his own Second Order Gravity Manipulation, negating a part of the force Shinya Takahiko was applying on him.

Shinya Takahiko disappeared from his location and within that instant, 8 shadows appeared, as 8 of him sent spears thrusting out at Yue Zhong.

This Phantom 8-hit technique of Shinya Takahiko was a secret technique of the Shinya Clan, the moment they utilized it, even a

Type 5 Divine Warrior would be heavily injured or killed. Shinya Takahiko's natural talent was high and had awakened the Gravity Manipulation ability, together with this Phantom 8-hit technique, few were his match.

Yue Zhong's eyes glinted, as a void appeared in mid-air, and 10 bone spears struck out at the 8 Shinya Takahikos.

7 of them immediately dissipated when struck by the 7 bone spikes.

As for the real body, the bone spike splintered upon contact, while he continued to charge at Yue Zhong without any reduction in speed. His spear sliced through the air at the speed of sound, aiming for Yue Zhong's heart.

Yue Zhong's Flame Blade turned into a flash of light that met the Sun Battle Spear, and following the powerful sonic boom and knockback, Yue Zhong was once again sent flying back, right out of the Treasury.

Shinya Takahiko became a shadow again, appearing in front of Yue Zhong and sending another thrust out.

Dang! Dang! Dang!

Facing the continuous blows, Yue Zhong was suppressed by Shinya Takahiko, being sent flying back constantly. His inner organs were also shocked over and over, his hands turning numb. The Flame Blade in his hands was almost sent out of his hands a few times.

Shinya Takahiko was also shocked, Yue Zhong was not wearing the silver Sun Armor and was barely below him in terms of advantage. If he were to wear it, he knew he would not be Yue Zhong's match.

"I need to kill him here! Otherwise, the entire Sun Alliance will be swallowed by him!!"

The killing intent in Shinya Takahiko's eyes soared, as he raised

his Battle Spear and charged right for Yue Zhong without care for anything else, raising his prowess by another 30%.

Dang!!

After forcefully blocking another dozen strikes, Yue Zhong's right hand finally went numb, and the Flame Blade in his hands was knocked away.

Shinya Takahiko's eyes flashed with joy as he struck out once more for Yue Zhong's heart.

With a cold light, Yue Zhong summoned a powerful pillar of Devil Flame to blast towards Shinya Takahiko.

Shinya Takahiko's face discolored, he could sense that this Devil Flame was incredibly dangerous. He dodged to one side, evading the blast of flames.

By that time, a silver battle spear shot out from the flames together with a shroud of Dark Dou Qi, thrusting towards Shinya Takahiko.

Taken aback with shock and fear, the spear slammed into his silver Sun Armor.

With a loud explosion, the collision forced Shinya Takahiko to fly back dozens of meters. His Silver Battle Spear was also knocked away, while his entire body slammed into a wall, causing it to crack.

In front of him, Yue Zhong had already put on the Silver Sun Armor, behind him, a Type 4 Nucleus was radiating brightly.

Shinya Takahiko's expression turned venomous as he muttered out of despair, "Type 5! Indeed, once you equip that, your strength can reach the Type 5 realm!!"

"However, even if I die, I will not let you off easily!! I want you to be buried with me!! All that you hold dear will suffer!! I will drag them down with me!! Hahaha!!" With a savage laugh, his body

suddenly blew up, a light shooting out from his body, directly penetrating the city, soaring into the skies.

As it had happened so suddenly, Yue Zhong had not expected such a strange change. He had not enough time to react when the bright light already disappeared into the skies.

Yue Zhong frowned, a bad premonition arising in his heart. However, he had no idea what Shinya Takahiko had just done, and was unclear about what it held for the future.

Yue Zhong swiftly left the underground basement, appearing back at the ground level.

He caught sight of the Type 5 Diplodocus still rampaging in the city, and all the structures had been demolished, while many people were fleeing from this invincible existence.

Yue Zhong eyed the beast and pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun, firing at the wounds of the behemoth, blasting the wounds wide open in a shower of blood and flesh.

The might of the Electromagnetic Gun was terrifying, with every hit, the wounds of the Type 5 Diplodocus burst open, causing fresh blood to flow.

# Chapter 808: Battling the Type 5 Diplodocus!

---

Facing such an onslaught, the Type 5 Diplodocus was once infuriated, charging towards Yue Zhong's direction in a frenzy.

By now, Yue Zhong was extremely clear on the attacking style and weaknesses. He dodged to one side, while continually firing at the Type 5 Diplodocus.

The Type 5 Diplodocus has a wide surface area and monstrous strength. Its regenerative abilities were overpowered and it had tough scales. However, there was a weak point, which was, its speed. It was barely at the level of a Type 4 Divine Warrior, and according to Yue Zhong's observation, the Type 5 Diplodocus did not seem to possess any innate skills.

A chase ensued, one chasing the other fleeing, as they quickly left the city. Under Yue Zhong's continuous assault, every single wound of the Type 5 Diplodocus continued to bleed badly.

The recovery rate of the Type 5 Diplodocus was insanely strong, however, although it was injured, it quickly healed from its wounds, chasing after Yue Zhong with renewed vigor.

Yue Zhong frowned, "This can't go on, otherwise, even after one more day, I won't do much more to this fellow. In fact, it's likely I'll suffer."

Although the body of the Type 5 Diplodocus was riddled with wounds, looking extremely pathetic, in truth, it still had plenty of vitality, and it could destroy another 2 cities if given the chance.

With a flip of his hands, Yue Zhong whipped out the light-gold Sun Armor, inserting a Type 5 Nucleus into the slot.

The gold Sun Armor immediately radiated, releasing a powerful aura, giving off a threatening feel.

He quickly put it on and felt the immense energy powering his body. Under its enhancement, his strength was rising rapidly.

"Type 5 initial realm, Type 5 mid realm!! No! This is my limit, any further and my body would not be able to take it."

Yue Zhong's strength was pushed to the middle realm of Type 5 and he chose to stop the strengthening. Under the support of the Type 5 Nucleus, the light-gold Sun Armor could push a person to reach the Type 6 Divine Warrior level, however, Yue Zhong's body could not endure such force. It would cause his body to explode.

After having his body reached the mid-stage of Type 5, with a tap of his foot, his entire body shot towards the Type 5 Diplodocus.

In a few breaths of time, Yue Zhong had reached the Type 5 Diplodocus, his entire body turning blurry, before splitting into 3 that shot in different directions.

The Type 5 Diplodocus swung its massive tail, bringing along a number of trees and boulders as it struck one of the Yue Zhongs, turning him into dust.

Although the speed of the Type 5 Diplodocus was considered slow, as long as anything entered its range, its tail could turn even a Type 6 Divine Warrior into meat paste.

The Type 5 Diplodocus slapped its tail against the ground 3 times, causing countless trees and boulders to be uprooted and flew around in a powerful hurricane, and all 3 Yue Zhongs were smashed into bits.

As the last Yue Zhong was smacked apart, from the various debris, Yue Zhong shot towards the skies, running up the body of the behemoth, reaching one of the wounds in a flash.

When he reached his destination, the light-gold Sun Armor on him glowed brightly, allowing the Type 5 Nucleus to fill him with energy. He readied the spear in his hands and thrust it viciously into the wound.

A powerful golden beam shot out, piercing through the body, causing a large amount of flesh and blood to be churned out.

This single strike from Yue Zhong was more powerful than the combined efforts of the 10 Sun Warrior generals, almost penetrating through the entire neck of the Type 5 Diplodocus.

The Type 5 Diplodocus let out a painful roar, swinging its powerful tail towards the wound that Yue Zhong was on.

Hong!

Following a powerful impact, the muscles of the massive dinosaur went taut, forcing Yue Zhong out.

Yue Zhong seemed to have anticipated such a strike, quickly placing the gold Sun Battle Spear horizontally, forcing the power of the Sun Armor into the spear, causing it to fire out a golden beam through both ends.

The tightening muscles of the Type 5 Diplodocus was instant shredded causing more blood to flow.

The Type 5 Diplodocus immediately roared with pain and started to charge in some random direction, continually using its tail to smack its neck, hoping to cause enough shock to Yue Zhong to kill him.

Had Yue Zhong only been at Type 4 Stage, he would definitely have been struck dead by the continuous powerful slaps. However, while hiding in its flesh with his newfound Type 5 strength, he forcefully bore the impact and continued to tear his way around the body. Countless blood arrows were forced out of the neck of the Type 5 Diplodocus, splattering on the ground.

The body of the Type 5 Diplodocus was regenerating at a terrifying pace, however, with the constant blows by Yue Zhong at his Type 5 Divine Warrior stage, it could not recover fast enough.

After running for a long time, the Type 5 Diplodocus let out one last moan of agony, before slumping to the ground.

Feeling it falling, he continued to stay within its body, not daring to make any sudden moves, instead, continuing to destroy the body from within.

Another 3 minutes passed, he felt that the behemoth was no longer moving, he carefully climbed out from the large wounds of the Type 5 Diplodocus.

Yue Zhong ran another lap around the wound, ascertaining that the Type 5 Diplodocus was immobile, before running towards its head.

# Chapter 809: Taming the Type 5 Diplodocus!

---

As Yue Zhong ran up towards the head of the Type 5 Diplodocus, he looked towards its eyes and noticed that the huge eyes were blank, the life force within ebbing away. There was no sign of the previous rage and rampage.

Yue Zhong looked at it and knew that although the beast was still not yet dead, it wasn't far from it.

If it died, a large amount of life force would be absorbed into his God and Devil Imprint, strengthening his body and soul.

As he looked at the feeble Type 5 Diplodocus, he suddenly had a thought, "Tame it! If I can tame it, then I gain another powerful trump card in my arsenal!!"

With its powerful combat strength, the moment it acted, it was even more terrifying than an entire fleet of tanks.

In its charge, even a horde of zombies would be flattened like ants.

With a flash of green in his hands, the Tamer Technique landed on the forehead of the Type 5 Diplodocus.

When the Tamer Technique landed on the forehead of the beast, it congealed into a rune for barely one second before it dispersed. It seemed like it would take more for the Second Order Tamer Technique to control the Type 5 Mutant Beast.

However, the Type 5 Diplodocus was already close to death and did not possess any strength to resist. After 5 seconds, the rune that seemed to be dispersed managed to enter the forehead, forming a connection between Yue Zhong and it.

The connection was extremely weak, as though it would be extinguished any moment. Through the connection, Yue Zhong could tell that the beast was not far from death, and it was unable to heal with its own strength.

Without a moment of hesitation, he flipped his hand, pulling out a jade bottle. He pried open the mouth of the beast and poured a single golden colored blood into its mouth.

The golden blood was of the unknown Type 9 expert from some unknown world and was the strongest tonic to help breakthrough and recovery.

The moment the blood entered its mouth, the mental connection between it and Yue Zhong strengthened a lot. Its originally dull eyes regained some color and revealed a pleading look to Yue Zhong.

The blood of the Type 9 expert was truly a powerful nourishment. It possessed frightening recovery abilities, however, the amount was too little. Since the body of the Type 5 Diplodocus was over 2 km long, a single drop was insufficient.

Yue Zhong looked at it, gritting his teeth, and poured more drops into its mouth.

When he poured the 15th drop, the life force of the Type 5 Diplodocus began to stir, and he could feel the beast starting to regenerate with its own strength. He then heaved a sigh of relief.

Just as he was prepared to keep the jade bottle into his ring, the Type 5 Diplodocus suddenly opened its mouth and uncurled its tongue, licking up the jade bottle and swallowing it.

Yue Zhong stared in horror and kicked out at the beast, "Damn it you stupid beast!! I shouldn't have saved you!!"

The blood of the Type 9 expert was incredibly precious, Yue Zhong only possessed 3 of them. He had kept it purely in preparation for the worst-case scenario. Regardless of the severity of his wounds, as long as he did not die, the blood was enough to pull him back from the clutches of death. Now that the Type 5 Diplodocus actually swallowed one entire bottle, he could not help but feel sour.

The Type 5 Diplodocus swallowed the blood of the Type 9 expert and its body began to undergo a heaven and earth change, the various injuries throughout its body healing at a rapid pace. Its lost and damaged flesh was growing quickly, and the wounds that were festering due to bacteria were cleansed and repairing themselves.

At the same time, the dark scales of the Type 5 Diplodocus began to split and fall off its body, as its tail continued to rub against itself. The old scales fell off, revealing a new layer of slightly silver scales, obviously, its defense had evolved.

After molting, the Type 5 Diplodocus used the mental connection with Yue Zhong to express its joy, lowering its head to pay respect to him.

Yue Zhong looked at it and commented, "You shall be called Mount Tai from now on!"

If the Type 5 Diplodocus did not move, it truly looked like a little mountain.

Type 5 Mount Tai let out a loud trumpet of joy, expressing its pleasure at the name.

The main difference between Mutant Beasts and intelligent life forms was their intelligence, such a simple name was enough to make it happy.

Yue Zhong gazed at the Type 5 Mount Tai before quickly keeping the molted scales into his storage ring.

These were all Type 5 Mutant Beast scales, in terms of defense, they were comparable to the light-gold Sun Armor. The only disadvantage was that they did not have the enhancing abilities of the light-gold Sun Armor.

However, just the defense was extremely useful. With the scales, a large number of defense suits can be manufactured.

After keeping the scales, Yue Zhong then patted Mount Tai's head, allowing it to leave and roam on its own.

Since the beast was more than 2km long, and over a 100m tall, its food consumption was sure to be a huge figure. Keeping it by his side would just add to his burdens.

Furthermore, such a large beast would only be able to survive in this world where there were plenty of other Mutant Beasts and dinosaurs. Otherwise, even without enemies, they will starve to death themselves.

"What is this place?"

After leaving Mount Tai, Yue Zhong assessed his surroundings, noticing a dense, lush forest in front of him. As for his current location, he was unsure.

He looked all around, his scalp turning numb. He was really lost, "Shit, I'm in trouble if I can't find my way back!"

The Sun City had been pointed out by Ma Lei, and Yue Zhong knew the way there after secretly scouting the location. As for his current place, he had no idea where it was.

"Ah, forget it, I'll just follow the road!"

As Mount Tai lumbered off, its huge frame caused its feet to sink deep. As long as he followed the tracks, he should be able to head back to Sun City, from there, he would find his way to the Vulture Valley.

"Who are you?!"

All of a sudden, there were rustling in the bushes nearby, as 2 beautiful women with valiant temperaments jumped out, with bows in their hands. Their skin was dark but full of health, they had short hair, and over their chests, they had some layer of Mutant Beast scales. These were obviously warriors.

Yue Zhong looked at them and smiled, "I'm Yue Zhong."

One of them with blue hair and grey eyes barked, "What are you doing in our Storm Valley?"

Yue Zhong replied honestly, "Truthfully, I ended up here by accident and now I'm lost."

The other beautiful warrior, with a pair of beautiful legs, laughed coldly, "Lost? What a lousy excuse. I think you must be a spy sent here to infiltrate our Storm Valley! No men are good! Full of lies!"

Yue Zhong was shocked, "This is Storm Valley?"

The warrior with beautiful legs laughed coldly with sarcasm, "Continue your act! When I capture you and interrogate you, you'll spill everything!"

Yue Zhong's brows furrowed, just as he was about to retort, he swept a sudden glance to his sides.

More robust, healthy-looking women stepped out from the forest, each of them with bows, aiming at Yue Zhong, their gazes cold. The moment the order was given, they would not hesitate to use the bow, shooting at him on the spot.

The other female warriors had burly builds, and their muscles were powerful, looking even more masculine than men, and were not as beautiful as the first two.

One particular petite young girl went down on one knee in front of the blue-haired beauty, speaking coldly but with respect, "Willianna, the 7th Combat Unit is here! The Queen's orders have been given, please execute the cleaning quickly!"

Willianna's eyes flashed with shock, "Luo Xin, the Queen had been alerted? Seems like the Type 5 Mutant Beast heading to our Storm Valley is for real!"

Willianna then turned to Yue Zhong with an icy gaze, barking, "Yue Zhong. Stop your meaningless resistance. Surrender now, otherwise I can only choose to kill you."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a glint as he raised his hands, "Alright! Come catch me."

Her muscles went taut, as she inched closer with wariness. Her intuition told her that Yue Zhong was a truly dangerous being. When she came up to him, she used a rope made out of a Type 3 Mutant Beast tendon, tying him up securely. Most Type 3 Divine Warriors would not be able to break out of this.

# Chapter 810: Storm Valley Queen Luo Qing Qing!

---

Willianna got close to Yue Zhong and grabbed his clothes, coldly saying, "I'm warning you, don't try anything funny. You'd better be obedient; if you dare disturb Her Majesty, even if you die 10 times, it will be insufficient to cleanse your offense!"

She saw that Yue Zhong was being so compliant and felt suspicious. However, the Queen was already prepared to deal with the huge matter at hand, thus she had no choice but to bring Yue Zhong along and guard against him.

Yue Zhong glanced at the alluring Willianna and chuckled, "Relax, I won't try anything funny. Furthermore, isn't it good to have me beside you? If I am harboring any thoughts, the first unlucky one will be you."

She looked at him, and snorted condescendingly, "Hmph! Just you? I can easily subdue you. Although your innate physique might be stronger than us women, under proper training and combat, women are not necessarily worse than men! We might even be stronger!!"

Obviously, this Willianna was quite an opinionated feminist.

Yue Zhong did not even attempt to discuss this topic with her, instead, observing his surroundings carefully.

Soon after, from the forest, 200 beautiful female warriors equipped with green battle armor that had runes engraved on it, as well as longbows on their backs came trekking out. Their faces were cold and impassive, their gaits steady and containing a certain hidden strength.

They continued to weave through the forest, maintaining their vigilance, taking up posts and positions. The moment anything were to go wrong, they would be able to react at the first notice.

Under the protection of 8 fair-skinned beauties equipped with the same green battle armor, an exceptional woman with an incomparable grace and allure came walking over. She had a beautiful white cape attached to her battle armor, her thick lush hair flowing down. Her legs were long and beautiful, her figure voluptuous and perfect, and her aura was both icy and oppressive.

Yue Zhong caught sight of that beautiful leader, her entire bearing was enough for him to sigh inwardly, "Beautiful! What a powerful woman!"

This controller of the Storm Valley, Luo Qing Qing was definitely the most self-confident and beautiful woman that Yue Zhong had seen. Even Qi Qing'er was slightly inferior.

Every single one of her guards was also top beauties, their demeanor and attitude the same, and they would not lose to Chen Yao or Ji Qing Wu in terms of looks. However, when walking beside Luo Qing Qing, they were reduced to the leaves of a rose.

It was the first time Yue Zhong had seen such a woman who was exuding overbearingness, as though there was nothing she could not do, and no enemy she could not defeat.

Such arrogance and confidence could only come from countless victorious battles, maintaining authority for more than a number of years. It was apparent that this woman did not just rely on her looks alone, but was a capable and powerful leader, a Type 4 Divine Warrior in her own right.

Even without the proper battle experience, a person could rely on the Blood Honey to reach the Type 4 Divine Warrior stage. However, such a person would not be able to best another Type 4 Divine Warrior who managed to climb their way up. The aura would definitely be different.

"Greetings, Your Majesty!"

In an orderly fashion, every single female warrior got down on

their knees, calling out their greetings with reverence. They held a deep respect for this woman in front of them. Because of her, they were able to lead a life of dignity and pride.

Even the icy Willianna was on her knees, a look of reverence on her face as she gazed at Luo Qing Qing.

In this area, among all the kneeling female warriors, only Yue Zhong was standing, sticking out like a sore thumb.

Willianna saw Yue Zhong standing out by her side, and her heart was shocked. However, she was afraid of offending the Queen, so she did not make any noise or actions, instead, gritting her teeth through it.

"Rise! Make preparations for battle!"

Luo Qing Qing did not seem to spare a glance over, just ordering indifferently as she continued towards the direction of the Type 5 Diplodocus.

"Thank you, Your Majesty!"

As she left, the female warriors stood up.

Willianna immediately grabbed Yue Zhong's clothes and barked viciously, "Damn bastard, why didn't you kneel?"

Yue Zhong took in her fragrance, shrugging nonchalantly, "She's your Queen, not mine. I don't have to kneel."

In response, Willianna stared coldly at Yue Zhong, "Wait till we get back to Storm Valley, you'll get it!"

Yue Zhong laughed and did not argue with her.

Seeing that Yue Zhong was still so carefree, Willianna got even more furious. She was used to men trying to get her attention or agreeing with her, but seeing this indifferent person in front of her made her feel like whipping him. However, in front of the Queen, she did not dare do anything. Hence, she just suppressed her annoyance.

"Kyoko, how is it?"

Luo Qing Qing came up to one of the footprints left by Mount Tai and asked a young, pretty girl beside her with short hair, a petite build, and an impressive pair of breasts.

This big-boobed beauty was called Ao Kyoko, one of the 8 personal guards of the Storm Valley Queen. She had a powerful analytical ability.

Luo Qing Qing was able to expand and consolidate her control and authority within the Green Region alongside two other male overlords was also due to her 8 personal guards.

A powerful faction could not just rely on a single leader, there had to be many other talented delegated positions as well.

Kyoko grabbed a handful of mud that was dyed with blood and took a whiff, before looking around. She frowned and said, "This Type 5 Diplodocus seemed to have been gravely injured, and laid here. However, it suddenly recovered for some strange reason and left."

Luo Qing Qing arched her brows, and came to a scarily accurate guess, "Type 5 Diplodocus? The Sun Alliance actually dared set their sights on it. They truly do not know the vastness of the heavens and earth. Even if a Type 5 Mutant Beast was heavily injured, it would be able to destroy any one of our headquarters."

# Chapter 811: The Entrance of Storm Valley!

---

Another member of the guard, a tall and smart-looking beauty asked with a frown, "Your Majesty, how could you tell that it was the Sun Alliance?"

"The only ones who could possibly injure a Type 5 Mutant Beast can only be us 3 hegemons. Since it was not our Storm Valley, that leaves the Sun Alliance and the Pterosaur Mountain. Knowing those guys from the Pterosaur Mountain, they would not do something like that without being absolutely confident. They're too careful and pragmatic. From the trail of the Type 5 Diplodocus, it is very likely from the direction of the Sun Alliance City."

"Shinya Takahiko is truly a despicable person. Seeing that he couldn't handle this Type 5 Diplodocus himself, he actually chose to lure it here to our Storm Valley. This debt, I will definitely collect it personally!" Luo Qing Qing gnashed her teeth as she ordered out with an overbearing tone, "Yin Ji!"

A petite girl of only about 1.25 meter stood out, her loli face full of respect, "Your subject is here!"

Luo Qing Qing gave a simple but cruel order, "Go investigate the Sun City! If there's a chance, get the heads of 2 of their generals."

"Yes! Your Majesty!"

The lady who looked even smaller and younger than a girl replied in a clear and bright tone, before disappearing from her spot.

The other smart-looking lady suddenly spoke, "Your Majesty, there is one more power that actually possesses the capability to contend with a Type 5 Mutant Beast."

Luo Qing Qing arched her brows as she responded, "Ying Lan, you mean the faction in Vulture Valley under Yue Zhong?"

Ying Lan nodded, "That man called Yue Zhong, is between the age of 21 to 25. He had suddenly appeared in Shao Village, before

swallowing the Vulture Tribe and Velociraptor Tribe. Just recently, the troops sent by the Sun Alliance to attack him were annihilated by him. He is rumored to have 2 Type 4 experts and had gained a number of the Sun Armor to boost his own forces. They should be capable of attacking a Type 5 Mutant Beast as well."

Luo Qing Qing nodded in agreement, "That's true. However, it's not possible for Yue Zhong to know of this Type 5 Diplodocus intel. Only a number of us from the 3 factions knew about this. It's unlikely that it's him."

Ying Lan also nodded in agreement, "That's true. That intelligence was obtained at a huge cost. He might not have gotten wind about it so quickly."

The injured Type 5 Diplodocus was discovered by the Sun Alliance, however, the Storm Valley and Pterosaur Mountain had paid a large price to obtain this information through their spies. However, the Type 5 Mutant Beast was too terrifying, hence, no one actually gathered a force to hunt it down.

Luo Qing Qing frowned and challenged, "However, this Yue Zhong person is truly someone else, to be able to achieve so much in such a short time. Ying Lan, I'll leave the information gathering to you."

Yue Zhong's meteoric rise caused even Luo Qing Qing to feel a little threatened. Although she was confident in herself and proud, she was not stupid. She never underestimated her enemies and would use all she had to crush her foes. This was the reason why she had never lost.

Ying Lan nodded slightly, "Yes! Your Majesty!"

The remaining 7 elite personal guards continued to scour the area for clues, however, it was to no avail.

"Let's go back!"

Under her orders, her personal guards left together with her.

The 200 other Storm Valley Warriors quickly followed behind as they left the forest.

Once the Queen and her party left, Willianna heaved a sigh of relief, nudging Yue Zhong with unkind intentions, cackling, "Let's move! Yue Zhong!!"

Yue Zhong did not seem to mind as he strolled alongside her, he was after all, curious about Storm Valley.

A man's physique was naturally stronger than a woman. Of course, there were some exceptions. In this plane, where dinosaurs, Mutant Beasts, prehistoric life forms and other Mutant Bugs were rampant, it was hard for a woman to establish an entire faction on their own.

Once a woman tried to establish a faction, it would usually be swallowed by a nearby male-dominated faction.

Luo Qing Qing had actually managed to raise this Storm Valley in the Green Region, it was an impressive thing.

"So this is the entrance of Storm Valley?"

Yue Zhong gazed at the entrance of Storm Valley and was taken aback.

Right in front of his eyes, the so-called entrance of the Storm Valley was a cliff that was buffeted by hurricanes without stop. A number of long iron chains connected their end to the cliff on the opposite side. As the winds howled around them, one would easily lose his or her nerve just by looking out.

One by one, the female warriors got on the long metal chains, braving the storm to climb towards the other end.

As the winds blew around them, even the elites of the Storm Valley had to be careful. They took their time, on one occasion, one particular female warrior was almost blown off. Fortunately,

the captain was able to grab her in the nick of time, preventing her death.

Willianna stared at Yue Zhong with an evil smile, "Are you scared? Only the fearless can get past this natural 'city wall' to enter our Storm Valley."

Yue Zhong held out his hands that were bound tightly and asked nonchalantly, "Well then, let me ask, how do you expect me to get across?"

In return, Willianna revealed a smug smile, as though it was all happening according to plan, "This is a small problem, however, don't worry, I'll take you across!"

After that, she pulled out a long Mutant Beast tendon, attaching it to his cuffs, and pulled on it, "Let's go! Even if you fall, I can drag you up!"

The chain was a tough one to navigate even with all 4 limbs on it, evidently, Willianna was trying to make a fool out of Yue Zhong.

With a grin, Yue Zhong hopped lightly onto the chain, his Dark Dou Qi gathering silently at his soles, sticking tightly to the chain. He then walked on it as though he was walking on normal ground.

"Wow!"

"This man is not simple!"

"He must be an expert!"

"..."

A few of the female warriors saw how easily Yue Zhong was maneuvering the chain, their eyes lighting up with interest.

As men were attracted to beautiful and sexy women, women were also likewise attracted to those handsome, clean, talented and wealthy or men of authority.

In this world, the strong was more revered than looks.

The female warrior that had appeared before Yue Zhong earlier together with Willianna stepped up, watching his back and licking her lips, "Willianna, this Yue Zhong is interesting! I like him very much! How about I give you 10 handsome men in exchange for him?"

Willianna immediately rejected, "No way! He's my prey! Kawashima Reiko, I'm warning you, he's the prey I caught."

Kawashima Reiko's eyes flashed with a lustful glint, "He was found by the two of us, we should be sharing him! Why not, let's enjoy him between the both of us? He's so strong, his taste and stamina must be good!!"

Willianna shot her a cold glare, "I can give you a Type 2 Nucleus as compensation. He's my prey, I naturally don't like sharing my prey with others. If you're not willing, we can head over to the arena to determine who owns him!"

Kawashima Reiko's eyes flashed with regret, "Ah well, forget it. However, I hope to see the Type 2 Nucleus in my hands within 3 days."

"En!" Willianna snorted in agreement. She could not bear the sight of this wanton woman.

Kawashima Reiko also shot her an icy glare, however, it disappeared quickly.

"Let's go!"

Seeing Yue Zhong about halfway across, the female warriors of the Storm Valley quickly got on their individual chains and began to climb.

Willianna stood at the edge of the cliff, staring down at the bottomless abyss, in contrast with Yue Zhong walking with ease, and her face fell. However, she gritted her teeth and hurried to climb.

She only had a strength of a Type 2 Divine Warrior, thus, there

was a limit to how fast she could proceed. Without the hurricane, she might be fast, however, since the natural element was roaring furiously, she had to be careful.

"What're you looking at?! There's nothing to be smug about! Move!" Willianna saw Yue Zhong loitering around at the other end, smiling at her. Thinking back to her words, her face turned red as though someone had given her a good face-smacking. She barked out loud in order to mask her embarrassment, before storming deeper towards the city.

Yue Zhong watched her furious expression and chuckled lightly before following her.

Once they passed the hurricane, the city of Storm Valley was different. Inside, it was peaceful and warm, and there was lush greenery everywhere.

# Chapter 812: Beautiful Willianna!

---

Many trees stood tall, each over dozens and hundreds of meters. Such trees were rare on Earth, however, they grew aplenty in this Storm Valley.

Atop the trees, there were strange fruits, each of them not existent on Earth. However, their shapes and colors were pretty similar to those from Earth.

A large number of men were dressed in simple clothing, carrying buckets to water the trees, apply fertilizer and to weed out bugs. They were overseen by a few burly and powerful-looking female soldiers wielding spears and whips, as they eyed the men coldly.

Young girls and ladies were running around the fields, practicing shooting, archery and other forms of training. As for the boys and young men, they were being taught by male teachers in the fields of textiles, farming, arithmetic and other forms of knowledge.

Many stone houses littered the plains of Storm Valley, each of them carrying a distinct style about themselves. The houses were also spaced neatly apart, giving a clean and fresh feel.

Along the streets of Storm Valley, there were many groups of people walking around. Men were peddling goods and snacks on the streets as vendors, while women were largely carrying weapons and sauntering around.

Behind many of these female warriors, there would be 2 or even 3 handsome and fair men, some even had a couple of guys and girls who were bickering.

The entire place seemed to be bustling with activity and vitality. The only difference would be that it was the exact opposite of a patriarchal society. In this Storm Valley, the women were the ones who fought and battled, thus, they held the power. Men were in charge of everything else. In fact, many of the men here had a

slight sissy air about them, with no sense of manliness whatsoever.

Yue Zhong sighed as he admired the scenery, "This Luo Qing Qing is truly capable!"

In the apocalypse on Earth, Yue Zhong had come across his fair share of female-dominated factions. In those places, some focused on accepting only women and girls. Some would ostracize men, and denounce them. Some even went to the extreme, killing any men they saw or taking them as slaves.

To Yue Zhong, most of these factions were doomed to fail as they had limited expansive potential. Or, some other faction would come around and swallow them. After all, reproduction was not possible with just women alone. Furthermore, those who went out of their way to hunt men were hunted instead. There were indeed capable and numerous female experts. However, in terms of absolute strength and power, men numbered more and held the advantage due to their physique.

However, in this Storm Valley, Luo Qing Qing did none of the above, instead, using education and other forms of indoctrination to flip the roles of men and women. Making use of the men, while retaining the power of the women, the entire Storm Valley was managed well, a testimony to the capabilities of this Queen.

Willianne grinned proudly, "What do you think? Our Storm Valley is amazing, isn't it? Compared to the Sun Alliance and Pterosaur Mountain, while our numbers are lesser, we are the most united. Our people are happy and lead a blissful life. There's enough food and we're protected from the external dangers. It's almost a heaven on earth."

Yue Zhong exclaimed, "It truly is decent!"

The scenery of Storm Valley was beautiful, food was abundant. Compared to the Earth before the apocalypse, it was just lacking a truly modern city feel. However, in such a world where Mutant Beasts and Dino-people were everywhere, it was practically

paradise.

Willianna heard his heartfelt praise and the corners of her mouth lifted in pleasure.

"It's here, see you guys!"

As they came to a small garden with a 3m-tall bungalow, Willianna bid the other female warriors goodbye and led Yue Zhong into her residence.

The room was clean and tidy, with a fragrant scent. Outside the room, there were plenty of flowers planted.

Willianna slumped down on her couch that was covered with a dozen beast pelt, stretching herself as she looked at Yue Zhong coyly, "You should be able to set yourself free eh? It's your choice to remain tied, however, don't you find that meaningless?"

Yue Zhong chuckled, and with a thought, a sliver of Devil Flame came to life in his palm, burning through the Type 3 Beast tendon, breaking it apart.

He then sat comfortably opposite her, and asked while grinning, "When did you notice?"

She looked straight at him with satisfaction, "Don't take me for a fool. You were able to walk alongside us without fear even after being tied up, and you could get past our Storm Valley entrance. One look and anyone can tell that you're not simple. However, the fact that you could undo the Type 3 Beast tendon so easily surpassed my expectations. I'm even more interested in you now."

She stared at Yue Zhong, "Speak, who are you? What did you come in here for?"

Yue Zhong replied, "I'm Yue Zhong, I really lost my way. Following you here was because I was curious about the Storm Valley."

She pondered a while before giving up, "Yue Zhong? Never heard

of you before."

Yue Zhong's accomplishments in the recent days had only been made known to the upper echelons of the Storm Valley only recently as well. In this world where information was backward, it was not as easy to keep track of information as compared to Earth.

Willianna was only a low-ranking soldier, thus she did not know about Yue Zhong.

She scooted over towards his side, her eyes lit with allure as she hugged his arms and flirted, "Hey! Yue Zhong, I like you a lot, be my man!"

Yue Zhong looked at this beautiful warrior and was taken aback, "Me? Why me? Aren't there plenty of other better-looking men than me out there?"

The number of handsome men was truly astounding, Yue Zhong had no choice but to admit, many of those sissies out there were truly better looking than him. At the same time, they would look at Willianna with respect, admiration, some even dared to leer. As long as she beckoned, they would immediately rush over, fighting to be her man.

# Chapter 813: Lingering Emotions!

---

Willianna looked at Yue Zhong, her pupils dilating, as she gave off an incredibly attractive aura. She reached out to caress Yue Zhong's jaw, laughing coyly, "Those men are all weak and sad. They can't make me excited. Even if I look at them for a long period, I still find them disgusting. There's no charm at all. Be my man, Yue Zhong, I will treat you well!"

He was being teased!!

Yue Zhong blanked out for a while, he was actually being teased like a girl back on Earth. Willianna's gaze on him was like he enjoyed looking at beautiful women, furthermore, it was the first time his jaw was being caressed like so!

"I refuse!!"

He reached out in an overbearing manner and brought her into his arms, using a position of power to look down at this beautiful, sexy and charming lady, before pushing her under him, and spoke forcefully, "It's not me being your man, but you will be my woman."

"No! You must be my man!"

This flirty Willianna suddenly grabbed Yue Zhong's body with a glint in her eyes, forcefully pushing him to one side, intending to gain the top position.

After all, in this place, Willianna had been brought up to treat relationships with men as normal. A woman could have 3 or 4 men and no one would bat an eye. However, if she was to do it, she must be in the top position and dominate, although she liked this manly Yue Zhong, she did not appreciate being dominated.

Yue Zhong was also caught unprepared for this little minx to suddenly explode with strength. He was thus flung easily to one side.

"Just be obedient and accept your fate!"

Willianna twisted and deftly swung her body over his, her face full of excitement, her smile enchanting. She used her strength and tore off Yue Zhong's outer clothes before she was taken aback. She caught sight of the inner Type 4 Mutant Beast hide.

On Earth, Yue Zhong had commissioned the usage of the Type 4 Sea Snake scales to be made into 10 innerwear for his use. Its defense was astonishing, preventing even cannons from destroying it.

However, even such a powerful defensive suit had been through the worst of wears and tears due to Yue Zhong's conquests. This particular piece was already covered in many scars, especially the right arm area, obviously having lost the entire right portion before.

Willianna used her hands to touch the Type 4 Mutant Beast hide, her eyes burning with desire as she licked her lips, "This is great! You're really something else! I'm liking you more and more!!"

She hated those weak, flower-boy types, instead preferring men with strength and combat experience. Seeing the Type 4 Mutant Beast hide and its ravaged state, she became incredibly excited.

Noticing her passionate gaze, Yue Zhong's own desire was also set aflame, and he quickly flipped her over and chuckled, "Not bad, I also like you, little minx!"

Willianna was caught by surprise and tried to exert her strength of 20 times that of a normal person.

However, Yue Zhong was a Type 4 expert possessing 38 times Strength, no matter how she struggled, it was impossible to escape from his clutches.

Both parties continued to struggle, their bodies entwining.

In the end, following a moan of pain and pleasure, a bright red flower appeared on the pelts, before multiple moans continued

after that.

As the acts of passion continued for 2 hours, these 2 with terrifying physiques laid together, surrounded by the various Mutant Beast pelt.

After the bout of sex, Willianna curled up in Yue Zhong's embrace, wearing a satisfied smile, "Not bad! Yue Zhong, truly strong. Be my 1st man. I will treat you will. In the future, even if I get more men, you will always be my first husband."

In response, Yue Zhong slapped her butt cheek, "Silly, with me, you can forget about having another man. Be good and be my woman. Otherwise, see how I take care of you."

"Alright, alright!" She chuckled brightly, radiating bliss as she laid in his arms for a while more, before asking lazily, "Yue Zhong, did you truly come to Storm Valley just to take a look? Is there anything you need my help for? Let me make this clear first, if you want to do anything harmful to Storm Valley, I will not help you."

After gaining Yue Zhong, the satisfied Willianna dropped her icy stance and became a lot gentler.

Yue Zhong caressed her smooth skin and spoke, "I really did come here just to observe, to see what the mythical Storm Valley was like. Oh yes, if I want to leave Storm Valley, will you come with me?"

"You want to leave? Can't you stay?" Willianna was taken aback and lifted her head to look at Yue Zhong. Her eyes were filled with unwillingness, "For me, can't you consider it? If you stay here, I can go out and hunt, feed and clothe you well. You just have to stay at home to handle the chores and look after our kids."

Yue Zhong pinched her beautiful breasts lightly, "No! I still have many things to do. Even if I stay here, I can't possibly stay at home all day to do the chores and look after the kids. You don't like such a man, don't you? Come with me."

Willianna sunk into a dilemma, her thoughts in turmoil. In the end, she shook her head, "No, I can't. My family, friends, and subordinates are all here. I can't give everything up to follow you."

Although she liked Yue Zhong a lot, it was not to the crazy extent that she could give everything up for him. After all, she was not yet blinded by love.

Yue Zhong sighed lightly but did not push the issue, "Forget it. Oh right, I would like to meet your Queen, I need to discuss something with her."

"Sorry, I don't have that kind of clearance." She grinned apologetically, before asking, "Wait, why do you want to see Her Majesty?"

Yue Zhong replied, "I want to obtain some Prehistoric tech from her. You just have to report to your superiors, say the leader of Vulture Valley Yue Zhong has requested an audience. She will most likely see me."

Willianna frowned, "Yue Zhong? Vulture Valley's leader? Are you very famous? How come I haven't heard of you? Don't be too confident, Yue Zhong! In the entire Green Region, only the leaders of the 3 factions or Type 4 Divine Warriors have the qualifications to meet Her Majesty. Other than that, no one will possibly be entertained."

Yue Zhong chuckled, "The Sun Alliance sent a hundred Sun Warriors, and they were wiped out. If she knew this, she will definitely see me."

Willianna's eyes widened in shock, "For real? You wiped out a hundred Sun Warriors?"

The Sun Warriors were the most elite of the Sun Alliance. Upon equipping the Sun Armor, every one of them would reach the peak of Type 3 Divine Warrior strength. A hundred of them was not something even a Type 4 Divine Warrior could underestimate.

Yue Zhong flipped his hands, and a perfect set of Sun Battle Armor appeared in his hands, he handed it to her, "This armor is for you! Treat it as a gift!"

"Oh my goodness! It's real!! This is amazing! Yue Zhong, I love you so much!" Willianna touched the armor, and could not bear to put it down. She turned to eye Yue Zhong with a hint of desire, kissing him passionately again.

To an ordinary warrior, this Sun Armor was incredibly precious. To Willianna, it was even more precious than a hundred carat gemstone. She was thus extremely happy.

She seemed to have forgotten her fatigue as she kissed him deeply, "Let's do it again!!"

After an entire night of passion, early the next morning, Willianna left the place, heading towards the palace of Storm Valley.

She quickly returned, following behind her were 16 members with green battle armor as well as one of the 8 personal guards of the Queen, Ying Lan.

Willianna was definitely a charming and alluring beauty, but beside Ying Lan, she was somewhat inferior.

Ying Lan eyed Yue Zhong coolly and asked, "You're Yue Zhong?"

Yue Zhong did not bat an eyelid, "That's right!"

Without any further bullshit, she turned around, "The Queen has summoned you, come with me!"

Willianna stood one side, looking helplessly at Yue Zhong, before following Ying Lan.

She was a powerful warrior but compared to Ying Lan, one of the 8 Storm Greats, she was just a rank-and-file soldier.

Yue Zhong was escorted by the Storm Valley warriors as they went towards the castle.

He lifted his head to look at the Storm Valley, his heart filled with shock, "This is the Storm Valley Palace? No way! It's basically an upgraded version of the Sky Fortress!!"

Floating in the skies, there was a huge alloy structure stretching about 30km. This was the Imperial City of the Storm Valley!

# Chapter 814: Storm Imperial City!

---

Yue Zhong lifted his head to admire that floating structure, his eyes full of shock. This was the first large structure that was made entirely out of alloy. Even the Radiant Battleship, a Gold-Treasure, was not as big as this Storm Imperial City.

"What did they use? How could they achieve its anti-gravity? How much energy would this consume?" Yue Zhong could not help but wonder, as the questions ran through his head. Such a scene was still too shocking.

On Earth, Yue Zhong had also managed to produce something close to the Sky Fortress, and it was able to float. However, it required a huge energy source.

The floating city spanned over 30 km, and one could tell that it must weigh a lot with just a look. If such a structure wanted to float on this planet, which seemed to have twice the gravity compared to Earth, the energy consumption was definitely not little.

Even a Type 5 Mutant Beast nucleus would not be sufficient. The technology was truly way out of Yue Zhong's imagination.

At the same time, as he observed carefully, he noticed that the huge alloy structure was not just one entire piece. Instead, there were various covers of different shapes all around.

Since Yue Zhong had come across his fair share of technology and equipment, he guessed that those covers should be for the radars and weapons. Just 10% of this floating city's weapons was enough to annihilate any enemy.

Compared to this Storm Imperial City, the Sun Alliance Palace was practically trash.

Facing this, Yue Zhong's eyes lit with desire, if he could gain such a city, even if a million-strong army came, they would be seeking

death.

A dozen Mutant Birds that had dinosaur heads with a pair of broad wings came swooping down from the floating city.

From on top of them, a dozen female warriors jumped down.

One of them came up to Ying Lan and bowed, "Lady Ying Lan!"  
"Let's go up!"

Ying Lan spoke coldly to Yue Zhong before leaping up to the back of one Mutant Bird.

"Strong! They actually managed to tame Mutant Birds as well, this Storm Valley is indeed a powerhouse, and can definitely stand firm compared to the other 2 hegemons." Yue Zhong went up on another Mutant Bird and thought silently.

Mutant Birds were tough to tame, even with the Sun Alliance comprising of many smaller factions, not one had managed to provide a Mutant Bird before. The fact that Storm Valley had their own was impressive.

One young and nimble female warrior chirped, "Grab my waist and sit tight!"

Yue Zhong did not stand on ceremony and immediately wrapped his hands around her waist, as a nice, tender feeling traveled up his hands.

The female warrior grabbed her ropes and barked out once, following that, the Mutant Bird flapped its wings and soared into the skies, heading for the floating city.

In the city, there were lush greenery and strange plants growing, alongside some strange trees as well. Countless beautiful stone structures were laid out all over the place.

On the streets, a number of women with incredible looks and aura were walking about.

The stark contrast of this Imperial City and the rest of Storm

Valley was obvious, there was not a single man to be seen.

The flock of Mutant Birds came to rest in a wide field.

Ying Lan turned to Yue Zhong and spoke coldly, "Come with me!"

Yue Zhong followed her.

Just then, 4 officers came up and stopped in front of Ying Lan, "Lady Ying Lan, please wait a moment!"

She had a curious glint as she asked, "What's going on?"

One of the officers responded, "Her Highness Liu Mei'er has ordered for Yue Zhong to be brought to the Hundred Herb Temple! She had already discussed this with her Majesty."

Ying Lan replied coldly, "Alright, I got it!"

She then turned and brought Yue Zhong to another location.

Leading Yue Zhong to a vast palace, she spoke, "This is the Hundred Herb Temple, please wait for a moment!"

After that, Ying Lan did not seem to care about Yue Zhong's opinions or staying back to discuss anything with him, as she quickly led her subordinates and left.

Yue Zhong frowned slightly, before carefully looking around, his wariness heightened. He might be strong, and if need be, he could summon Type 5 Mount Tai over with his Tamed Beast Summon technique to destroy this place, but he might fall here if he was not careful.

Observing the place carefully, he did not detect any danger. He flipped his hands and the radar-equipped tablet appeared. Bai Yi's image flashed on the screen, as Yue Zhong asked, "Bai Yi, are you able to control the central computer of this floating metal island?"

Bai Yi was a super A.I. and was able to display her abilities through computers.

Data flashed through her eyes, before coming to a stop. She

quickly replied, "On this metal island, I did not discover any trace of computers. There are 3 possibilities, 1 is that it doesn't exist here. The second is that the metal island does not rely on any computer at all. The last possibility is that while the central computer exists, it's being shielded by some mysterious power, preventing me from detecting it. Based on the makeup of this metal island, there was definitely the usage of a computer during the building process. As for now, it is still tough to ascertain where the computer is. Because the data lines have not been used for more than a hundred years. Most sectors are actually down."

Yue Zhong frowned slightly, "Is that so? Seems like I have to ask Luo Qing Qing herself!"

"Who are you?"

As Yue Zhong was deep in thoughts, a voice suddenly rang out.

Yue Zhong turned to the source of the voice, discovering a handsome man whose body was not too burly, not scrawny. He was good-looking, through and through.

A young man with sword-shaped brows, a straight posture, and an uncommon demeanor looked coldly at Yue Zhong. It was he who had spoken.

Yue Zhong shot that handsome young teen a cold glance and retorted, "And who are you? Before asking someone else's name, don't you have to announce your own name first? Don't you even know these basic manners?"

# Chapter 815: Choosing a Consort!

---

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, the handsome youth was taken aback.

6 guards beside him immediately stepped forward, barking furiously at Yue Zhong, "Impudent! This is the Young Master of the Rokujo Clan, His Highness Rokujo Bikuma. He is set to be the main King of the Queen. You dare to be disrespectful, do you seek death?"

After they shouted, Rokujo Bikuma's eyes regained their original prideful gaze.

"King?"

Yue Zhong's mouth twitched, before looking at the handsome youth again, a sense of ridicule in his mind.

Yue Zhong tried asking, "Don't tell me you are all about to become the Queen's consorts, are you?"

One of them glared disdainfully at Yue Zhong, "Ignorant fool, I don't understand how such an ugly man like you can actually be here. This is the place where the Queen gathers her consorts. Those that can truly match the Queen only number four. The rest are all her toys. The position of a concubine compared to us toys are very different."

Among the many handsome men in this huge temple, Yue Zhong was truly insignificant in terms of looks. In truth, he might be considered decent among most other ordinary guys, but compared to all these pretty boys, he was lacking in the looks department.

Yue Zhong looked at the number of pretty men here and laughed lightly, "And to think that the saying was that all men are not good. When women are in power, aren't they the same."

Both genders were biological creatures and had similar needs. The Empress Dowager of the Qin Dynasty was a woman of many

faces, controlling behind the scenes, her authority absolute. In modern society, rich women would also play around with toyboys, otherwise, there would not be an industry of gigolos as well.

When he thought of that overbearing and charming Luo Qing Qing possessing so many men, Yue Zhong felt pity. Although she was beautiful and had an otherworldly charm to her, she was not his type after all.

The expression of one of the youths turned ugly, his muscles turning taut as he glared at Yue Zhong and stepped forward, "What did you say?! Are you insulting Her Majesty?! Seems like you require a beating, I will teach you the manners of this palace!!"

Yue Zhong shot him a disdainful look, turning around and speaking icily, "Just based on you? Train another few hundred years, sissy!"

The youth trembled with rage when scolded like that. He tapped his foot and charged towards Yue Zhong with an 8-times Speed, his pale fist blasting towards Yue Zhong's head, "Watch my fist!!"

"Wow! Zheng Guan Xi's speed is so fast!"

"Truly astounding! He already has the strength comparable to a warrior! Powerful!"

"Handsome, and strong! Seems like he's going to be a strong contender for the position of King!"

"..."

As the majority of the youths were looking at Zheng Guan Xi, their eyes were filled with a solemn look. Although they were all good-looking, most of them only had the physique that was twice as powerful as ordinary people. As someone with 8-times that, Zheng Guan Xi was already an impressive fighter.

‘Too weak!’

Yue Zhong sat on a chair, eyeing Zheng Guan Xi who was rushing

towards him and sent a casual slap across his chest.

Peng!

Following a loud sound, Zheng Guan Xi was sent hurtling into the other side of the temple, spitting out a large amount of blood, as he crumpled to the floor.

Seeing this, all the youths had huge changes in their expressions. They could not help but retreat a few steps, eyeing Yue Zhong with fear and trepidation. No one was willing to go help Zheng Guan Xi up.

Zheng Guan Xi was good-looking and had decent fighting capabilities. He was slated to be one of the forerunners for the position of King. Hence, no one was willing to help save him. In fact, if he died, they would be happier.

"The Queen, Her Majesty, arrives!!"

Following a resounding announcement by a female warrior, 16 warriors wrapped in the green Storm Battle Armor came escorting 2 extremely beautiful women into the temple palace.

"We greet Your Majesty!"

All the handsome youths immediately got down on their knees and lowered their heads, their eyes filled with expectation and desire.

Only Yue Zhong continued to sit one side, eyeing everything going on with mild interest.

Under the protection of the 16 Storm Warriors, the 2 absolute beauties sat on 2 imperial thrones.

Yue Zhong gazed towards the 2, noticing one was the charismatic yet arrogant Storm Queen Luo Qing Qing. Her visage was cold yet filled with an attractive charm and confidence. The other person was also a beautiful woman who was decked in white fox hide, her skin fair, her features like something out of a painting. Her figure

was petite, and she exuded a graceful and holy charm.

At this time, Luo Qing Qing's shape gaze fell upon Yue Zhong. Her single glance was enough to cause goosebumps on Yue Zhong's skin.

He could sense her confidence and oppressive aura, exceeding even that of his own, "Strong! This woman is a true top expert!"

Yue Zhong had only been an ordinary university student before the apocalypse. After countless battles and struggles, he managed to get to where he was at. The period of time was barely over a year or so, and although he was already starting to possess the bearing of a ruler, it was still nothing compared to Luo Qing Qing who obviously had ruled for more than a dozen years.

The pretty girl beside Luo Qing Qing also eyed Yue Zhong, her eyes filled with a curious gaze.

Luo Qing QIng gazed at Yue Zhong for some time, before asking sharply, "You're the leader of the Vulture Valley, Yue Zhong?"

Yue Zhong responded without arrogance nor subservience, "That's right, Luo Qing Qing! I'm Yue Zhong!"

"Yue Zhong!"

"Who's that?"

"..."

The numerous kneeling men began to wonder in their hearts. They finally understood that this man was different from them.

Seated on her throne, Luo Qing Qing's eyes flashed, and without a sound, she suddenly dashed towards Yue Zhong with a powerful fist.

Since her speed was fast, the booming sound of her speed breaking the sound barrier, combined with the oppressive pressure she was exuding, formed into a powerful intent on blasting Yue Zhong to pieces. Even a peak Type 3 Divine Warrior would be

unable to get up and evade.

All around her, other than Rokujo Bikuma, the rest of the handsome men felt an intense pressure crushing them. They found it hard to breathe.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed, his right fist enveloped with Dark Dou Qi as it slammed out against the incoming shockwave, dispersing the force.

That single fist broke through Luo Qing Qing's intent, but Yue Zhong was shocked inwardly, "This woman is strong! She is like already half-step into the Type 5 realm, and might be able to break through anytime."

The corners of Luo Qing Qing's mouth curled slightly, revealing a satisfied smile, "Not bad, to be able to receive my fist, you're definitely a Type 4 Divine Warrior. Even if you're not Yue Zhong, you have the capability to stand before me. On account of your strength, you're in line to become my King. Work hard!"

Hearing those words, the many handsome men kneeling began to show expressions of envy and jealousy. These people could fight their whole lives only to attain a toyboy status, whereas Yue Zhong had immediately gained a position to fight for the King's seat. They were naturally envious.

Yue Zhong was taken aback, as he frowned slightly, "Luo Qing Qing, I had no intentions of becoming your King. I'm here this time to discuss purchasing some of the prehistoric techs you have."

Luo Qing Qing was definitely a top beauty with an otherworldly charm, however, Yue Zhong did not want to share her with a hundred other men.

Luo Qing Qing's countenance turned extremely frosty as fury erupted in her eyes, "Are you trying to make a fool out of me? This is the Hundred Herb Temple where the contenders for the King's position stay. You came in here willingly and now you're trying to

back out? Deserving of death!!"

Yue Zhong was inwardly shocked as his brow furrowed deeper, a sense of unease rising in his heart, "Willingly become your King?"

"Audacious, you dare to take Her Majesty for a fool!"

At this time, Ying Lan who had been standing quietly by Luo Qing Qing's side, charged out like a storm, thrusting her spear towards Yue Zhong.

Powered by the Storm Armor, Ying Lan broke past her Type 3 Divine Warrior strength, reaching the initial level of Type 4. The mysterious array behind her glowed and dimmed erratically, as a powerful gust of wind blew, giving her the appearance of an enraged killing goddess.

"She is really trying to kill me!"

Yue Zhong could sense the killing intent from Ying Lan, and his caution was pushed to the extreme. Activating his Shadow Steps, his body twisted as he brought his right fist enveloped with Devil Flames to smash towards her chest without any mercy.

Ying Lan was also an experienced fighter. Under such circumstances, she managed to twist slightly, evading the sure-kill, but Yue Zhong's fist managed to land on her body, which sent her shooting into a wall, as she spat out large amounts of blood.

Luo Qing Qing's eyes turned red with fury, as she disappeared from her seat, "Audacious! You dare to injure my people in my Imperial City! I condemn you to death!!"

# Chapter 816: Abnormal Change!

---

With a terrible hurricane blowing behind her, Luo Qing Qing suddenly appeared in front of Yue Zhong, both fists blasting towards Yue Zhong.

"Bastard!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with anger, his Dark Dou Qi channeling. He activated his Shadow Steps, the Flame Blade in his hands slashing towards Luo Qing Qing with the speed of sound.

The Flame Blade slashed through Luo Qing Qing's body a meteor, cleaving her in half.

"Not good, it's a clone!"

His abundant combat experience felt a light tap on his blade, and expecting the next move, he twisted his body and leaped to the side.

A long leg suddenly lashed out from behind him, aiming for his waist with a powerful kick.

Peng!

Yue Zhong was slammed heavily in the waist, his entire body flying towards the wall on the other side. His Second Order Body of Steel groaned, a few bones cracking. If it had been him when he had just entered this world, he would have been incapacitated.

Having gained the upper hand, Luo Qing Qing transformed into a blur, unleashing a flurry of blows on him.

Yue Zhong was after all an Evolver with plenty of combat experience, facing Luo Qing Qing's aggressive blows, he was completely at a disadvantage, and was like a small boat that could capsize in this torrential storm. However, he held on firmly and did not allow her to deal any devastating blows.

"This damn woman is truly strong!!"

Peng!

Following a loud boom, Yue Zhong was sent slamming into a wall, his internal qi and blood in turmoil. Unable to help it, he spat out a mouthful of blood.

Luo Qing Qing was aggressive and did not let up on her enemies. She continued to charge at Yue Zhong and rain blows down on him.

After defending against a flurry of blows, Yue Zhong was once again slammed in his chest, being sent flying towards the distance.

"Her Majesty is victorious!!"

"Her Majesty is victorious!!"

"Her Majesty is invincible!!"

"..."

The various pretty men began to cheer out in excitement, gazing at Luo Qing Qing and admiring her valiantness.

Such a character, even on Earth, before the apocalypse, would definitely gain the admiration and attraction of countless men. To the men of Storm Valley, Luo Qing Qing was such a character worthy of their respect and admiration.

The handsome Rokujo Bikuma looked at Luo Qing Qing with a strange gaze.

Yue Zhong spat another mouthful of blood, his body riddled with injuries, as he stared gravely at Luo Qing Qing, "In a fair battle, just comparing our physique, although I hate to admit it, I'm truly not a match for her!"

Evolving to the peak of Type 4 Divine Warrior, Yue Zhong's physique was already at a level where it was hard to find opponents. Today, he was actually bested by a lady, causing him to feel unwilling. After all, he was a male chauvinist to a certain extent.

The feeling quickly faded, replaced by an irrepressible killing intent, "I guess I can only use other methods to kill her. If need be, I'll just summon Mount Tai to come and tear this whole place apart!"

He was someone who had trawled through a mountain of zombies and corpses, in the earlier duel, he had lost his cool in a moment of anger. However, he quickly regained his calm and would choose the most optimal method of dealing with his enemies.

Just as he was preparing to activate his other abilities, the overbearing Luo Qing Qing charged right in front of him, when suddenly, her face turned pale, and she seemed to falter slightly.

Yue Zhong's exceptional ability caught that moment of weakness and he brought his fist encased with Dark Dou Qi to slam into her abdomen, sending her shooting towards the crowd of people, as a thought flashed past his mind, "Good chance!"

Seeing the fall of their leader, the men all had changes in expressions as they scrambled for cover.

"Your Majesty, let me help you!!"

Right at this time, the handsome Rokujo Bikuma stepped forward, his face full of concern.

The pale Luo Qing Qing barked, "Rokujo, stand down!!"

Rokujo Bikuma seemed not to have noticed her words, choosing to continue his dash forward.

In order to avoid injuring him, Luo Qing Qing retracted her aura.

At that moment, the corners of Rokujo Bikuma's mouth curled, revealing a smug expression. His right hand suddenly flashed with a white light, piercing towards Luo Qing Qing.

Luo Qing Qing had let down her guard around the person most likely to be her future King, and thus was sent flying a second time

by the white light, her chest penetrated.

At the same time, the little beauty seated in the other Imperial Throne suddenly burst forth with multiple palm strikes, blasting towards the Storm Warriors beside her.

Caught unprepared, all 16 members of the Storm Warriors in their green Storm Armor were killed instantly.

After dealing with Luo Qing Qing, Rokujo Bikuma slapped his hands together, and a number of strings within the entire hall appeared.

Within a breath, the hundreds of beautiful men were all sliced up into multiple pieces, fresh blood dying the floor red.

Yue Zhong watched this sudden abnormal turn of events and frowned, retreating a few steps, his body taut. He was aware that he had just been embroiled in a coup de grâce.

Luo Qing Qing's chest had been pierced by a laser blade, blood flowing out the corner of her mouth. She eyed the beauty in the other chair with disbelief asking, "It's you! Mei'er, why did you betray me?"

Liu Mei'er smiled alluringly, "You didn't expect this, did you? Big Sister Luo, your trusted little sister, your future King, and your most trusted aide would all betray you. Doesn't it feel good?"

Ying Lan, who had been sent flying into the wall earlier by Yue Zhong, leaped up and came to Liu Mei'er's side, staring coldly at Luo Qing Qing.

Luo Qing Qing stared at the 3 of them, a stabbing pain in her heart, "Why? Why? I have never mistreated you guys, why betray me?!"

# Chapter 817: The Oriole Behind!

---

Liu Mei'er's face contorted as she shouted, "Sis! The entire Storm Valley has been under my management! What have you done? You're just someone stronger and have been entrusted by our Great Mother, that was how you became Storm Queen! What other qualifications do you have to receive the love and admiration of our people? While I have to remain beneath you?! In terms of strength, yes, I'm just initial Type 4 Divine Warrior, and can't compare to you. But in everything else, I'm far above you. The entire Storm Valley has been managed well at my hands, you have no right to be queen! I should be the ruler of Storm Valley, the true Queen of Storm Valley."

"As to your future King Rikudo Bikuma, he has long since gotten tired of you, who don't understand men at all." Liu Mei'er smiled, stretching out her leg towards Rikudo Bikuma.

"Many thanks, Queen!"

Rikudo Bikuma licked his lips as a look of passionate desire appeared in his eyes. He lowered his head and started licking her legs in a perverse manner, obviously a sign of his fetish.

Luo Qing Qing gasped for breath as she stared at Ying Lan of the 8 Greats, asking, "What about you? Ying Lan, why you as well?"

Ying Lan's eyes flashed with an apologetic look before she gritted her teeth and said, "My apologies, Your Majesty, I'd always been a spy sent from the Pterosaur Mountain. My real name is not Ying Lan, but Zheng Yun! I'm thankful for your trust and high regard, but I cannot betray the orders of Pterosaur Mountain!"

Luo Qing Qing was shocked and she stared at Liu Mei'er, "You actually colluded with Pterosaur Mountain! No wonder you dare to act against me. Zheng Zhen and Dao Ge aren't easily satiated wolves, what conditions did you promise them?!"

Liu Mei'er seemed to become excited as she grinned sadistically, "My dear sister, I did not promise them much, only that after this, I will sent you to them with your abilities wasted. They will love you dearly, sister. Those men that you hate over there will love you truly 'well', the ex-Queen of Storm Valley!!"

Luo Qing Qing's countenance turned pale. The 2 leaders of Pterosaur Mountain were widely renowned perverts. If she landed in their arms, she will lead a fate worse than a prostitute. When she had gained control of Storm Valley, she had offended them and the Sun Alliance on multiple occasions. Her future would truly be murky once she ended up there.

Liu Mei'er laughed out loud with a contorted expression, "Haha!! Haha!! Sister, I know that there are many Storm Warriors loyal to you. Once you're sent there, those diehard loyal subordinates of yours will be sent together!! You will all become the toys of those stinking men there!! That'll be so interesting!! Haha! Haha!!"

Liu Mei'er had been suppressed by Luo Qing Qing for countless years, having to act as a loyal princess. Her innate twisted personality was now unleashed for all to see, finally free from suppression.

"What ugliness!" Yue Zhong thought coldly as he looked at Liu Mei'er. Although this woman had beauty, her current expression was truly twisted. Her excitement was revolting to Yue Zhong, and could not compare to Willianna's cuteness.

Luo Qing Qing turned to Yue Zhong and spoke, "Yue Zhong, you heard it all. It was a misunderstanding between us. Join hands with me, let's kill these traitors together! I can grant you 20 Storm Battle Armors."

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, retreating 2 steps, "Why should I? You're the defeated right now, furthermore, you were the one who attacked without checking facts."

Yue Zhong eyed Liu Mei'er and spoke coldly, "Liu Mei'er, I came

here this time to get the prehistoric tech of your Storm Valley. As long as you give them to me, I can forget about you plotting against me. Otherwise, don't blame me for what happens next."

"Prehistoric tech? You truly like to daydream eh? Why don't you take a good look at who this is?" Liu Mei'er laughed lightly before clapping her hands.

2 burly men dragged in Willianna, who was tied up tightly.

Willianna stared at Liu Mei'er with rage, but when she saw Luo Qing Qing who had been injured gravely as well as Yue Zhong, her eyes flashed with shock.

Liu Mei'er laughed out, before throwing out an extremely attractive proposal, "Do you see that? That's your woman Willianna. Yue Zhong, if you wait there obediently after I'm done, I can return her to you. At the same time, before handing the Storm Queen over, I can let you play with her for a few days. Every single one of her Storm Warriors are beauties, I can give  $\frac{1}{3}$  to you, how about that?"

Luo Qing Qing was a top-notch beauty that had an incredible demeanor and valiant aura. To be able to toy with a queen like that, it was truly a form of allure to most men.

Yue Zhong's brows arched, and he was about to say something when suddenly, something else happened. Rokudo Bikuma, who was still licking Liu Mei'er's legs suddenly waved his right hand, his eyes flashing with a cold light, as a white light shot towards Liu Mei'er's chest.

"Stinking man, you truly are a disloyal, blind wolf. Did you think I would not be wary of you?"

Liu Mei'er's eyes flashed coldly, as a tornado formed in her right hand, slamming into the white light, slapping the dagger away. She then kicked out viciously, her powerful strength exploding out and slamming into Rokudo Bikuma's body, sending him flying into

a wall.

The 2 men who were grabbing Willianna suddenly exploded forth, one of them glowing with a grey color. A powerful force blasted outwards, his fist slamming towards Liu Mei'er viciously.

"Zheng Zhen, it is you!!"

Without time to defend, Liu Mei'er could only lift up her jade-like hand to slap the incoming fist.

Hong!

With a burst of might, Zheng Zhen's superior strength sent Liu Mei'er flying.

The other person appeared noiselessly behind Liu Mei'er, throwing a punch without caring that she was a girl.

The terrifying strength exploded out, slamming into Liu Mei'er as she crashed towards the floor like a pitiful animal, spitting out a mouthful of blood.

The expert behind her flipped his hands, causing a number of vines to appear, piercing into Liu Mei'er's body, as they begun to absorb her essence.

Liu Mei'er let out a scream of agony, eyeing Zheng Zhen and Dao Ge beside her with hatred, "Zheng Zhen, Dao Ge, it actually is you two!! You dare to go back on your word and attack me?! Why?! Aren't you afraid of being mocked?!"

The burly and handsome Zheng Zhen caressed Liu Mei'er's chin with a mocking look, "Stupid fool!! My interest in Luo Qing Qing is real, but I'm also interested in you. The 8 Storm Greats as well. All you women are just prey to me. How dare you prey discuss equality with me, overstepping your limits!!"

The man with golden hair who had injured Liu Mei'er in one hit, and was absorbing her essence through his vines chuckled menacingly, "Zheng Zhen, Liu Mei'er is yours. I want Luo Qing

Qing."

Zheng Zhen chuckled back, "I too want to play with this proud woman, what do we do?"

Dao Ge's eyes flashed with a lustful light, "Alright! I'll toy with her for a month, before giving her to you. However, you must also let me have Liu Mei'er afterward. I love playing around with these stupid women with their essence and life force all sucked out."

At this time, Rokudo Bikuma who had been sent flying wiped his mouth, walking in front of Zheng Zhen, "Dino King, I've already settled these 2 women as per our agreement. You guys have to uphold your end yes?"

Zheng Zhen smiled lightly, "Of course! As per our agreement, all the men and a quarter of the women in Storm Valley will belong to you. You will become the new Storm King."

A look of joy came over Rikudo Bikuma's face, as he kneeled, "Thank you, Your Majesty! From today on, the Rokudo Family will forever be loyal to you, and serve you with all we have, until the end of our days."

After that, he stood up, glancing at Liu Mei'er and Luo Qing Qing with disdain, "The two Queens, the men of the Rokudo Family are not your toys. This is a world of men, you women are only fit to be our toys."

The two of them stared at Rokudo Bikuma with hatred, however, one of them was injured, the other attacked by surprise, and was even pierced by Mutant Vines. Both of them weren't a match for Zheng Zhen or Dao Ge.

Zheng Zhen stepped on Liu Mei'er's stomach, causing her to spit out another mouthful of blood. He then turned to Yue Zhong, "You must be Yue Zhong? How about joining us? The promises these bitches made earlier, we can fulfill them."

To these overlords, women were just toys and decorative

ornaments. They sought power and authority.

Yue Zhong hesitated for a while, before speaking, "I want prehistoric tech of both Pterosaur Mountain and Storm Valley. I want this Imperial City as well as that woman. Give me all of these, and I can pretend to overlook all of these."

He did not hold either Liu Mei'er or Luo Qing Qing in high regards, compared to them, he preferred the tech of both factions.

Dao Ge's expression sunk, "Yue Zhong, don't ask for a mile when given an inch! Even if you're a Type 4 Divine Warrior, there are 2 of us here, if you want to provoke us, don't think about leaving here alive!"

# Chapter 818: Yue Zhong's True Strength!

---

Luo Qing Qing's eyes flashed with a strange glint as she barked, "Yue Zhong, they are shepherds commissioned by the Dino-people to raise other humans as cattle! Once they destroy our Storm Valley, the millions of humans in Green Region will become the food for the Dino-people!! Yue Zhong, if you still have any conscience, help me kill them together!"

Zheng Zhen's eyes flashed coldly, shooting towards Luo Qing Qing with a vicious expression as he slapped her, "Bitch! You speak too much!!"

Luo Qing Qing's eyes flashed with fury, as her body twitched and she spat out blood once more, trying to support herself up.

As Zheng Zhen prepared to slap her once more, a huge hand stopped him.

Zheng Zhen's pupils narrowed, as his face turned dark and he stared at Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, are you intending to go against us?"

Yue Zhong eyed Zheng Zhen before speaking indifferently, "Luo Qing Qing, if I were to help your Storm Valley out of this, how do you intend to repay me?"

Luo Qing Qing stared at Yue Zhong warily, "What do you want?"

Even in this dangerous situation, she did not want to promise anything without thinking it through. If Yue Zhong wanted her to be a slave for her whole life, she would rather die.

Yue Zhong quickly spoke of his conditions, "Your Storm Valley tech, this Imperial City, as well as your forces to help me deal with Pterosaur Mountain. After annihilating them, I want their tech. Oh yes. Willianna is my woman, you can choose to let her come with me, if she does decide to stay, you must promote her, and ensure her safety."

Such a proud woman like Luo Qing Qing would definitely agree to be Yue Zhong's slave. He was not interested in her as well, thus he did not ask for such a condition.

She was after all a decisive warlord, although his conditions were harsh, she made her decision in a second, "Fine! I promise you!!"

"Kill him!!"

Zheng Zhen barked out ominously, with a tap of his foot, he shot towards Yue Zhong with a grey glow on his back.

Dao Ge simply kicked Liu Mei'er to one side, before his body flashed and he disappeared from his location.

Ying Lan, or Zheng Yun, who was standing beside Zheng Zhen, charged forth at Yue Zhong, her Storm Armor glowing brightly, as she thrust her spear towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed, as he unleashed his Art of Fear, causing a powerful Spirit wave to spread out.

When that terrifying ability slammed into Zheng Zhen and Dao Ge, there did not seem to be any effect. However, for Zheng Yun, her entire body trembled.

The Second Order Art of Fear, combined with Yue Zhong's high Spirit, even though it was unable to shock the Type 3 Divine Warrior Zheng Yun, it was enough to shake her out of her wits for a moment.

At that moment, a void appeared in mid-air, and 10 sharp bone spikes shot out, targeting the 3 of them.

Zheng Zhen sent out a punch, his right fist enveloped in a grey Battle Armor, causing the bone spike to shatter upon contact.

Dao Ge's body flashed, causing the 3 bone spikes to brush past the shadow of his image.

Zheng Yun managed to recover from the momentarily stun, but by then, the 3 bone spikes were dangerously close. She screamed

out, "Father, save me!!"

However, a scene that caused her to despair unfolded, as Zheng Zhen ignored her pleas, instead, appearing in front of Yue Zhong with a cold glare, sending out a fist towards his heart.

Zheng Yun's body twisted, as she tried her best to evade the one closest. However, the remaining two pierced towards her heart and right chest.

Dang!

With a loud impact, White Bones' spikes were unable to pierce through her Storm Armor, however, the powerful impact was enough to shake her heart, causing her to be sent flying.

White Bones appeared out of thin air, its body firing countless bone spikes towards Zheng Yun.

She had just been struck in her heart, and her blood flow was in turmoil. With the protection and enhancement of the Storm Armor, she was able to reach the Type 4 Divine Warrior stage, surpassing White Bones, however, she was still being suppressed by it.

On the other side, Zheng Zhen had appeared in front of Yue Zhong mysteriously, his right fist covered in a grey light as he punched towards Yue Zhong.

With a thought, Yue Zhong activated his Gravity Manipulation, causing a powerful gravitational field to envelop his surroundings.

Zheng Zhen and Dao Ge were both affected by the 8-times gravitational force, their bodies sinking, and their speed reduced drastically.

A cold light flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes as he shot past Zheng Zhen.

"Fool!!"

Zheng Zhen waved his right fist and sent a fist at the speed of

sound towards Yue Zhong.

Luo Qing Qing, who was still trembling on the ground, shouted, "Careful!"

A powerful sense of danger welled up in Yue Zhong's mind, the right fist of Zheng Zhen was obviously unable to threaten him, it should not even be able to touch him.

However, his Danger Perception had saved him countless times, he twisted his body at the first instant, leaping to one side.

A grey light suddenly shot out of Zheng Zhen's right hand, brushing past Yue Zhong's chest, leaving behind a deep scar. It managed to brush past the Type 4 Mutant Beast hide, the Level 5 Defense Vest, causing Yue Zhong's bones to be seen. Had he been slower, he would have been cleaved in two.

"He dodged it? What a terrifying reactive ability!" Zheng Zhen stared at Yue Zhong with a solemn gaze. This strike of his was able to tear most other Type 4 Divine Warriors in two.

Dao Ge had appeared behind Yue Zhong silently, a sharp dagger in his hands slashing towards Yue Zhong's heart.

With the Dark Dou Qi powering his body, Yue Zhong pulled out his Flame Blade and slashed backward, accurately deflecting the dagger, before he sent out a kick at the speed of sound to slam into Dao Ge's chest, sending him flying into a wall.

After Dao Ge was sent flying away, Zheng Zhen appeared in front of Yue Zhong, punching out once more.

Yue Zhong shot forwards, bringing his Flame Blade down like a meteor.

No matter how tough a human's body was, it could not deflect the claw of a Type 4 Mutant Beast.

All of a sudden, a grey light burst out from Zheng Zhen's fist, slamming into the Flame Blade, knocking it away forcefully.

The Flame Blade was knocked away, and Zheng Zhen saw Yue Zhong abandoning it, dashing in front of him, and punching his chest. He was sent flying into another wall.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "Weak! The Pterosaur King and Tyrannosaur King of Pterosaur Mountain are truly too weak!"

Zheng Zhen and Dao Ge were both Type 4 experts, relying on their own Pterosaur Battle Armor to reach the peak of the Type 4 stage, but their combat abilities were basically trash, compared to Luo Qing Qing. Yue Zhong could easily suppress the 2 of them through combat alone.

Obviously, the two of them had reached their levels by relying on the Blood Honey. They had not gotten better through countless battles, taking one step at a time to reach the top. In the past, they had used their might to suppress the enemies, which did not count for much. When meeting an opponent of the same level, their weakness in experience was immediately obvious.

Luo Qing Qing who was still on the ground gasping for breath looked at how easily Yue Zhong had subdued the two Type 4 experts of Pterosaur mountain and was filled with shock, "Strong! So he was actually holding back when battling me earlier!"

"I'm not playing anymore! Turn into ash for me!"

After defeating the two of them, with a tap of his foot, he appeared beside Dao Ge, his right hand ablaze with Devil Flames as he grabbed his head.

At that instant, the terrifying Devil Flames entered his body, erupting forcefully from within, turning him into a flaming person.

"Ah!!! Ah!!!"

Dao Ge began screaming in misery while struggling. However, within seconds, he was turned into a pile of ash, leaving behind the grey Pterosaur Battle Armor.

An unseen life force was absorbed into Yue Zhong's body through the God and Devil Imprint.

"Strong!!"

"What a terrifying fellow!"

"Is that his true strength?"

"..."

Seeing Yue Zhong take down the 2 leaders of Pterosaur Mountain, and the Tyrannosaur King Dao Ge being incinerated in a flash, other than Luo Qing Qing, everyone else was shocked beyond words.

Especially the handsome Rokudo Bikuma, who was now pale and his body trembled. If Yue Zhong managed to succeed and saved Luo Qing Qing, his fate as a traitor would definitely be unimaginable.

Zheng Zhen's gaze shrunk, as the grey color power in him began to emit out with more force. It turned into an energy that coursed through him, enlarging his muscles, and his face contorted. He suddenly broke through the Type 5 Divine Warrior realm, and a huge force burst out with him as the center, distorting even the air around him.

# Chapter 819: Slaughtering Zheng Zhen!

---

Zheng Zhen's eyes flashed with a strange light as he tried to coax Yue Zhong once more, "Join me! As long as you join me, Luo Qing Qing, Liu Mei'er, they can all belong to you. I'll give you half the women of Storm Valley, and we can become partners to rule Green Region. How about it?"

Zheng Zhen was filled with wariness and caution towards Yue Zhong. If he could get Yue Zhong on his side by splitting the rewards instead of fighting, it would be a better outcome. With Dao Ge's death, it was not a bad thing, as now, the entire Pterosaur Mountain was his to command.

"Sorry, I'm not interested in dogs of the Dino-People."

Yue Zhong summoned his Dark Dou Qi, and his entire body was wrapped in it as he shot towards Zheng Zhen. In a breath, he had already appeared in front of him, his blade covered in Devil Flames as it swung down.

Zheng Zhen roared out in rage, as the power in him surged. He slapped out with his palm, as a sharp beam of grey light shot out towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's expression fell. He swung the Flame Blade out at the grey light, forcefully shattering it.

As the few beams of light were destroyed by Yue Zhong, he was forced back a dozen meters, his right hand numb. There were traces of blood on his chest and shoulder. In the end, he was unable to fully deal with the grey light.

Yue Zhong gazed at Zheng Zhen solemnly, "A Type 5 Divine Warrior is truly terrifying, even if it's a lousy one. The power can threaten my life!"

At the peak of Type 4 Divine Warrior, Zheng Zhen was suppressed by Yue Zhong. However, with the power of the

Pterosaur Battle Armor, he was able to push his limits to the Type 5 realm, injuring Yue Zhong with a single fist.

"Hahaha!!! Yue Zhong, since you aren't willing to be a dog, you can go to hell!!"

Zheng Zhen's eyes turned bloodshot as his muscles went taut. With a single step, his strength was enough to create a ditch in the ground. Burrowing the power of the suit, he rushed up right in front of Yue Zhong, punching out with a force that could tear a tank into shreds.

Yue Zhong tapped his foot and retreated explosively, appearing behind Zheng Yun, sending a punch towards her chest.

Zheng Yun was currently embroiled with White Bones and was not prepared for Yue Zhong's sneak attack. She could watch wide-eyed as Yue Zhong's fist slammed into her chest, the terrifying strength sending her into a wall.

White Bones' fiery demonic eyes shone, shooting in front of her, as it sent multiple bone spikes into her.

Having lost her weapons, Zheng Yun could only make use of her hands to break apart those bones spikes. However, countless more slammed into her, the force from the attacks bypassing her armor and shaking her internal organs up.

Liu Mei'er, who was still on the floor, covered in vines, pleaded, "Save me!! Burn these vines away, I can lend you a hand!!"

By this time, Liu Mei'er's strength was ebbing away by the bloodsucking vine. She was now powerless and defenseless, but it could not change the fact that she was still a Type 4 Divine Warrior.

Yue Zhong glanced at her, without any intention of caring. This woman was vicious and cunning, seeking only her own interests. If he were to save her, she might not even help him, instead, choosing to run. After all, she had an enmity with Luo Qing Qing,

and if Yue Zhong wanted to get the support of the entire Storm Valley, he would need Luo Qing Qing.

"Die! Die! Die!!"

Zheng Zhen's eyes were bloodshot and his expression savage, his entire body looking ready to burst. He was like an enraged beast, the floor beneath his feet shattering with every step he took.

In an instant, Zheng Zhen appeared in front of Yue Zhong, his face cruel, his right hand blasting towards Yue Zhong with sharp, grey beams.

The sharp grey lights caused Yue Zhong to be torn apart, dissipating into dust.

Behind the crumbling Yue Zhong, his real body appeared suddenly, his blade covered in Devil Flames slashing towards Zheng Zhen.

Zheng Zhen had celebrated inwardly when he thought he had crushed Yue Zhong. Since he had borrowed the suit to enhance his realm to the Type 5 level, while he was filled with power, in exchange, his perception and reaction had been affected due to the pain. Therefore, he had not discovered that the one he had killed was Yue Zhong's clone.

Facing Yue Zhong's sudden strike, shock filled Zheng Zhen's eyes, as he roared out in rage, the bright and sharp grey light bursting out from his body.

The radiance was too sudden, and Yue Zhong quickly reacted by enforcing the Flame Blade with Dark Dou Qi, causing the bright light to shatter.

"Strong!! A Type 5 Divine Warrior is truly a different stage compared to the Type 4 Divine Warriors!" As Yue Zhong slashed up the light, he was also forced back dozens of meters, his body riddled with new wounds.

Zheng Zhen was like a demon right now, not intending to give

Yue Zhong any space to breathe. With a flash of his body, he appeared right in front of Yue Zhong, bringing countless grey light towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had no choice but to retreat further, waving the Flame Blade in front of him as he channeled the Dark Dou Qi through his body, shattering the grey light.

Zheng Zhen's radiance was like an endless source of power, thundering down on Yue Zhong without any stop. Every single beam could cause a peak Type 4 Divine Warrior to be killed

Yue Zhong felt like a boat out on the stormy seas, being buffeted continuously with no means of counterattack, only defending as hard as he could. However, from time to time, some of the beams would manage to leave injuries on him.

"Ah!!!"

The intense battle continued for another 5 minutes when suddenly, Zheng Zhen let out a scream. The blood vessels in his body burst apart, as blood flowed everywhere, looking extremely horrifying.

Zheng Zhen's true strength had only been at the initial Type 4 realm, he had no means of maintaining the Type 5 for long. Forcefully pushing it only caused him backlash if he could not deal with his enemy in time.

Seizing that chance, Yue Zhong shot forwards, swinging his blade and decapitating Zheng Zhen in one swift motion.

In a shower of blood, Zheng Zhen's headless corpse slumped to the ground, while his life force was absorbed by Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong glanced at the corpse and thought quietly, "A Type 5 is truly strong, even someone as trashy as him was almost able to kill me. Seems like to deal with a true powerhouse, with my current strength, I will still need the Sun Armor."

Yue Zhong had continued to drag out the fight in order to test his

capabilities against a Type 5 Divine Warrior. After this battle, he had finally ascertained that the gap between him and a true Type 5 Divine Warrior was still large.

After all, most other races had physiques much stronger than humans, be it the Flesh-Eaters, Vampires, or Dino-people. They were all freaks and monsters, among similar ranks, they were able to suppress humans entirely. Yue Zhong was already pushed to his limits when dealing with a single Type 5 Zheng Zhen, against other true Type 5 Divine Warriors, it would spell death if he did not use the Sun Armor.

Luo Qing Qing watched Yue Zhong kill Zheng Zhen, and heaved a sigh of relief. At the same time, she eyed Yue Zhong warily. After all, she knew how just how vicious and merciless a leader could be to his or her enemies. She would not be naive to assume that Yue Zhong was some saint. After all, within this temple, only Liu Mei'er and she had the ability to contend with Yue Zhong. If he were to go back on his word, then the 2 beauties would be at his mercy.

Yue Zhong gazed at the half-kneeling Luo Qing Qing and spoke softly, "Luo Qing Qing, will you honor our agreement?"

A resolute look flashed past her eyes, "Of course, my words have always been worth its weight in gold!"

Yue Zhong asked, "What were you poisoned with?"

Her expression was one of being fatally poisoned, otherwise with her Type 4 Divine Warrior strength, most simple toxins would have been forced out by her.

Liu Mei'er suddenly quipped, "She's been afflicted with a myriad of toxins, it's a special concoction by me made of 7 different types of Mutant Plants. There's only me in the whole wide world that knows how to detoxify it. Yue Zhong, as long as you help me deal with this damnable bloodsucking vine, I'm willing to become your woman and help you control Storm Valley. This woman, I can gift

her to you as a toy. She's the Storm Queen after all if you can dominate her, how exciting it would be."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a strange glint and he turned to look at Luo Qing Qing in an unbridled manner, a teasing smile on his face, "Luo Qing Qing, Liu Mei'er intends to give me the whole Storm Valley. What about you?"

Luo Qing Qing met his gaze without fear, her eyes one of resolution, "I can only give you what I promised. If you want me to submit, you will only gain a dead body."

"Good!" Yue Zhong laughed lightly, coming to Liu Mei'er and speaking coldly, "Hand over the antidote."

Her heart turned cold, knowing Yue Zhong's choice. The hot look in her eyes faded away, as she turned to look at Luo Qing Qing with hatred and schadenfreude, "Luo Qing Qing, you may have won today. However, the 7-mix poison has no antidote. Even with all your abilities, you will have no way of recovering from this. You will become an ordinary person with no Strength, I want to see how you will continue to rule Storm Valley."

# Chapter 820: Subjugating Liu Mei'er!

---

Luo Qing Qing turned pale upon hearing those words, however, she recovered quickly, "Mei'er, even if I've lost my strength, it doesn't matter. Even if I can't stay as the Storm Queen of Storm Valley, I will still do my utmost for the sisters of Storm Valley."

Liu Mei'er looked Luo Qing Qing who still seemed so sure of herself, as though the loss of strength did not affect her, and her own eyes flashed with shame, and she closed her eyes, keeping quiet.

"7-mix poison eh?" Yue Zhong laughed lightly, before turning to Luo Qing Qing, "If I can help you absolve your poison, what would you do to repay me?"

Luo Qing Qing's eyes brightened a flicker of hope flashing by. To an expert, losing their strength was a nightmare. If she could gain back her strength, she was willing to pay a high price.

She fell silent before replying, "5 Type 4 Nuclei! 10 Storm Battle Armor!"

5 Type 4 Nuclei and 10 Storm Battle Armors were a huge price, as long as one enough Type 3 Divine Warrior expert, making use of the Storm Battle Armor would grant Yue Zhong 5 Type 4 warriors.

Yue Zhong responded firmly, "No! I want the Storm 8 Greats, as long as you hand them over, I will cure your poison!"

The Storm 8 Greats were the most outstanding female generals of the Storm Valley, each one of them at the peak of Type 3 Divine Warrior. On top of that, each of them had powerful unique abilities. If he could gain their wholehearted help, he could expand his faction much faster.

Yue Zhong had obtained a whole lot of treasures from the Sun Alliance treasury, but he lacked human talents. While the Storm 8 Greats could not compare with Luo Qing Qing, they were still

powerful experts. Yue Zhong naturally hoped to obtain their help.

Luo Qing Qing immediately emitted a frosty aura, as she stared coldly at Yue Zhong, "No! I refuse! I cannot send them to you just for my own benefits! They're my friends and subordinates, not some gifts to be sent away!! Even if I were to be a cripple my whole life, I will not betray my friends and subordinates!!"

Yue Zhong eyed the resolute and upright Luo Qing Qing, his eyes flashing with appreciation.

She was not just a warlord, if it had been anyone else, in order to regain their strength, they would give up anything.

"Your Majesty! What's going on!!"

Right at this moment, a lady with blonde hair and blue eyes, and an incredible body to boot came rushing in. She was wearing a green Storm Battle Armor, obviously one of the Storm 8 Greats. She was Hai Xi, and she had brought 16 other female warriors as they rushed in.

Hai Xi caught sight of the tragic scene in the temple, her heart turned cold. She wielded her Battle Spear and came in front of her, eyeing Yue Zhong dangerously.

The 16 other female warriors also raised their weapons, ready to attack.

Luo Qing Qing spoke up solemnly, "Stop, Hai Xi. This is Yue Zhong, the leader of the Vulture Valley. He's not our enemy. Liu Mei'er had colluded with Pterosaur Mountain to bring their people in to incite a rebellion. Yue Zhong had acted to foil their plans. He's our friend!"

Having seen Yue Zhong's strength, Luo Qing Qing knew clearly that unless all the Storm 8 Greats worked together, they would not be able to defeat him. Even if they could defeat him, it would be impossible to kill him. She did not want to make an enemy out of such a character.

"Since you're already safe, I'll be making my move. Don't forget our agreement."

Yue Zhong chuckled before lifting the incapacitated Liu Mei'er and heavily injured Zheng Yun with one hand while hoisting Willianna with the other, as he made his way out of the Imperial City.

Luo Qing Qing frowned at Liu Mei'er, before ordering one of the Storm Warriors, "Annie, go bring Yue Zhong to a guest room for a good rest."

"Yes!" Annie responded, before hurrying after Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong and the rest left, while Luo Qing Qing's icy gaze landed on Rokudo Bikuma.

His face was currently devoid of color, as he crawled towards Luo Qing Qing, "Your Majesty!! I... I had lost my mind!! Your Majesty, I... I was forced!! Yes!! I was forced!! Your Majesty!! It was Zheng Yun and Liu Mei'er who forced me!! They forced me!! I love you!!! Your Majesty!! I love only you!! Your Majesty!"

"This man and Yue Zhong are truly worlds apart!!"

Luo Qing Qing's eyes flashed with disgust as she ordered mercilessly, "Hai Xi, kill him! Pass my command, all of the Rokudo Family will be slaves from now on!"

"Yes!" The gallant Hai Xi dashed forward, her spear thrusting towards Rokudo Bikuma's neck, instantly decapitating him.

Seeing the head of Rokudo Bikuma soaring through the air, his expression one of shock, the few Storm Warriors beside Luo Qing Qing felt pity.

Rokudo Bikuma was good looking, and few men could compare to him. The women also liked good-looking guys, seeing such a looker being killed, they could not help but feel regret. After all, he was considered a Prince Charming in most of their fantasies.

After he was killed, the rest of the Storm Imperial City began to enforce Luo Qing Qing's orders, many of Liu Mei'er's close aids were rooted out, while the entire Rokudo Family was ruined.

"I didn't expect you to be a Type 4 Divine Warrior! That's great!! Come and show me some love!!"

The moment they entered the room, Willianna, who had been set free from her ropes, immediately pounced on Yue Zhong with desire, her body in heat, exuding an irresistible charm.

Yue Zhong looked at her and likewise felt aroused, kissing her roughly.

In the midst of their passionate kisses, both of them fell onto the huge bed, and within moments, moans of pleasure filled up the entire room.

As for Liu Mei'er, who was still wrapped by the Blood-Sucking Vines, her energy sapped, she could only look at the live show in front of her with a red face.

After the bout of passion, Willianna curled up like a little kitten in Yue Zhong's arms, revealing an expression of bliss. Her man was actually a Type 4 Divine Warrior, she felt proud of it.

Yue Zhong continued to look at Liu Mei'er quietly while he was naked. He was thinking about how to deal with this outstanding but vicious woman.

Her eyes flashed with a strange glint as she spoke up, "Yue Zhong, release me, please. I'm willing to be your woman and work for you. You have just conquered the Vulture Tribe, you'll definitely need talents. I've managed Storm Valley for many years, and have the experience. I can help you whip up the faction into shape, letting you focus on your external conquests."

Liu Mei'er knew that Yue Zhong could handle himself without being overcome by lust from the way he had treated Luo Qing Qing and herself. After all, the both of them were incredible beauties,

and most other men would have long since given in to their desires. However, Yue Zhong just insisted on the prehistoric tech as well as the Imperial City. From his request for the Storm 8 Greats, she knew he needed manpower.

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "That's right, I do need talents. You might be an outstanding supervisor. However, your ambitions are too much, I do not want to be poisoned one day suddenly without knowing it."

Liu Mei'er was indeed an outstanding lady. In terms of strength, capabilities, and looks, Willianna and her were worlds apart.

However, Yue Zhong could feel safe sleeping with Willianna, as for Liu Mei'er, he would have to be wary of her every second. Who knew if she would slice his throat in the middle of the night or feed him some poisoned tea.

Liu Mei'er fell silent, before slowly lifting her head, using a clear gaze to propose, "I do not deny that I'm ambitious. However, if you release me, I can slave for you for 30 years. After 30 years, I will leave, and you cannot stop me. Within these 30 years, I will definitely obey all your orders."

"Interesting! Fine, I promise you! However, if you dare betray me in these 30 years, don't blame me for being vicious." Yue Zhong chuckled, before going over to tear the vines away.

As the Blood-sucking Vines fell off her body, the bloody wounds could be seen. However, she gritted her teeth and struggled to stand up, revealing a pretty smile, "Thank you!"

Yue Zhong stared at her and asked, "Is the poison on Luo Qing Qing curable?"

Liu Mei'er's face turned serious as she shook her head, "At that time, I was just focused on destroying her, and did not think of leaving a way out. There's no antidote for it."

Yue Zhong then continued, "What kind of technology does the

Storm Valley possess?"

Liu Mei'er responded, "The Storm Valley's core technology lies in energy shields and converters. Using these converters, we can convert the energy from a Mutant Beast nucleus into power, turning into an energy shield that defends against enemy attacks. The entire Imperial City is relying on such technology. With enough power, the Imperial City can generate a huge energy shield, blocking any forms of attack. Even a Type 7 Divine Warrior would not be able to attack us if the energy shield is up."

# Chapter 821: Cracked Tooth Gorge!

---

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened up at those words, "Energy Shields and Converters!"

Yue Zhong had a few equipment that utilized the same concept, such as the Shield of Light from the system, and the Bronze Spiritual Bell. Both were examples.

However, with the passing of time, enemies grew stronger, and the effectiveness of the Shield of Light and Bronze Spiritual Bell diminished. Even so, they were precious defensive treasures.

If he could mass produce such equipment, the casualty rate of Yue Zhong's soldiers would be brought down a lot, increasing their combat power to a whole new level.

Yue Zhong asked curiously, "Since the Storm Valley has such advanced technology, how come I don't see your people equipping them?"

Liu Mei'er replied, "Although the Storm Valley possesses the resources and blueprints, we lack the ability to produce them. After all, there are various components required, and only Phinea of the Storm 8 Greats can produce some from Mutant Beast bones. As of now, there are only 40 such shields that could utilize the technology. Those 40 Storm Battle Shields have been brought by Phinea to guard at the Cracked Tooth Gorge, defending against the Dino-General Ku Ken!"

Yue Zhong's brows arched as he asked curiously, "Defend against the Dino-General Ku Ken? You guys can hold your own against the Dino-people?"

The Dino-people had terrifying strength, which Yue Zhong had seen for himself in Temron Prison. They could summon a dozen Type 4 Low-Grade Dino-Generals and even a single Type 5 Mid-Grade Dino-General at the snap of a finger. With such forces, Yue

Zhong could not fathom how the Storm Valley could possibly defend against them.

Liu Mei'er chuckled, "In terms of a frontal clash, of course, we aren't their match. A single mid-grade Dino-General could lead 4 of his subordinates to wipe out entire forces over at Cracked Tooth Gorge out. However, the peaks of the Gorge are truly high, each peak towering at about 3,000 meters. The cliff walls are steep and hard to climb as well. The valley is narrow and hard to traverse, only allowing a single person through. Phinea had led a thousand of Storm Valley's finest to stand guard there. Even a Mid-Grade Dino-General would find it hard to pass. Other than that, we also have an alliance with the Winged Race over there. With their help, there is no way that the dino-people can get through the Gorge."

She turned serious, "In fact, Yue Zhong, if it hadn't been for my overlooking of Zheng Zhen and Dao Ge, with just their own strength, it's impossible for them to enter Storm Valley. Even for someone as strong as you, you wouldn't be able to go against the entire Storm Valley. While every single one of the Storm 8 Greats is below you in strength, with their unique abilities, as long as all of them work together, together with the Storm Battle Armor, even a Type 5 Mid-Grade Dino-General would not be able to beat them."

Yue Zhong nodded quietly as he listened. He knew that there were many strange abilities out here. Some sick, overpowered individuals could even kill Type 4 experts when they were just Type 3. After all, combat did not rely on just the level of strength they had. There were so many factors involved.

Yue Zhong had come across his fair share of experts stronger than him. Every single one of the Storm 8 Greats was talented geniuses, having strange abilities was not something unexpected. Instead, if they did not have them, they would have been torn apart by the Dino-race long ago.

Yue Zhong suddenly asked, "Can the forces over at Cracked

Tooth Gorge defend against High-Grade Dino-Generals?"

That was an existence of the Type 6 realm, Yue Zhong did not expect the Storm Warriors to be able to fend one off just with the power of the Storm Armor alone.

Liu Mei'er laughed bitterly and shook her head, "A High-Grade Dino-General is a demon-like existence. If they were to attack, it would only take a single day for them to crush Cracked Tooth Gorge. Other than fleeing, there's nothing else we can do."

Yue Zhong's heart sank when he heard that, as expected, a Type 6 Divine Warrior was still a terrifying disaster.

Liu Mei'er continued softly, "However, there are not many in the Dino-Race that have reached that level. I think there are only about 20 or 30 of them. They are all overlords and have their own countries or territories. Unless the Dino-King commands them, they would not act easily. Because of that, our Green Region is able to exist. If they were to act, even if all of Green Region banded together, it would not amount to much."

He sighed before asking, "With Dino-General Ku Ken's strength, rate the rest of the factions."

Yue Zhong had a very bad feeling. In this world which was dominated by the Dino-Race, every single faction was a terrifying existence.

Liu Mei'er replied, "Dino-General Ku Ken is a Low-Grade one, he stands guard at Cracked Tooth Gorge, having tried a few times to invade Green Region, but failing each time, thanks to Phinea and her troops. He belongs to the Stegosaurus King's Kingdom. The Dino-people of the Stegosaurus Kingdom follows the evolution path of the Stegosaurus, each of them possessing a dangerous close-combat ability. Their bodies are usually covered in spikes formed from bones. The King, Ku Raiken is a Type 6 Divine Warrior."

Yue Zhong frowned, and asked a few more questions, before dismissing her to rest.

The Cracked Teeth Gorge was a crevasse of towering mountains and steep peaks, one of the few natural paths reaching Green Region within the Dolan Mountains, as well as the only path connecting the Stegosaurus Kingdom to Green Region.

At a particular narrow path with cliffs on either side, there was a huge wall of over 200m cast in greenrock.

There was no entrance in the wall, only a number of small bullet holes, with numerous Storm Warrior elites hidden behind, using their electromagnetic guns and battle spears to keep watch.

From time to time, a patrol troop formed out of a dozen winged people would fly one round from above the wall, checking on any potential attacks from the dino-people.

The 3,000m mountain peaks were an insurmountable wall to normal people, but to those of the dino-race, as long as they spent enough time and energy, they could traverse up the 3,000m-tall peaks. Without the Winged Race helping to scout, Cracked Tooth Gorge would have long since fallen.

A pretty lady with her long, blond hair tied up in a ponytail and wearing a Green Storm Armor came to the wall, asking one of her subordinates, "Jenny, how's it?"

Jenny swiftly replied with respect, "Lady Phinea, there's nothing out of the ordinary!"

Phinea's gaze traveled to the dark, distant horizon.

Suddenly, from the skies, there was a blaring sound of an alarm.

Phinea's face fell as she ordered loudly, "Enemy attack!! Everyone, prepare for battle!"

At the same time, a number of warriors charged into the interior parts of the wall, leaving only a few dozen Storm Warriors with

shields.

Soon, from the skies, over 300 of the Winged Race came flying towards the Gorge, their expressions one of shock and fear as they flew over. Right behind them, there were huge swarms of Blood-Sucking Bees chasing after them.

"Ah!! Help!!"

"AH!!"

"..."

A number of the weaker Winged people were slower and were immediately pounced on by the Blood-Sucking Bees. They struggled in agony for moments before turning into dried corpses, plunging to the ground.

When the rest of the Winged people saw this, they flapped their wings furiously, fleeing as fast as they could. There were only a few hundred of them, if they were caught, it would spell their doom.

When Phinea caught sight of the Blood-Sucking Bees, her eyes turned to one of shock, as she barked, "Prepare your fires!!"

The eyes of one particular pretty Storm Warrior narrowed, as her Type 3 Nucleus glowed. She opened her mouth and spat out a blazing trail of flames towards the skies, enveloping a huge patch of the bees.

As the flames licked around them, their wings were burnt off, and many of them fell towards the ground like rain.

Some of them twisted their bodies, transforming into a cloud of bugs that shot downwards.

Phinea followed up, "Winds!"

Another Storm Warrior waved her hands, sending powerful tornados up into the skies, clashing with the incoming bees. Together with the flames, both skills combined to form a powerful

fiery tornado that seemed to blow everywhere, incinerating huge numbers of the bees.

The number of bees was too many, and they came from all directions. One of the Storm Warriors immediately stepped forward and readied her huge shield.

With a light flash, the energy shot out from the shield, forming a large barrier in front of the dozens of warriors at the city wall.

However, while it could protect them, it likewise prevented the fiery tornado from blowing out.

From the holes in the wall, a number of electromagnetic beams shot out at the skies, tearing apart the bees that were in the way.

Many of the bees managed to slip into these gun holes, and soon, there were miserable screams of the countless Storm Warriors from within.

Phinea looked at the cloud of bees and her eyes flashed with anxiety, "Shit! What do we do?"

The number of bees was simply too many, under such circumstances, the threat of these bugs was even higher than a Type 5 Divine Warrior.

# Chapter 822: Mutual Destruction!

---

Out here in this pitch-black gorge, where there were bugs everywhere, a number of bright lights radiated out, as large patches of the bees were being shot down, shredded into pieces. However, at the same time, human screams filled the air.

The cloud of Blood-sucking Bees was like a calamity, swallowing everything in their path. No holes could escape their attention, as they got through the various crevices and cracks, pouncing on the Storm Warriors.

The various openings for guns turned out to be their downfall, as the bees made use of those to enter the city wall. However, while they were able to cause a widespread panic as well as some painful screams, they were unable to wipe them out quickly as the numbers flying in were still too little. It was not enough to cause a widespread pandemonium yet.

So far, 6 or 7 unfortunate Storm Warriors had been sucked dry, while the rest had been stung and were in agony, but not dead yet.

Many smart Storm Warriors made use of their belongings to stuff the holes, preventing more bees from entering.

As they were fending off the bees with all their might and will, behind the swarm of bees, a number of dino-people wielding long and sharp bone blades came marching through the narrow valley.

There was something that they had done, which caused the Blood-sucking Bees to ignore them entirely.

At the same time, borrowing the cover of the night, a number of them began to crawl up the face of the cliff, towards the city wall.

The peaks on either side of Cracked Tooth Gorge were truly exceptional and tall, impregnable to most humans. However, to these dino-people, it was not something that they could not handle.

In the past, with the alliance and help of the Winged Race, they could easily kill those Dino-people who attempted to scale the mountains. That was why they had not utilized such a method to attack last time.

Currently, due to the threat of the Blood-sucking Bees, the Winged Race people were actually fleeing, allowing the Dino-people to seize the opportunity and quickly climb.

On the wall, Phinea and the dozen Storm Warriors were being forced into a corner, as the flames continued to fire into the skies, burning many of the bees.

As the flames blazed red and the black swarms of bees clashed together, it created a furious mesh of colors.

All around Phinea, there were countless Blood-sucking Bees trying to get close, however, they were blown away by the tornados, unable to reach her.

Right at this time, a huge bone blade came swinging from the side of the wall, and with a slash, the flame-spitting Storm Warrior was decapitated.

Phinea howled in anguish when she saw it, "Sun Li!!!"

A number of bone spikes appeared from both sides of the wall, making their way towards Phinea and the rest.

3 of the Storm Warriors activated their shields, the Type 3 Nuclei on them glowing brightly, as huge energy shields were generated.

The sharp bone spikes landed on the shields, causing loud clangs, but were ultimately deflected off, while the shields trembled slightly.

Right at this moment, a figure of over 3m, wrapped in thick scales, his body full of bone plates and his claws long and sharp came over slowly. In his hands, there was a long and sharp blade made out of a tailbone. He spoke, "You are the Storm Valley's Lady Phinea? Truly capable. I have not gotten my hands on such a cute

pet before. Come be my pet, I will let you have a good life! If you don't agree, I will capture you to feed my Red Tooth!"

Seeing that savage Dino-General whose body was emitting a thick blood scent, Phinea was immediately overwhelmed by his aura. She had already utilized the Storm Battle Armor to reach the Type 4 Divine Warrior realm, yet it was not enough to dispel the oppressive feeling.

A number of Dino-Generals came leaping over the wall, wielding bone blades, standing quietly behind this leader. Their gazes were full of bloodlust as they stared at the ladies. The thick pressure and bloodlust caused them to feel suffocated.

Phinea suppressed the fear as she asked, "You're a Mid-Grade Dino-General from the Stegosaurus Kingdom?"

The Dino-General looked at Phinea with a condescending gaze as though he was staring at a dead person, "That's right! I'm Ku Hazan, a Mid-Grade Dino-General from the Stegosaurus Kingdom! Do you choose to be my pet, or to die with your people here?"

Phinea revealed a smile as she pressed a button on her Battle Spear, "I choose... mutual destruction!! Let's perish together!!"

Hong!!

At that instant, a bright light flashed out on top of the city wall, enveloping everything within its radius. The various Storm Warriors were swallowed up and blown apart in pieces, as the earthshaking shockwave traveled outwards. Under the detonation, the entire Cracked Tooth Gorge was forced wider, as rocks and boulders came tumbling down.

By the time the explosion ended, the city wall had been obliterated, leaving behind masses of broken boulders.

A large number of the dino-people on the wall and around it had also been consumed, leaving only about 20 Type 3 Dino-people who had been far away, thus, escaping the area of effect.

These 20 Dino-people began to dig into the rubble and debris right after they recovered from the shock.

"This is General Ku Hazan's tail!!"

"This is his finger!!"

"..."

The 20 of them managed to find a variety of broken limbs and body parts. They stared at them while exchanging looks.

One of them asked, "What now?"

Another quipped, "I think, we can only go back to report this to the Commander!"

The operation this time had cost all the Dino-Generals to be killed, as small fries, they had no choice but to retreat and report.

Soon the 20 Type 3 Dino-people swiftly left in the darkness.

At the moment when the huge explosion occurred, the bright light radiated through the skies, a dirge sounded through the Storm Imperial City.

Luo Qing Qing was currently handling some affairs when she heard the sounds, and her body trembled, her eyes filled with anguish, "Phinea!! You actually chose to die together with those beasts!"

The pain faded quickly, as she summoned a beauty with short, grey hair, "Anina, go delegate your troops, prepare to evacuate Green Region!!"

Anina's eyes flashed with a solemn look as she nodded, "Understood!"

After she left, Luo Qing Qing swiftly summoned Yue Zhong.

"Yue Zhong, this is the prehistoric tech that our Storm Valley has." Luo Qing Qing spoke as she shot Liu Mei'er a look, frowning. With a wave of her hands, a Storm Warrior stepped up to hand a

golden box to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong opened it up and took a look, noticing that there were indeed many resources and blueprints on the energy converters and shields. His eyes flashed with delight, before looking at Liu Mei'er.

Liu Mei'er spoke softly, "Luo Qing Qing might be overbearing, but her personality is truly trustworthy. Since she has already promised this to you, she wouldn't go back on her words."

"Yue Zhong, since you want control over the Imperial City, come with me!"

Luo Qing Qing then stood up and walked off suavely.

Yue Zhong chuckled lightly and followed after.

After passing through a number of corridors, he finally came to a control room with countless monitors, connected by various thick cables, linked to one main central computer.

The computer was supporting over hundreds of displays. However, every single monitor was black, evidently, the computer was not in use.

Luo Qing Qing pointed to it and said, "This here is the central computer of Storm Imperial City. As long as you can control this, you gain control over the entire Imperial City. However, it has already stopped working for over hundreds of years. As to how the Imperial City can stay afloat, and what the technology behind is, I am not sure myself. We can only stay here, but in order to truly control it, you will have to work it out yourself. I'm handing it to you."

Yue Zhong looked at the central computer and frowned, pulling out his handheld display, revealing Bai Yi.

He asked, "How can I activate this central computer?"

A small radar appeared and began to emit waves, scanning the

computer in front of her, as Bai Yi's eyes turned to flashes of data.

Bai Yi then pointed to one corner of it and said, "Open that small door! After that, place a Type 3 nucleus in and press this button, you should be able to kickstart it."

Luo Qing Qing looked at Bai Yi with a gaze of wonder.

Yue Zhong followed Bai Yi's instructions and opened up the small hatch, inserting a Type 3 nucleus, before pressing a button.

At that moment, following a loud whir of gears and power, a number of bulbs started to glow, as the displays all turned on.

# Chapter 823: Controlling the Storm Battleship!

---

After 20 seconds, the main display shone with a box as a metallic voice sounded, "Please enter the password!"

Luo Qing Qing watched quietly. The Storm Imperial City was a high-tech weapon, she naturally had tried to work it before. She had found the hatch to insert the nucleus before and was stuck at the password stage. She did not have it after all.

Yue Zhong pulled out a cable, intending to connect Bai Yi to the main computer, however, he discovered that both ends were incompatible, "The cables are of different ends, I can't connect you."

"There's no need. At such close proximity, the radar waves are enough! Please wait a moment!"

After that, the handheld tablet began to emit waves outwards again, as Bai Yi's eyes turned to data and numerals.

The main display of the central computer suddenly flashed, as a password was keyed in automatically. The voice message was canceled, and they were in.

"Welcome, Controller with 'S' Class access!"

A metallic voice sounded its congratulations from the central computer.

Behind, Luo Qing Qing and Liu Mei'er saw this and their eyes were wide with shock, "What! He actually managed to gain control!"

"Running self-diagnostics!"

"Currently, the Battleship only has 10% energy left, data connection damage at 23%, the power system is intact, weapon system damage at 32%, energy shield converters intact, shield

systems intact. Please insert a Type 7 nucleus to operate the Battleship!"

After a series of tests, the results were displayed for Yue Zhong to see.

Yue Zhong laughed bitterly when he saw this, "Type 7 Mutant Beast nucleus?"

Not to mention a Type 7 Mutant Beast nucleus, Yue Zhong did not even have a Type 6 one. The Type 5 Nuclei in his hands were not many, only 3, of which one had been given to Greenie. Of the other 2, 1 was fuel for the light-gold Sun Battle Armor, which left him with only 1.

There was no way for Yue Zhong to obtain a Type 7 Nucleus at this point. Those monsters were creatures that could cause disasters with just their movements.

The Type 7 Sea Snake Emperor had stirred up a storm out in the middle of the sea, causing tsunamis every few seconds. Few intelligent life forms would stay out there because each time there was a war between the overlords, the terrifying storms that ensued would consume any weaker life forms.

Yue Zhong asked, "I only have Type 4 and Type 3 Nuclei! How many would the Battleship need?"

"In order to fully exhibit the capabilities of the Battleship, it would require 1 Type 7 Nucleus, 40 Type 6 Nuclei, 800 Type 5 Nuclei, 8,000 Type 4 Nuclei, or 80,000 Type 3 Nuclei."

When he heard that terrifying figure, his scalp went numb. The battleship might be truly terrifying in terms of combat strength, but its energy consumption was likewise fearsome.

Although he had the means to hunt Type 3 Mutant Beasts, who knew how long it would take to hunt 80,000.

Even the Storm Valley with its long history would not be able to take out 80,000 Type 3 Nuclei just like that.

Luo Qing saw the list and heaved a sigh of relief. If Yue Zhong had no means of taking out so many nuclei, then the Imperial City was going to stay.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed as he asked, "The Power System! If just that, how many Type 3 Nuclei would it require?"

"If using the Power System, without the Energy Shields, it would require 5,000 Type 3 Nuclei."

"What about a single trip of about 10,000 km, how many then?"

"500. However, if using too little of them, it would not be a reusable source. After 10,000 km, the 500 Type 3 Nuclei would crumble into dust due to over-expenditure."

Yue Zhong's heart eased slightly and smiled, "That's enough!"

Yue Zhong had obtained a mountain of nuclei from the stomach of the Type 6 Mutant Beast inside the Sea of Mutant Beasts. The majority of it had been Type 3 Nuclei, with over 3,000 of them, it would be enough to support the Storm Battleship for a flight of 60km.

The only downside was that all the combat features would be locked out, and the powerful energy shields could not be utilized due to the shortage of energy.

Even so, a floating city was able to give Yue Zhong a slight sense of security in this dark and cruel world.

"Please insert the nuclei!"

An alloy door opened up in front of Yue Zhong.

With a wave of his hands, he pulled out 500 of the Type 3 Nuclei inside his storage ring and dumped them into the hatch.

Luo Qing and Liu Mei'er were truly speechless this time. Storm Valley was a huge faction with hundreds of years in history, even they would find it tough to muster 500 Type 3 nuclei at a moment's notice. Yue Zhong had simply waved them out of thin

air.

The Storm Valley's wealth and inheritance grew by dozens of Type 3 Nuclei every year, but in these hundreds of years, through the endless combat, there would likewise be consumption as well. Hence, their Type 3 Nuclei were not a lot.

In terms of resources, the faction that had the most nuclei would be the Dino-people. The Stegosaurus Kingdom alone would already have more than Yue Zhong. While Storm Valley might be a hegemon among the human factions, compared to the Dino-people, it was barely a small-size group.

Yue Zhong looked at the brightened central computer, his eyes flashing with satisfaction, before turning to speak to Luo Qing Qing, "Let's talk about our forces working together to destroy the Pterosaur Mountain."

Luo Qing Qing shook her head, "I'm afraid that'll have to wait."

Yue Zhong's gaze turned sharp, as his smile disappeared, "Why?"

After this short period of communication, Yue Zhong was sure that Luo Qing Qing would not go back on her words. For her to turn down his request, there must be some reason.

Her face turned sullen as she replied, "We just suffered a devastating attack on Cracked Tooth Gorge. Our Green Region has now lost its defense, the Stegosaurus Kingdom would definitely make use of that to invade Green Region and hunt. None of our factions can stand up against them. We have no choice but to evacuate now."

Luo Qing Qing had governed Storm Valley for a number of years and had clashed against the Stegosaurus Kingdom plenty of times. She was clear on their ability to deal with Low-grade Dino-Generals, but against the Mid-grade ones, unless she suddenly broke through to the Type 5 Divine Warrior realm, it would not mean much. Even if she relied on the Storm Armor, in a frontal

clash, she was not a match for a Mid-grade Dino-General yet.

Once the Stegosaurus Kingdom got through the Cracked Tooth Gorge, the entire Green Region would become their hunting grounds. Other than fleeing and hiding, the humans could only pray they would not be found.

Yue Zhong's heart sank when he heard this. The Dino-people were in control over a large part of this world. He was not overconfident to think that he could defend against their invasion.

Luo Qing suddenly said, "Yue Zhong, although it's a bit sudden, I hope that you'll allow our Storm Valley people to stay in the Imperial City. If we work together, we can escape from them!"

Now that the Storm Valley belonged to Yue Zhong, Luo Qing could only ask Yue Zhong for help. If they did not have this airborne castle, the hundreds of thousands of people in Storm Valley would perish out in the world filled with Mutant Beasts, prehistoric beasts, ferocious dinosaurs and Mutant Bugs. They would not even make it past a hundred kilometers if they fled on foot.

It was possible that even before the Dino-people made their move, the hundreds of thousands of people might die along the way, after all, they were at the bottom of the food chain. There were plenty of predators out there.

The Storm Valley, Pterosaur Mountain, and Sun Alliance had all built cities to gather the strength of people and their intelligence, hanging on in Green Region. Only then they could survive in this world, those factions that were chased away or banished would sooner or later perish at the hands and jaws of various beasts.

Yue Zhong looked at Luo Qing and replied, "Luo Qing Qing, you should know that my people need this Battleship as well! By being on this ship, your people will take up living space. If you want to stay, you'll have to fork out the right price!"

Luo Qing Qing gritted her teeth, "100 Type 3 Mutant Beast nuclei and a single Type 4 Nucleus!"

Yue Zhong responded, "Not enough! I want you guys to listen to my orders at the necessary time to fight the Dino-people. If you can agree to this, on top of the Mutant Beast nuclei you just promised, I can let you guys come on board."

Luo Qing Qing gritted her teeth to reply, "Alright! But, our Storm Valley would not accept suicide mission."

Yue Zhong agreed, "Sure!"

After hesitating a while, Yue Zhong retrieved a glass vial with a drop of golden blood in it, handing it to her, "This should be able to absolve you of the poison."

Luo Qing Qing took it, her heart shaking with emotions. However, she did not consume it straight away, instead, looking at Yue Zhong warily, "What do you want?"

# Chapter 824: Ambush!

---

Yue Zhong looked at Luo Qing Qing seriously, "I hope that we can be allies, and you will help us out during my fight against the Dino-people."

A Mid-Grade Dino-General had the strength of a Type 5 Divine Warrior. Their body physique also far exceeded humans, thus, boosting their combat prowess.

Even if Yue Zhong wore the light-gold Sun Armor with the Type 5 nucleus, he had no confidence of defeating a Mid-Grade Dino-General, he needed all the help he could get.

Luo Qing Qing was a genius among her fellow women. In terms of qualifications, she was even higher than Yue Zhong who had the God and Devil Imprint. Her combat prowess was strong, if Yue Zhong could gain her help, he would have the hope of fighting against Mid-Grade Dino-General.

The Stegosaurus Kingdom was preparing to invade the Green Region. Under such circumstances, if he could enlist the help of this expert, Yue Zhong would be able to survive even longer.

Yue Zhong had truly considered swallowing Storm Valley, but he quickly gave up the idea. This was because if he captured or killed Luo Qing Qing, it would not mean that the whole Storm Valley would follow him. Furthermore, due to the current situation, it was imperative to have an ally.

Luo Qing Qing was upright and stayed true to words. She was a rare heroine, if she agreed to become Yue Zhong's ally, he would gain a powerful friend and support.

Luo Qing Qing's eyes flashed with a resolute gaze, "Ok! I promise you! As long as I'm alive, and Yue Zhong you do not betray our Storm Valley, our Storm Valley will be your most trusted ally."

Hearing her promise, Yue Zhong's face revealed a satisfied smile.

On the other side, Liu Mei'er watched this with envy. She had hoped to be able to negotiate with Yue Zhong as an equal, not his subordinate.

After the matters were settled, Luo Qing Qing began to gather her people to evacuate into the Storm Battleship.

Although it was termed as a battleship, it was more like a floating city, squeezing a few hundred thousand people was not an issue.

In the past, only the upper echelons of the Storm Valley could reside within this floating city. Now, in order to flee the invasion of the Stegosaurus Kingdom, many of them began to move onto it.

As they were evacuating, a bright light shot towards the skies, as a number of dirges sounded from the Battleship.

Luo Qing Qing found Yue Zhong and spoke solemnly, "Yue Zhong, this cannot go on. The Stegosaurus Kingdom has already acted, their target our Storm Valley. Obviously, Zheng Zhen and Dao Ge had revealed our location to them. I'm afraid that before our people had finished evacuating, they would reach. I'm going to bring my troops to attack them, I'll leave things here to you!"

Luo Qing Qing had sent various units to guard the numerous paths towards the Storm Valley, that single beam of light represented one of the units being annihilated by the Stegosaurus Kingdom forces. The Storm Warriors at that location had already set off the bombs in order to deal with them.

Suicide bombers were one of the methods to deal with those powerful Dino-people. After all, the weakest dino-person would still be at least at the Type 2 Divine Warrior threshold, and the majority of their troops were already at the Type 3 realm.

Yue Zhong grinned, "I'll go with you. I want to have a good gauge of their capabilities."

While hunting the Dino-race, Yue Zhong could absorb their life force and nourish himself through the God and Devil Imprint,

further evolving himself.

Inside the Storm Valley, a large number of Storm Warriors were facilitating the evacuation, Yue Zhong's presence would not add much help.

"Many thanks! Let's go!"

Luo Qing Qing cast a deep glance at Yue Zhong. With a swish of her cape, she turned around, and under the escort of 4 of her Storm 8 Greats, 36 Storm Warriors, they made their way out.

Yue Zhong glanced at Liu Mei'er beside him and spoke mildly, "Let's go!"

"Yes!" Liu Mei'er replied and followed after him.

After they left Storm Valley, the group quickly traversed through the lush forest.

All of a sudden, another beam of light shot into the skies.

"Beasts!!"

Luo Qing Qing saw and cursed under her breath, intending to charge over.

At this moment, Yue Zhong suddenly barked out, "Wait a minute!"

Luo Qing Qing swiveled around furiously and glared with flames of anger, "Yue Zhong, if you're afraid, you can go back! Don't get in my way!!"

The various elite Storm Warriors also shot him glares.

Yue Zhong remained impassive as he replied, "That area had been overwhelmed by them already, even if we go there, there's nothing we can do. Why not set an ambush here, and take care of them once and for all?"

Luo Qing Qing's eyes regained their clarity, as she observed the surroundings. She discovered that they were at a narrow gorge,

and it was the perfect location for an ambush.

Once they sealed both ends of the gorge, they could deal with the enemies in one fell swoop.

Luo Qing Qing swiftly gave the order, "Prepare an ambush!"

With her words, the hundreds of Storm Warriors quickly got into action, laying in wait on either side.

They were all experienced warriors, once they laid in wait, they retracted their auras and disappeared into the greenery.

Yue Zhong also leaped up the gorge, finding a decent hiding spot for himself. He then prepared his Electromagnetic Gun, and retracted his aura, eyeing the valley.

Not long after, 400 Dino-Warriors from the Stegosaurus Kingdom came riding upon velociraptors, approaching their location.

They were covered in fresh blood and were emitting a thick bloodlust, evidently having just finished their slaughter earlier.

Most of them were at the Type 3 Divine Warrior state, with strong Stamina, and had no need to worry being overly exhausted. As long as the battles were not too strenuous, they could continue for a long time. Furthermore, with their velociraptor mounts, they could cover a lot of ground in a night.

The hundreds of Dino-Warriors rode quickly and noisily through the valley.

"Kill!!"

Luo Qing Qing watched as they all entered the gorge before ordering coldly.

The Storm Warriors on both sides immediately pulled out their electromagnetic guns inserted with Type 3 nuclei and began firing.

The beams shot down and tore through the Dino-Warriors who were caught unprepared, reaping dozens of lives.

"Go! Go!!"

The leading Low-Grade Dino-General barked out while holding his 3m-long saber up high, urging his Velociraptor further forward.

Hong! Hong!!

At this moment, Luo Qing Qing pushed with all her might, causing a large boulder of over dozens of tonnes to roll down the cliff, towards the leading Low-Grade Dino-General.

Facing that incoming stone, the face of the Low-Grade Dino-General also fell. His body flashed, and he leaped off his velociraptor, dashing out the gorge in a breath.

Any beast of Type 4 and below would also suffer grave injuries when faced with an incoming boulder of more than a hundred tonnes, not to mention these Low-Grade Dino-Generals.

One single boulder came rolling down, directly crushing the unfortunate velociraptor.

A number of large boulders came rolling down, flattening many of the Dino-Warriors, forming a large stone wall of over dozen meters tall, impeding their advance.

The Dino-Warriors were thus stuck, not able to proceed any further.

Many electromagnetic beams shot out, knocking the dino-warriors off their mounts, piercing through their bodies and causing blood to flow. In such a narrow space, they had no way of evading. Their screams reverberated through the air.

If a normal human army was to be caught in such an ambush, they would have been slaughtered cleanly. However, these Dino-people were fearsome, immediately thinking of ways to overcome it.

"Climb! Kill them!!" One of the dino-warriors roared in fury and

got down from his mount. He began to scale the cliff, swiftly making his way up the treacherous walls. With each grab, his claws dug into the cliff.

The Dino-Warriors began to get down from their mounts and made their way up the sides of the cliff agilely.

They were not proficient in mountain climbing, after all, hence their speed was slower as compared to ground movement. The Storm Warriors continued to rain shots on them, causing many to fall. Even so, the numbers crawling up were high.

The Low-Grade Dino-General who had been forced out of the gorge roared out and leaped his way up the gorge.

However, just as he reached up, he was immediately accosted by Storm Queen Luo Qing Qing, her Battle Spear shooting for his forehead.

With her Strength and the enhancement from the Battle Armor, as well as her innate Tornado Manipulation ability, her speed was pushed to the maximum.

The Low-Grade Dino-General had just made his way up and had to face such a powerful force. He was taken aback and brought up his own spear in an attempt to deflect it while twisting his body slightly to the other side.

Luo Qing Qing's terrifying thrust caught the shoulder of the Dino-General, and her strength burst forth, blasting it into pieces, causing him to soar through the air.

In mid-air, a single Electromagnetic Beam shot out from some corner, piercing his head, blasting it apart.

# Chapter 825: The Army Enters the Fray!

---

At that moment the Dino-General's head was blown off, a single Dino-Warrior swiftly made his way up the gorge, appearing in front of a Storm Warrior with an electromagnetic gun. He swiped out at her head, decapitating her in one blow, as fresh blood sprayed from her neck.

The dino-warriors climbed up quickly and pounced towards the Storm Warriors.

The Storm Warriors had already made their mental preparations to be fodder here as they raised their Battle Spears and charged forth to meet the dino-warriors in an all-out clash.

A single Dino-warrior would require 4 Storm Warriors in their Storm Armor to battle with a formation. If they were caught alone, then in a few breaths, they would be annihilated.

The combat strength of those Dino-warriors was truly fearsome. Earlier, the Storm Warriors held the advantage, but with the increasing number of Dino-warriors crossing the gorge, they were starting to get suppressed.

"Go to hell!"

Luo Qing Qing charged right into the battle like a war goddess, with a single thrust of her spear, a Dino-warrior's head was blasted apart. She dashed right into their midst, attacking every side as though invincible, and none of the dino-warriors seemed to be able to handle a single move.

"Long live Her Majesty!!"

"..."

The female Storm Warriors let out excited cheers, seeing their own Queen crushing their enemies like it was nothing, and their morale instantly skyrocketed. They threw all fear of death to the wind, and their combat abilities were raised to the maximum.

"She truly is powerful!"

Yue Zhong continued to fire his Electromagnetic Gun at the Dino-warriors while observing Luo Qing Qing slaughtering the enemy.

Not only was her display of strength intimidating while she culled her enemies, but everywhere she went, the morale of the Storm Warriors would soar, and the battle got even more intense. Not many men could even perform half as well as her.

Liu Mei'er, who had been standing beside Yue Zhong, bit her lips as she gazed at Luo Qing Qing with a complicated expression. She could not help but admit that on the battlefield, she could not compare to Luo Qing Qing. In terms of a life-and-death battle, Luo Qing Qing could absolutely crush her in a single move.

Although Liu Mei'er was also a Type 4 Divine Warrior, she had relied on her heaven-defying talents and some resources to raise her strength to that level. In terms of fighting and killing, she was way behind Luo Qing Qing. Therefore, while she had the strength, some peak-Type 3 Divine Warriors might be able to deal with her.

The dino-warriors were being slaughtered one by one, and although they were naturally fearless, under the overbearing and violent torrential storm that was Luo Qing Qing, many of them started to feel fear.

When the remaining dino-warriors made it up the gorge, they quickly tried to flee.

Yue Zhong killed 3 Dino-warriors, while Luo Qing Qing chased after 4 and killed them mercilessly. The remaining ones managed to flee through the forest and disappeared.

This time, the ambush could be considered a huge success that turned the tides.

Yue Zhong came to one of the cliffs, looking at the dozens of Storm Warrior corpses, his expression solemn, "These dino-warriors are truly a force to behold!"

Of the ambush party, there were Yue Zhong and Luo Qing Qing, 2 Type 4 Divine Warriors, and another 100 Storm Warriors.

Such a formidable force, together with the advantage of an ambush, had it been against any other human forces, it would have been enough to annihilate the enemy entirely. Furthermore, their own casualties would not have reached such a frightening number. However, the Dino-warriors had truly reacted in a manner that had cost them dozens of their elites.

At the same time, the strength of the Dino-warriors exceeded the strategies and tactics of how humans fought. In such a terrain, they did not seem to suffer any disadvantages, instead, it was more like a minor setback. The terrains that humans could utilize were lesser and lesser.

Luo Qing Qing came up to Yue Zhong and suggested, "We were able to kill so many Dino-warriors, paying such a price is already considered a huge victory for us. Let us scatter!"

"Fine!" Yue Zhong replied.

One of the Storm 8 Greats, Han Zi Xuan, a pretty lady with a heroic aura and an extremely attractive body, pointed to the distance and said, "Your Majesty, look!!"

Yue Zhong and Luo Qing Qing came to her side and followed her fingers to look. What they saw, was enough to send these 2 confident and self-assured experts to almost feel despair.

Far off in the distance, a cloud of dust and smoke was rising, as a huge horde of Mutant Beasts, dinosaurs and prehistoric life forms were fleeing in a huge group.

Behind them, there was a dense troop formed entirely out of dino-warriors. They were mounted on their velociraptors, charging forward with only killing intent, their battle spears culling the various beasts in front of them.

In the skies, there were over hundreds of Pterosaurs, ridden by

bow-wielding Dino-warriors.

Other than that huge army, there was a single behemoth in the middle of the troops. It was a mountain-like Type 5 Triceratops.

Seeing such a terrifying force approaching, no matter how strong Yue Zhong and Luo Qing Qing were, they could not help but feel despair.

Even without mentioning the rest, the size of the approaching army was enough to cause despair in the hearts of anyone. There were over tens of thousands of them, even the best Type 4 Divine Warrior expert would perish when facing such a force.

Also, the Type 5 Triceratops was almost an invincible existence itself already. With all the combined efforts and personnel of Storm Valley, they still would not be able to injure it at all.

As strong as Yue Zhong was, if he were to face an uninjured Type 5 Mutant Beast, he would likely be killed within seconds.

Luo Qing Qing looked at the approaching army with its intimidating aerial display as well as the inclusion of a Type 5 Mutant Beast and slowly spoke, "We can only retreat!"

In the earlier ambush of the vanguard party, Luo Qing Qing had to sacrifice a dozen of her warriors, these were elite Storm Warriors after all.

Even if they were to activate all their forces against this approaching army, it would barely cause a ripple/

No matter how strong she was, and how she could crush her individual enemies, when faced with pure military might, there was only retreat.

Yue Zhong frowned and eyed the army before he looked at the surroundings.

He suddenly asked Luo Qing Qing, "Luo Qing Qing, do you have any Type 3 Divine Warrior subordinate with Ice-related abilities?"

She pointed to the valiant Han Zi Xuan and said, "She is one."

Yue Zhong was slightly surprised as he looked at her. This warrior seemed even more heroic, even her pose and posture seemed to surpass Luo Qing Qing slightly. Yue Zhong had assumed that she was a close-combat specialist, instead of an ice-control expert.

Han Zi Xuan seemed to have felt Yue Zhong's gaze, as she turned to shoot him an icy glare.

Yue Zhong spoke, "3 days, I need 3 days' time. In this 3 days, I hope you can try your best to delay the advance of this large army."

Luo Qing Qing frowned and asked, "3 days? What're you intending?"

An icy look flashed across Yue Zhong's face, "I want to give them a harsh lesson. On the consequences of pushing us humans too far."

Luo Qing Qing stared at him for a good moment before sighing, "Alright! I'll promise you this. However, 3 days will be the max I can do. After that, the Storm Battleship has to leave!"

Yue Zhong replied, "Let me borrow Han Zi Xuan!"

"Fine!"

"See you!"

After gaining her approval, Yue Zhong immediately brought Han Zi Xuan and Liu Mei'er with him towards the distance.

One other Storm 8 Greats, Hai Xi, stepped forward and asked Luo Qing Qing, "Your Majesty, aren't you going to ask him what he's planning to do? To delay the huge army of the Stegosaurus Kingdom, we will have to pay a terrible price."

Luo Qing Qing had already seen through Yue Zhong's intentions, "I know without asking. He's intending to use the Green River to drown the Dino army by directing the water flow. It is likely that

only such a method could possibly deal a huge blow to their forces. What he needs now is most likely to freeze the entire river."

When Hai Xi heard that, her face revealed a hint of joy, "Making use of the Green River to drown those beasts, truly a good method!"

Luo Qing Qing replied softly, "While it is a good idea, there are too many variables. Powerful Mutant Beasts exist within the River, just the creation of a bank there would be tough. At the same time, to direct the water flow requires a huge undertaking of construction and work. This would be another large obstacle to overcome in employing this tactic. Hai Xi, don't get your hopes high. The probability of success is very likely small."

Luo Qing Qing had considered it before, but the various problems seemed too impossible to overcome, without the certainty of success, she had no choice but to give it up.

Hai Xi could not help but ask, "In that case, Your Majesty, why did you agree to impede the Stegosaurus Army for 3 days?"

Luo Qing Qing's eyes flashed with a wise look, "Our Storm Valley people need time to board the Storm Battleship. Furthermore, it would require 2 more days to transport the necessary resources to support these many survivors. No matter what, we have to endure another 2 might days, we might as well go out on a leg and do some more. Just treat it as repayment for Yue Zhong's allowance of our people to board the Storm Battleship."

# Chapter 826: Building a Dam!

---

As the party ran through the forest, Liu Mei'er quipped, "You're intending to use the Green River to drown the dino army?"

Yue Zhong did not intend to hide anything, "That's right!"

Liu Mei'er looked at Yue Zhong and immediately listed out the problems, "It's useless! There're too many strong Mutant Beasts within, over 200 of them residing inside! Not to mention the Type 3 Mutant Beasts. It's impossible to form a dam with just us! Even if we sacrifice ourselves to do it, how are we going to redirect the water flow?"

Han Zi Xuan did not say anything, but her eyes flashed with agreement. She too did not reckon that the tactic was going to work.

Yue Zhong suddenly said, "Han Zi Xuan, what are your thoughts?"

She replied coolly, "I'll obey Her Majesty, and listen to your commands!"

In the Storm Valley, Luo Qing Qing's words were the law, even if Han Zi Xuan did not understand it, as long as it was Luo Qing Qing's orders, she would carry it out.

"That's good enough for me! I have my ways!"

Yue Zhong replied indifferently before continuing to run towards the direction of the huge Green River.

Liu Mei'er pouted helplessly before following him.

The party of 3 were powerful experts, and managed to dispose of the low-level Mutant Beasts along the way, finally arriving in front of the huge, gushing river.

He discovered that the Green River was very different from any he had seen on Earth. The width of the river from bank to bank

was already over 100 or 200 km, as though one could not see the other side.

With just a look, he could already see many huge Type 4 Mutant Beasts frolicking and having fun in the water.

Other than these enormous beasts, a few Water-type crocodile-like creatures were also swimming within the waters. From time to time, one would observe the water Mutant Beasts engaging in slaughter, causing waves in their struggles.

Yue Zhong could not help but suck in a breath of cold air. If it wasn't for the trump card in his hands, he would have decided to give the idea up.

Mutant Beasts were hard to deal with, engaging with water-based ones in their own terrain was 10 times hard than those on land. In this Green River, there were numerous gigantic beasts, even if all the top elites of Storm Valley were to come, it would only be suicide to take on these monsters.

Liu Mei'er stood one side and eyed Yue Zhong, her look one of gloating. Although she dare not go against him on the surface, she had long since viewed this plan of his with contempt.

With a thought, Yue Zhong channeled his Summon Tamed Beast Technique, and a void appeared in mid-air, before Greenie came flying out.

Seeing the sudden appearance of the beast, Liu Mei'er and Han Zi Xuan could not help but turn pale, "What the hell is that?!"

Greenie's wingspan was already more than a hundred wingspan, its body huge and it looked like a mythical beast, exuding a powerful pressure.

At the same time, airborne Mutant Beast might not be the strongest or the sturdiest in defense, but their speed was undeniably the hardest to deal with.

Looking at Greenie, Liu Mei'er immediately turned to run.

Han Zi Xuan, on the other hand, turned pale while she ignited her Storm Armor and its Type 3 nucleus, wielding her Battle Spear to leap forward in front of Yue Zhong, shouting loudly, "Quick, run! This is a Type 4 aerial Mutant Beast, we are not its match!"

Yue Zhong looked at her appreciatively, before saying, "No need to be afraid, it's my Tamed Beast."

He took a good look at this suave and brave yet beautiful girl and felt envious. Luo Qing Qing actually had such a powerful and loyal subordinate.

While Yue Zhong had his fair share of loyal youths who would die for him, they were all hot-blooded males. A beauty like Han Zi Xuan who was also an expert in her own right was rare amongst his ranks.

As to the beautiful Liu Mei'er, to Yue Zhong, she was just a pawn to be used. In times of trouble, he would not hesitate to abandon her.

Han Zi Xuan's mouth was agape with disbelief, "Your Tamed Beast?"

This was a Type 4 Mutant Beast, an aerial one at that. They were hard to subdue, much less a Type 4 one.

The Storm Valley had their own Tamed Beasts as well, but they were mostly Type 2 and below, not comparable with Greenie.

With a powerful gust, Greenie descended from the skies, landing on the ground. Right in front of Han Zi Xuan's look of disbelief, it lowered its head towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong reached out to pat it, before saying, "I'll go and observe the river and terrain, stay guarded."

She nodded silently, before watching him soar to the skies on Greenie's back.

Her heart was filled with complicated emotions as she thought

silently, "This man truly still has so much to show, no wonder Her Majesty is willing to befriend him!"

An aerial Mutant Beast was difficult to deal with, just a Type 4 Greenie was enough to cause the whole Storm Valley to have a headache. If they went against Yue Zhong, they would have to be prepared against this mighty beast, which will wear their energy down. Any single person who dared try to take it on would definitely perish.

She had not understood why Luo Qing Qing would be so courteous to such a man, but now, she was finally convinced.

Liu Mei'er also stepped out from one side, looking up at the skies, her expression one of embarrassment.

"This is it!" Yue Zhong sat on Greenie's back, looking below. His eyes lit up as he was searching for a perfect spot for a damn, and urged Greenie down.

The location was a small tributary that flowed into Green River, it was fast flowing and less than a hundred meters in width. It was the best location to build a dam.

He got off and observed the surroundings a little, before channeling his Summon Tamed Beast technique again. This time, the gigantic Turtle came out of it.

After Yue Zhong had returned from the Sea of Mutant Beasts, he had fed his Tamed Beasts many Type 4 nuclei, causing most of them to reach the Type 4 Stage.

As Turtle crawled out, it nodded slightly at Yue Zhong, before entering the water. The moment it entered, it swung its tail and caused a huge wave, before it turned around and spat out a frosty air, immediately freezing the huge chunk of water into a block of ice.

As a Type 4 Mutant Beast with an incredible innate power, it was not long before a huge icy wall appeared, forming the rough shape

of a dam.

Yue Zhong sat on Greenie and quickly brought the 2 ladies over.

When they got off Greenie's back, Han Zi Xuan saw the ice dam that had appeared out of nowhere, her eyes full of shock, "The dam was actually done!!"

Liu Mei'er herself stared at the Type 4 Turtle with shock as well.

Yue Zhong replied, "Not yet! This is just the rough shape, the other details require you to fine-tune!"

Turtle had just created these huge blocks as per Yue Zhong's instructions, but there were plenty of areas that needed more specific and careful adjustments with Han Zi Xuan's ability. With her, Turtle could quickly create more blocks, and save its energy.

"Understood! I will adjust it now!" She nodded and flashed forwards, immediately beginning work on the huge chunk of ice.

As they were working on the dam, a Type 4 Anatosaurus was attracted and it swam over quickly.

Back on Earth, the Anatosaurus had been known to be land-based. Yet, the Type 4 ones of this world had evolved to be amphibian. In truth, after the various evolutions, many of the dinosaurs on this world were vastly different from those on Earth. The only similarities left would be their looks and names.

Most other Type 3 Mutant Beasts were fearful of Type 4 ones, hence, Turtle's aura had been enough to scare off most others. However, Type 4 Mutant Beasts were different, each of them highly territorial. Since Turtle had appeared, it was regarded to have intruded on the Type 4 Anatosauruses area. As an overlord, it would not sit and watch idly.

Yue Zhong caught sight of it swimming over and ordered, "Damn! Greenie, take care of it!"

Greenie was soaring above them, and with a flap of its wings,

countless hurricanes were generated, before it shot down like an arrow with a Mach-2 speed, its claws stretching out for the head of the Type 4 Anatosaurus.

Aerial Mutant Beasts tend to excel in speed, and while the Type 4 Anatosaurus had an advantage in strength, it was not able to react in time. In an instant, the claws of Greenie pierced through the head of the enormous beast.

Greenie then flapped its wings furiously, channeling its innate ability, causing powerful tornadoes to be generated. It forcefully tugged at the Type 4 Anatosaurus, pulling it out of the water and upwards into the sky. If it had not used its innate ability, it would definitely not have been able to lift such a heavy beast.

The life force of the Type 4 Anatosaurus was pretty strong, and although its skull had been pierced by Greenie's claws, it continued to struggle and twist, its huge tail swinging up in an attempt to slap Greenie.

# Chapter 827: The Intense Battle at the Gorge!

---

However, the struggles of the Type 4 Anatosaurus was futile. Due to its body structure, there was no way its tail could reach its head. With its short front limbs, there was no way it could claw above its head as well.

Greenie continued to use its ability to flap up high into the skies, before letting go. The gigantic Anatosaurus started to plunge down towards the ground like a cannonball, smashing into the earth and its body was destroyed.

With a forceful peck, Greenie bore into the skull of the Type 4 Anatosaurus, before gobbling up the nucleus as well as flesh inside.

The other Type 4 Mutant Beasts throughout the river saw this and sank back into the water.

The moment they submerged themselves, Greenie would be helpless against them as well. If it tried, those beasts would definitely drag it down underwater.

Yue Zhong continued to stare warily into the distance, after discovering that there were no other strange movements from the Type 4 Mutant Beasts, he heaved a sigh of relief.

On the other side, the seemingly endless army of Dino-warriors was charging without stop towards the direction of Storm Valley.

"Go to hell! Go to hell!!"

In a narrow gorge, 30 Storm Warriors were hidden within the tall grass, each wielding an electromagnetic gun. They fired shots at the passing Dino-warriors.

Blanketed by the countless beams, 2 of the dino-warriors were instantly blown full of holes.

The rest of them leaped up from their mounts, some climbing up

the cliff sides, while some others ducked behind cover.

A number of the dino-warriors weaved in and out of the fire, and in a few breaths, one managed to dash in front of a Storm Warrior, opening his huge jaws to clamp down viciously. With a loud snap, the female Storm Warrior's head was crushed in two, with blood flowing out the Dino-warrior's jaws.

"Xiao Li!! Beast!!"

Another Storm Warrior besides the unfortunate lady saw her comrade being killed, and let out a scream of anguish, whipping up her Electromagnetic Gun to aim at the Dino-warrior.

To her horror, by the time she brought up the gun, she discovered the dino-warrior in front of her.

With a single swipe, and a flash of a shadow, the head of the pretty warrior was in the claws of the dino-person. There was still an expression of shock and fear on the just-deceased Storm Warrior, her spine still connected to her head. It was a truly gruesome scene.

4 other Dino-warriors also charged into the midst of the Storm Warriors, causing screams to ring out in a manner of seconds.

Soon, the 30 Storm Warriors who had been stationed to defend this post were all wiped out, leaving only one Dino-warrior corpse whose head had been blown apart by an electromagnetic gun.

While the other one had been shot full of holes, his heart and brain had been missed, thus, relying on its regenerative abilities, in just a short matter of time, it was able to return to the battlefield.

When this outpost was destroyed, the dino-warriors continued to surge onward to the next one like a tidal wave.

Their forces were numerous, and there was no faction in Green Region that could stand in their way.

Luo Qing Qing had organized her troops to continue sniping and

firing at the Dino-warriors.

Other than leading the elite troop herself, the rest of the units had been deployed out to various areas to impede the dino-warriors, unfortunately, they were quickly obliterated.

The combat strength of these Dino-warriors was truly too powerful. Every one of them had at least a peak Type 3 Divine Warrior strength, even higher than when Yue Zhong first entered the 2nd World. Such monsters could easily become the head of a faction anywhere on Earth. And yet, here, they were just ordinary rank-and-file soldiers.

With such a fearsome army, even though the Storm Warriors were experienced hunters and warriors, there was no way they could fend them off for long.

A number of bright white lights shot to the skies in beams, displaying the last resort that most of them had taken when they failed to fight back the Dino-warriors. These Storm Warriors were not any weaker than any men, yet, when the dino army marched through, they would leave no lives behind.

When the large dino army invaded Green Region, they separated into 4 large units, 3 of them making their way towards the Sun Alliance, Pterosaur Mountain as well as Storm Valley separately, while the last one stayed to hunt any other vagabond factions.

A large swarm of Blood-sucking Bees soared through the skies, ravaging through countless human villages as well as small herds of low-level Mutant Beasts.

A unit of Dino-warriors continued to march beneath these bees, especially to kill any enemy that was able to deal with the bees.

In the forest, the Blood-sucking Bees had their natural enemies, for example, the thick-hide Mutant Titan Beetles, the Type 3 Mutant Rhinoceros Beetle, the Mutant Hummingbirds and various other life forms.

Once any of these appeared, the Dino-warriors below would act out to slaughter them.

The majority of the dino-warriors continued to spread out in various directions, some of the Type 5 experts specially deployed to deal with the tough Type 4 Mutant Beasts.

Under such circumstances, Luo Qing Qing and her subordinates fought hard for 2 whole days, managing to deal with 400 Dino-warriors.

Unfortunately, in the midst of the resistance, their scope of operations was reducing every day, before finally being forced to take a last stand at the entrance of Storm Valley.

The death of 400 dino-warriors had caused the upper levels of the dino-army to take an interest.

At a certain location in Green Region, within a large stone house, over 40 Dino-Generals from the Stegosaurus Kingdom were gathered. They all had impressive physiques and were covered in bone plates. These were Mid-grade Dino-Generals and were at the Type 5 realm.

The commander of them all barked out with a sharp light in his eyes, "In these 2 days, we lost 800 of our subordinates, first was the vanguard wave, then it was those sent to the Storm Valley. What's going on? We even lost 2 Dino-Generals!"

When the rest of the Mid-Grade Dino-Generals heard this, their faces were one of shock as well. Due to their connections with Zheng Zhen and Dao Ge, they were clear that there had only been Type 4 experts among the humans.

Any Low-grade Dino-General would be able to compare with a human Type 4 Divine Warrior, yet within 2 days, they had lost over 800 subordinates. It was an unbelievable loss.

One of the Mid-Grade Dino-General spoke, "I think we have underestimated the humans. Ku Hazan had lost his life because he

had underestimated these humans. They might be weak and can be slapped to death anytime, but their intelligence is not to be taken lightly. They know how to use traps. Because of our oversight, we did not even send a Mid-Grade Dino-General, that was why we failed to suppress them. Based on the intel that Zheng Zhen sent us, the Storm Queen Luo Qing Qing should only be at the peak of Type 4 Divine Warrior. Furthermore, with the enhancement of their Storm Armor, she could reach the Type 5 realm. Without anyone stopping her, our troops would naturally not be able to stand up to her."

The rest of the Mid-Grade Dino-Generals nodded at those words.

A Type 5 Divine Warrior was truly no joke. A person could easily wipe out hundreds of their ordinary Type 3 Divine Warriors. Without a proper general to suppress such a character, it was impossible for the Dino-army to not suffer losses.

Ku Kinken's eyes flashed dangerously and ordered, "Since this is the case, Ku Ichimine, Ku Mitsuo, go lead the 3rd Battalion, in these 2 days, I want the Storm Valley's defense destroyed!"

"Understood! For the glory of His Majesty!" The 2 appointed Mid-Grade Dino-Generals stood up and exclaimed loudly.

Riding 2 Type 3 Pterosaurs, Ku Ichimine and Ku Mitsuo quickly arrived in front of the 3rd Battalion. Not long after, they immediately launched an attack on the entrance of Storm Valley.

The warriors began to get on the long iron chains between the 2 cliffs, crawling over like ants.

The Storm Warriors had long since been prepared and began their own assault on the Dino-warriors on the chains.

One of them had the ability to manipulate the lightning and thunder. Her body glowed with the help of the Type 3 Nucleus behind her, and she grabbed onto one of the chains, allowing a bolt of electricity to flow through the chain.

In the ensuing screams, the dino-warriors began to plunge towards the bottom of the cliff.

The precipice was extremely deep, over 1300m, even with their Type 3 Divine Warrior strength, these dino-warriors would still die from such a fall.

Another Storm Warrior made use of her ability to control wind blades and fired a particularly strong one towards another metal chain.

The wind blade sliced through, causing many of the warriors to have no choice but to leap to avoid it. The moment they leaped up, they were quickly blown apart or ripped to shreds by the raging tornados between the cliffs.

Another dozen warriors on their Pterosaur mounts tried to fly over but were quickly caught in the tornados, flinging them to the bottom of the cliff, their bodies bursting apart upon impact.

# Chapter 828: The Brink of Collapse!

---

Among the elites of Storm Valley, those who had other abilities numbered little. Most of them were versed in wind-related skills. At the same time, the Storm Battle Armor helped enhance those abilities. Therefore, when those powerful wind blades slashed at the Dino-warriors, many of them would be dismembered or lifted high into the air before plunging down to their deaths.

Luo Qing Qing had not given the order to cut the iron chains precisely because she wanted to utilize them to deal with the Dino-people.

Many of them had powerful jumping abilities, and they attempted to leap over the chasm with their pure might. However, the moment they got too close to the tornado, they would be blown away and smashed to bits.

Borrowing the natural forces of the tornadoes and cliffs of the Storm Valley, within a short time of the battle, over 200 Dino-warriors had been killed without even putting up any resistance.

Ku Ichimine frowned as he watched his subordinates being slaughtered helplessly and ordered, "Suppressing fire!!"

With his order, a number of bow-wielding dino-warriors stepped out and readied their bows and arrows, firing at the opposite side.

The sharp bone arrows shot towards the other side of the cliff like shooting stars, made out of Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts. Their sharpness was unparalleled, and with the immense strength of the dino-warriors, they could easily pierce through tanks which even heavy machine guns could not.

If there were any downsides to the bone arrows, it would be that they could not be fired out as quickly as heavy machine guns.

With the rain of arrows, a number of Storm Valley warriors were nailed to the ground.

In response, the rest were forced to duck behind cover.

The other dino-warriors took the opportunity to attempt another scaling over the iron chains.

Not long after they started to crawl, the Storm Warriors again came up to the iron chains, unleashing their different abilities.

The Dino-warriors suffered another bout of casualties, with many of them dropping to the bottom of the cliff.

The Dino-warrior archers began to fire a flurry of arrows once more.

On the Storm Warriors' end, there were a few of them who could utilize the energy shield, and they raised them up, powered by the Type 3 Nuclei. A huge shield appeared, blocking the salvo of arrows.

Protected by the shields, the Storm Warriors quickly came out and launched their attacks once more.

When Ku Ichimine saw this, his expression turned dark.

The terrain of Storm Valley was too dangerous, even harder to navigate than Cracked Tooth Gorge. The natural tornados made it hard for them to traverse.

After a short moment of silence, he gave a cool order, "Build the bone bridge!!"

Many dino-warriors came to the cliff-edge, and from their bodies, a number of bone spikes exploded out as they extended towards the other side.

Over a hundred dino-people had bones bursting out of their bodies that stretched to the other side.

In a few seconds, the bone bridges were formed.

Dozens of them would hug and encircle one another, forming large bone nets.

The other dino-warriors quickly made use of this to clamor over to the other side.

With the appearance of the bone bridge, dozens of Low-Grade Dino-Generals quickly got up, leading 400 Dino-warriors over to the other side, stepping on the blood-filled bones.

At this moment, a few electromagnetic guns that had been hidden fired out continuously, blasting the bone bridges into pieces, shattering them.

Just like this, they found out that the Storm Valley had many of hidden weapons and mechanisms, powerful technology that was powered by the Mutant Beast nuclei.

However, the consumption was large, and based on the terrain of the Storm Valley, once these weapons were used, they were hard to repair and maintain. Therefore, it was under the most extreme of circumstances before these were employed. However, since it was already at such a critical juncture, they had no choice.

With the mass bone bridges being destroyed, even more dino-warriors plunged to their deaths.

One of the Low-Grade Dino-Generals was unfortunate, his movements restricted by the powerful tornado. He was then pierced by 2 electromagnetic shots, forcing him off the bone bridge and he plummeted to his death.

The battlefield was cruel, and luck played an important part. While the Low-Grade Dino-General might have strength similar to Yue Zhong or Luo Qing Qing, he still died under such circumstances.

After all, a single Low-Grade Dino-General could possibly kill Zheng Zhen or Dao Ge on his own, but who would have expected that before he had even seen the other side of the cliff, he would have died?

The remaining Low-Grade Dino-Generals managed to lead some

of their warriors successfully to the other side.

Right at this time, with a loud explosion, a number of energy bombs planted at the entrance went off, as a huge beam of light shot up to the skies.

With the explosion going off, many of the Dino-Warriors, together with some Dino-Generals were ripped to shreds.

Ku Ichimine watched this and sucked in a breath of cold air. Had it been him who had led the frontal charge, he might have been the one to be killed.

Before the dust settled, 2 Low-Grade Dino-Generals and 20 Dino-Warriors leaped out from the dust, charging into the midst of the Storm Warriors.

The 2 Low-Grade Dino-Generals were incredibly savage, dashing into the group of Storm Warriors, and quickly tore at their hearts and heads.

Their 20 subordinates were no different, acting like tigers among a flock of sheep. They had suffered earlier due to the Storm Valley's defenses, but now, with the opportunity to display their might, they quickly made short work of many Storm Warriors.

As they were unleashing carnage, Luo Qing Qing readied her Battle Spear, her entire being exuding a raging storm, as she appeared in front of one of the Low-Grade Dino-Generals in a flash, and sent a thrust into his head.

The Low-Grade Dino-General was prepared for Luo Qing Qing's attack, as it waved its right hand and sharp claws, slashing at the incoming spear.

A number of sharp wind blades exploded forth from the Battle Spear, tearing the right claw of the Dino-General up. He borrowed the recoil to leap backward.

With a tap of Luo Qing Qing's foot, she came right after him once more relentlessly. She needed to deal with him as soon as she

could.

There were plenty of experts among the Dino-army. If Luo Qing Qing was about to kill this Low-Grade Dino-General soon, there would be 3 others that could easily catch up and defeat her.

The Dino-General raised his right elbow, a sharp bone blade striking at her Battle Spear. The powerful tail of the Dino-General swung towards Luo Qing Qing in response.

If she was struck by that sharp tail, Luo Qing Qing would also be impaled by countless blades, turning into a corpse.

With a wave of her Battle Spear, Luo Qing Qing slammed the bone blade away, pulling her spear back, before thrusting out at the tail of the Dino-General. The wind blades surfaced once more, tearing the tail apart in a shower of flesh and blood.

Having been blocked, the other Low-Grade Dino-General caught up, his own elbow striking towards her face.

Luo Qing Qing had to use her Battle Spear to deflect, with the power of the wind blades, causing the Dino-General attempting to route her to be sent flying.

At this time, the other one who had been forced back slightly, dashed back into the battle to engage Luo Qing Qing.

With 2 opponents now, Luo Qing Qing would not be able to defeat them quickly.

On the other side, the 20 Dino-warriors were being surrounded by the various Storm 8 Greats and their subordinates.

Just when it seemed that the tides of the battle were in favor, a horrifying scene that caused Luo Qing Qing and her subordinates to despair, happened. Over hundreds of dino-warriors had come to the cliff's edge once more, their bodies exploding, creating large bone nets that extended through the chasm. The dino-warriors started to cross, eyeing the opposite cliff with a savage glint.

This time, Storm Valley had extinguished all means that they could use, once the Dino-warriors got over, they would definitely be defeated.

Luo Qing Qing eyed them, a sense of despair overcoming her as she prepared to shout for retreat.

Ku Ichimine eyed them with a look of excitement, roaring loudly, "Conquer Storm Valley, ransack and slaughter them for 3 days!!"

Hearing Ku Ichimine's order, the Dino-warriors became frenzied with excitement, their morale surging.

As Ku Ichimine was celebrating, a Dino-warrior ran up to him in panic and shouted, "General! Not good! Water!! There's water rushing here!!"

# Chapter 829: Huge Flood! Turn the Tides!

---

A huge flood was flowing out in all directions of Green Region, the moment they brushed past the dino-warriors, the dino-warriors were submerged and swept away.

It was like a disaster that struck, and as the waters churned towards the direction of Storm Valley, the dino-warriors caught up along the way were swept along as well.

At the same time, there were some powerful water-based Mutant Beasts that appeared and swallowed some of the dino-warriors.

Ku Ichimine quickly rode his Pterosaur and flew up in the air. With a glance, he could see the large water body inching closer towards their position, countless dino-warriors struggling under the water, before being swallowed up by Mutant Beasts.

Once the overlords of the land were submerged, they could not even best the water-based Mutant Beasts and were easily swallowed up.

He saw the incoming flood and his face fell, "Shit!! Quick!! Quick!! Everyone attack!! Get into Storm Valley!!"

If they were submerged by the water, then the entire army would perish at the jaws of those water Mutant Beasts or swept down to the chasm below. While a few might survive on their Pterosaur, the losses would be unimaginable.

With the threat of imminent death, the thousand-plus Dino warriors quickly charged to the edge of the cliff, their bodies splitting as huge bone nets stretched over towards the other side.

A large number of Dino-warriors began to get on the bone nets in a scramble to crawl over. It was the only way of survival, as what was awaiting them if they stayed was the flood.

The Storm Warriors on the other side also stepped up the ferocity of their defenses, many of them ignoring all forms of

danger to activate their abilities, destroying the bone nets and sending the dino-warriors to their deaths.

The dino-archers continued to fire their arrows at the Storm Warriors, piercing them and nailing them to the ground.

Hundreds of Storm Warriors charged out from various ambush points, destroying the bone nets as best as they could, sending the Dino-warriors to their death.

From time to time, a number of Dino-warriors would make it through successfully and began to clash with the Storm Warriors.

Both sides continued to fight it out with every fiber of their being, and there were casualties every second.

By this time, Luo Qing Qing's eyes were bloodshot from the countless slain enemies. The Storm Battle Armor helped push her strength to the Type 5 realm, and she could dispose of any Low-Grade Dino-General in a single blow. She had fended off 6 Low-Grade Dino-Generals that had just crossed. However, under the enhancement of the Storm Armor, her Stamina and Spirit consumption was high, and she could not hold on for long.

On one side, the dino-army was invading crazily, while the other consisted of the elites of the Storm Valley employing all techniques they had to defend.

In terms of strength, the Storm Warriors were not a match for the Dino-warriors, but with the help of Storm Valley's terrain, it helped balance the conditions, causing both sides to be evenly matched.

The cruel battle continued for a long while, as the flood got closer and closer. Huge troops of dino-warriors would be enveloped by the water and could not even put up a resistance.

With a powerful tidal wave, the thousands of dino-warriors who were gathered at the edge of the cliff were swept by the flood, falling to the bottom of the cliff.

In the skies, Ku Ichimine watched as the numerous dino-warriors struggled, his eyes flashing with pain as he announced bitterly, "The 3rd Battalion is over!"

Many of the other generals also wore expressions of pain and fury, they had almost made it to Storm Valley. If only they had another 3 hours, they could have invaded successfully. Even if the flood came then, they would have been safe on the other side. Falling from the feeling of heaven to the depths of hell, such a huge change was enough to make them throw up blood.

"Damn it!! Damn it!!"

Ku Ichimine roared to the skies in helplessness and fury.

"Long live!!"

"We're victorious!!"

"Long live Her Majesty!!"

"..."

On the other side, the Storm Warriors who were covered in blood saw the flood washing away the dino-warriors and immediately erupted in cheers.

These Storm Warriors knew the difficulty in fending off the naturally-stronger Dino-warriors. Even if they had the upper hand in the terrain, facing their relentless assault, they still suffered greatly. Had it been dragged on any longer, they would have surely lost.

With the flood breaking off any possible reinforcements of the dino-warriors, the majority of the dino-army had been stuck at the edge of the cliff, thus being washed away. Those that managed to cross, other than the 6 held back by Luo Qing Qing, there were only 40 others, and they were currently engaged in battle with the Storm Warriors.

However, even without their reinforcements, the 40 dino

warriors were as ferocious as ever, tearing apart a few of the Storm Warriors. Under the leadership of the Storm 8 Greats, and the combined efforts of over a hundred warriors, they managed to finally take down the 40 dino-warriors.

After killing the 40 warriors, the Storm 8 Greats continued to lead their subordinates to take down the Low-Grade Dino-Generals one by one.

With their combined efforts, the Dino-General held out for merely 10 seconds and his head was destroyed by a spear thrust from Luo Qing Qing.

The remaining Dino-Generals increased the ferocity of their attacks, killing another 40 Storm Warriors, before finally being killed by Luo Qing Qing.

"Long live Her Majesty!!"

"Her Majesty is always victorious!!"

"Her Majesty is always victorious!!"

"...."

When all the dino-warriors were dealt with, the Storm Warriors erupted in loud cheers once again. They had seen the terrifying strength of the Dino-warriors themselves, if it wasn't for Luo Qing Qing holding them at bay, they would have been annihilated.

"He actually succeeded!!" In the midst of cheers, Luo Qing Qing looked out towards the chasm, eyeing the countless corpses of dino-warriors, her eyes flashing with a look of surprise.

If it was not for this sudden flood, Storm Valley would definitely have fallen to the invasion of the Dino-army. At that time, Luo Qing Qing and her subordinates could only choose to quickly get up the Storm Battleship and abandon everything in retreat. This area of abundant resources and natural defenses would then fall into the hands of the Dino-race. Without it, the population on the Storm Battleship would not be able to survive for long.

Hai Xi looked at the remnants of the battlefield, and could not help but sigh, "He actually succeeded! What a person! How did they do it?"

Yue Zhong had actually directed such an amount of water from the Green River in these 2 days, rocking Hai Xi's beliefs. She had not thought it possible.

Luo Qing Qing nodded, her eyes flashing with curiosity as well.

The flood continued to flow unhindered throughout Green Region, causing a number of dino-warriors, Mutant Beasts and dinosaurs to be enveloped and swept along, turning the entire place into a submerged region.

In the waters, a Type 5 Diplodocus was currently swimming lazily, looking like a floating mountain. Beside it, a Type 4 Crocodile Snapping Turtle, and in the air, a mythical and enormous green bird was soaring.

On the back of the Type 5 Diplodocus, there were 2 women and a man, precisely Yue Zhong's gang.

Yue Zhong sat on top of Type 5 Mount Tai's back and looked down, discovering many of the dino-warriors struggling in the water, while water-based Mutant Beasts swam up and consumed them.

Behind Yue Zhong, Liu Mei'er and Han Zi Xuan were looking at him with complicated gazes, their hearts in turmoil. They had not expected Yue Zhong to be successful in routing the water flow.

Initially, with the ice blocks, the collected water had been little. However, with Type 5 Mount Tai's strength, Yue Zhong forcefully destroyed the natural dam of Green River, causing that heaven-calamity flood.

A Type 5 Diplodocus was truly a dangerous weapon, with the ability to destroy an entire faction. When the 2 ladies had seen Yue Zhong summoned Mount Tai out, their eyes almost fell out their

sockets.

Mount Tai continued to traverse through the submerged lands leisurely. From time to time, it would open its huge mouth to draw in a deep gulp, absorbing dozens of Dino-warriors into its mouth. With a forceful crunch, the unfortunate dino-warriors would be crushed into meat and blood.

Even Type 4 Turtle was also enjoying itself by gobbling a number of dino-warriors.

Inside the Green River, there were many ferocious Mutant Beasts, once they were unleashed out in Green Region, they immediately went for the dino-warriors. These were Type 3 Divine Warriors, their energy raw and pure. To these Mutant Beasts, they were a delicious source of nutrients, and way to evolve. Hence, the beasts aimed for the dino-warriors to consume them.

# Chapter 830: Clash of the Titans!

---

Other than those dino-people, many other land-based Mutant Beasts also became targets for the water-based Mutant Beasts.

Within the waters, one would see various Type 2 Sabertooth Tigers, Type 2 Direwolves, Type 2 Mutant Tigers and other creatures being assaulted by various Mutant Lobsters, Mutant Prawns, Mutant Crabs, even Mutant Piranhas. These overlords on land could only struggle futilely in the water, exhibiting only about 10% or 20% of their prowess. Unfortunately, they were consumed helplessly.

The entire Green Region had become some form of hunting ground, except that this time, the hunters were not the Dino-race, but the aquatic Mutant Beasts, while the prey was everything else, including humans.

Yue Zhong broke the dam of Green River to flood the dino-army, but it also caused countless humans to suffer due to the catastrophic scope of the flood.

As Yue Zhong sat atop the head of Mount Tai, he looked towards the distance coldly.

He could see the equally large Type 5 Triceratops atop the water standing firmly as well, walking slowly but steadily towards the direction of the Stegosaurus Kingdom. On it, there were the upper echelons deployed for the mission this time - 36 Type 5 Divine Warriors. Other than them, there were also hundreds of Low-Grade Dino-Generals, and over 3,000 Dino-warriors.

Just the forces crawling on this Type 5 Triceratops was enough to deal devastating damage to the Saint Clan of the Second World.

Around the Type 5 Triceratops, there were hundreds of Pterosaurs, each of them with a Low-Grade Dino-General riding on top that was keeping a wary eye on their surroundings. There were

even 2 other Type 5 Divine Warriors on their own Pterosaur.

The frame of the Type 5 Triceratops was massive, thus the flood was only able to reach its knees, but it was enough to make it hard to move smoothly.

A few Type 4 aquatic Mutant Beasts swam close to the Type 5 Triceratops, eyeing it with wild looks, but not daring to make any moves.

The might of a Type 5 Mutant Beast was too terrifying, especially such gigantic ones. While the flood was enough to affect their combat powers, it was not enough to submerge them fully, thus not causing any major life-threatening conditions.

They continued to stare at the Type 5 Triceratops while circling it constantly, seeking for an opportunity to strike.

While a Type 5 Mutant Beast had terrifying strength, the flood had diminished its combat prowess slightly, causing some of these water-based Type 4 Mutant Beasts to be bolder.

If they could consume it, these Type 4 Mutant Beasts would take a huge leap in their evolution.

Yue Zhong stared at the Type 5 Triceratops and pointed at it while ordering Mount Tai, "Go kill it!"

Type 5 Mount Tai immediately began dashing towards the Type 5 Triceratops.

The various Mutant Beasts circling the Type 5 Triceratops quickly got away, not daring to get in the conflict between 2 Type 5 behemoths.

The various Pterosaurs and their Dino-warriors quickly discovered Mount Tai's strange actions. Under the lead of their 2 Type 5 Divine Warriors, they swooped over swiftly.

The 2 Type 5 Divine Warriors had already prepared their bows at the maximum tension, in a flash, 2 sharp bone arrows shot down

towards Mount Tai, causing 2 bloody holes in its head.

Their attack was enough to break through even the new scale that Mount Tai had recently grown. At the same time, those arrows were covered with a powerful toxin, called the Gods Annihilation Poison, once injured, it would affect the recovery abilities of the Type 5 Mutant Beasts. After all, the toxin was concocted from various poison-attribute Type 5 Mutant Beasts, and it was incredibly lethal.

On the back of a Pterosaur, many Low-Grade Dino-Generals had also nocked their bows, firing sharp bone arrows towards Mount Tai.

The majority were easily deflected by the new scales on Mount Tai's body, however, some were accurate enough to pierce the wounds of Mount Tai, aggravating the injuries.

Mount Tai stared up at the skies and roared out in fury. Although it possessed immense strength and could level an entire building with ease, it could not do anything about those aerial Mutant Beasts. Its innate ability was its Strength, not wind nor ice, or other elements.

The Type 3 Pterosaurs, together with Mid-Grade Dino Generals, were a powerful combination, hunting various preys. However, they could not do anything to Type 5 Mutant Beasts with elemental attributes.

Intelligent life forms tend to be weaker in terms of strength and abilities but their gap in strength could be covered by their wits and other abilities. This was the terrifying feature of intelligent life forms.

At this time, a powerful tornado blew past, which was the effect of Greenie in the skies activating its innate ability. With the roaring winds, Greenie's speed was pushed to 2.5 Mach, even faster than the Type 4 Flame Bird.

The speedy Greenie instantly swooped down on one of the Type 3 Pterosaur that was carrying a Type 5 Divine Warrior, flapping its wings. Powerful wind blades shot out, slicing the Type 3 Pterosaur in two.

The Type 5 Divine Warrior could only fall helplessly down to the ground.

Greenie did not chase after the plunging Type 5 Divine Warrior, instead, tearing through the flock of Pterosaurs. Each time it pecked, a Type 3 Pterosaur would be killed, and the Dino-warrior on top of it would plunge together with the corpse.

After consuming a Type 5 Nucleus, although it had not yet reached the Type 5 realm, Greenie had already evolved to a stage where it was more powerful than most Type 4 Mutant Beasts. Those Type 3 Pterosaurs could not do anything to it.

In the skies, the Pterosaurs dropped like rain.

The Pterosaurs that the Type 5 Divine Warriors were riding on were easily killed by Greenie, and they plunged down from the skies.

However, the physique of the 2 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals was truly perverse, not dying even from falling from such a height.

At this moment, a huge tail over a hundred tonnes came slapping down towards the 2 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals.

The moment they plunged into the water, their movement speed was slowed to a crawl. Eyeing the incoming tail, their bodies radiated with their Radiance of Life, reaching out with their hands to try and block the blow.

Type 5 Mount Tai's tail swung down viciously, instantly destroying the Radiance of Life, slapping the 2 into minced meat. Type 4 Turtle immediately drew a deep breath, sucking in both corpses.

Had they been on normal land, Mount Tai would not be able to

do anything to them, because its speed was too slow. However, in water, they were lambs awaiting slaughter. A single slap of its tail was enough to crush the both of them. To a Type 5 human, these Type 5 Dino-Generals were tough, but compared to a Type 5 Mutant Beast, they were truly weak.

Liu Mei'er's eyes flashed with disbelief as she cried out, "Those 2 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals just died like that? For real? Did my eyes go blind?"

Han Zi Xuan continued to mutter with part-joy and part-disbelief, "It's real! It's real!! 2 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals were killed!! They're dead!!"

Those Mid-Grade Dino-Generals were Type 5 existences, even Luo Qing QIng with her Storm Armor might not be able to handle them.

And yet, 2 of them had died just like that, causing Liu Mei'er and Han Zi Xuan to be thoroughly shocked. These Type 5 existences were top figures among the Dino-race and were invincible existences.

Yue Zhong did not seem to mind their shock, as he pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun to fire at the Triceratops.

A number of beams shot out, blasting above the body of the Triceratops, killing the Dino-warriors gathered on top. At the same time, some of the shots managed to pierce the scales of the Triceratops, causing some bloody holes. However, the recovery of the Type 5 Mutant Beast was terrifying, quickly regenerating at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Yue Zhong continued to kill the Dino-warriors in an unbridled fashion while absorbing their life force through his God and Devil Imprint.

Faced with such an assault, the Type 5 Triceratops was enraged and quickly turned, stomping on the submerged ground, and

dashed towards Mount Tai.

Mount Tai also began to launch its own charge towards the Triceratops.

2 island-sized behemoths charging at each other, the tremors and motions caused the water to billow out in waves as the 2 beasts got closer to each other.

Right as they were about to get close, Mount Tai suddenly swung its massive tail, sending out a big wave as it smashed towards the head of the Triceratops viciously.

# Chapter 831: Type 5 Mount Tai's Might!

---

The huge tail of the Type 5 Diplodocus was incredibly powerful. With a single swing, the entire Type 5 Triceratops was sent tumbling backward, the intense force reverberating through its body. The dozens of Dino-warriors were all flung off, landing in the water.

In the clash of these two beasts, although there were no other behemoths, there were plenty of aquatic Mutant Beasts awaiting in the water.

The moment those dino-warriors landed in the water, these aquatic Mutant Beasts pounced forward.

In a breath, the screams of the Dino-warriors rang out. They might be the terrifying overlords of the land, but in the water, they were lambs waiting for slaughter.

As for the 36 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals who had Type 5 Divine Warrior strength, they had quickly jumped up into the sky when the two titan-sized beasts clashed, leaping towards the back of Mount Tai.

On the ground, these Mid-Grade Dino-Generals were ferocious fighters, however, if they ended up in the water, then their combat prowess would diminish, and might end up as food for the aquatic Mutant Beasts. Their only path of survival was the back of the Type 5 Diplodocus, and to kill it.

Beside Mount Tai, Type 4 Turtle had opened its mouth and activated its innate ability, sending a gust of freezing air towards all 36 Dino-Generals.

Kacha! Kacha!

When assaulted by the freezing breath, thick layers of ice started to form on the bodies of the Dino-Generals. They also started to fall towards the ground.

Hong!

The bright glow of the Radiance of Life shone from the bodies of the Mid-Grade Dino-Generals, breaking out of the ice.

However, these Dino-Generals were still in mid-air, and their speed was affected.

It was right at this moment that Mount Tai swung its tail viciously towards these Dino-Generals. In the blink of an eye, 6 Type 5 Divine Warriors were smacked into a meat paste by the sheer force, shooting towards the water.

As a Type 5 Mutant Beast, Mount Tai's attack style was simple, but with the power and force its body contained, its tail could flatten even some Type 6 Divine Warriors that had no special abilities, not to mention Type 5 Divine Warriors.

As for the rest of the Mid-Grade Dino-Generals that had been frozen due to Turtle's ability, they had become perfect targets, and Mount Tai continued to swing its tail once more, slamming into another 5 of them, blasting these seemingly invincible existences away.

These 36 Dino-Generals were recognized as the top experts of Stegosaurus Kingdom, with fearsome speed and strength, coupled with their terrifying physique and sharp bone blades. They could suppress any other similar-rank opponents, yet they lacked the ability to fly, thus, they were helpless in mid-air.

Mount Tai's body was huge, but its swinging of tail was extremely accurate. As it continued to swing it about, it would turn more of these Dino-Generals into meat paste.

"Get into the water!!" The leader of the operation, Ku Kinken roared out in rage, and using a secret technique, he plunged downwards even faster into the waters.

Once he landed in the water, his legs suddenly glowed with the white Radiance of Life, supporting himself on the surface of the

water.

The remaining Dino-Generals seemed to stir from their shock and quickly employed similar techniques. They pushed themselves to the water and supported their own standing on the water.

Making use of the Radiance of Life to support themselves on the water, this was a high-level utilization of skill and control. Only Type 5 Divine Warriors were able to do so. At the same time, since the Radiance of Life represented the usage of their stored life force, unless it was a critical situation, few would choose to do so.

Humans could step on water easily by equipping the Sun Armor and relying on the Mutant Beast nuclei. That was using equipment to help. Even Yue Zhong would not be able to do so without relying on equipment or his abilities.

The moment one Dino-General gained his footing, he quickly fled towards the distance.

Mount Tai's massive tail came swinging down viciously towards a Mid-Grade Dino-General, only to smack into nothing. The Mid-Grade Dino-General had flickered and left the area of impact within a split second.

The intense battle had lasted for only a few seconds, but in those seconds, 30 Dino-Generals had already been flattened into meat paste.

At the same time, the Type 5 Triceratops had already recovered from Mount Tai's attack. As a Type 5 Mutant Beast, it was naturally not so easy to kill it. Its ability to tank damage was also incredible.

The moment it recovered, it lowered its head, while its limbs dug into the water-filled ground, causing waves to spread out. It then charged towards Mount Tai.

Mount Tai swung its huge tail horizontally, slamming into the body of the Type 5 Triceratops.

The Triceratops shuddered, as it spat out fresh blood. However, it took the hit straight on, enduring the pain and dug its horns into the body of Mount Tai.

The moment those sharp spikes pierced Mount Tai's body, blood shot out from the wounds in powerful spurts, dyeing the water red, as various Mutant Beasts came fighting over the precious blood.

Mount Tai let out an earth-shaking roar of pain, its huge tail slamming into the Triceratops incessantly. Each time it struck, the Type 5 Triceratops would spit out more blood.

However, the Triceratops continued to withstand the pain while pushing forwards, digging its horns further into the body of Mount Tai.

The combat style of intelligent life forms would be vastly different. As for Mutant Beasts, while it was cruel and gory, it was exceedingly simple, because it was a pure contest of strength and flesh.

Mount Tai continued to roar in pain while slamming its tail continuously, both parties caught in an impasse.

The Mid-Grade Dino-General Ku Kinken saw this and his eyes flashed with gloating joy, "Good opportunity! Everyone!! Go up and kill that beast!!"

If Mount Tai did not have an enemy, in these flooded lands, Ku Kinken and the rest would definitely have to flee and hide.

However, with the Type 5 Triceratops engaging it, it was a good opportunity for these Mid-Grade Dino-Generals.

The moment he gave that order, the surviving Type 5 Dino-Generals shot out with their Radiance of Life, charging towards Mount Tai.

Yue Zhong was on the back of Turtle, and he frowned when he caught sight of those 6 Dino-Generals, "They're here! Damn

bastards, there are still 6 alive!"

Due to the intense battle between the 2 behemoths, each time they clashed, there would be a powerful shockwave, forcing Yue Zhong's party to get on Turtle's back.

Yue Zhong patted Turtle's head and ordered, "Attack!"

Type 4 Turtle immediately channeled its innate ability, opening its huge mouth to spit out a cold air towards those 6 Dino-Generals.

The innate abilities of Type 4 Mutant Beasts could be fearsome. Everywhere the frosty air touched, it would freeze, turning into large chunks of ice.

The faces of the 6 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals fell in horror as they hurried to get out of the way. One of them reacted too slow and was immediately frozen solid.

At the instant he was frozen, an electromagnetic beam shot out, slamming into the body of the Mid-Grade Dino-General.

The ice shattered, while the Dino-General spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. There was huge wound at his right chest.

The injured Dino-General shot a glare at Yue Zhong. With a tap of his foot, his Radiance of Life glowed brightly, as he fled the area. His injuries were not light, and in the waters where the conditions were disadvantageous, it would only be dangerous if he continued to battle. His experience was abundant, thus he would not choose to fight.

"Type 5 Divine Warriors are truly terrifying!" Yue Zhong stared at the fleeing Dino-General with a look of shock. Earlier, that was the combined strongest strikes of Turtle and himself, and yet, it only injured the Dino-General. Had it been on land, he would not even have the chance to shoot at the enemy.

"Kill those humans!"

Ku Kinken had finally caught sight of Yue Zhong, his gaze frosty as he ordered. He knew instinctively that if they did not deal with Yue Zhong, they would have no chance to help the Triceratops.

With Ku Kinken's order, the Dino-Generals immediately charged forth with savage glints in their eyes, making for Yue Zhong.

Liu Mei'er saw the approaching Dino-Generals and was frightened by their aura, a chill overcoming her heart as she exclaimed, "Let's flee!!!"

# Chapter 832: Intense Battle with a Mid-Grade Dino-General!

---

Liu Mei'er might be a Type 4 expert, however, her strength was in management of affairs and plotting. Combat was not her forte, and seeing the ferocious expressions of those approaching Dino-Generals, she was filled with fear.

As for Han Zi Xuan, even though she was one of Storm 8 Greats, she was also intimidated by the aura of the Dino-Generals. However, she maintained her grip on her weapon, standing steadfast by Yue Zhong's side with a pale face, intending to guard him.

In these 2 days, Yue Zhong's miraculous ability to destroy the natural dam of the Green River, while summoning Mutant Beasts that were increasingly more terrifying than the other, had already caused Han Zi Xuan to fully accept Yue Zhong's strength. Furthermore, with Luo Qing Qing's order, even if she had to die for Yue Zhong, she would not frown. That was because she was a warrior, one of the best and resolute ones, that would not lose to any men.

Yue Zhong stared at Han Zi Xuan with a tinge of regret, "If only she was my subordinate, that would be awesome!"

Han Zi Xuan was so committed to helping Yue Zhong purely because of Luo Qing Qing's orders. If Yue Zhong were to go against Storm Valley, she would point her spear back at Yue Zhong.

He threw all these distractions out of his mind, and his gaze fell on the Dino-Generals. He then patted Turtle's head gently.

Turtle opened its huge mouth, as a powerful frost spread out, enveloping the Dino-Generals.

The 5 of them were already prepared, the moment Turtle opened its mouth, they had dispersed in various directions.

Turtle's frost managed to freeze only one of the Dino-Generals.

The other 4 had seized the opportunity to wrap themselves in their own Radiance of Life, turning into 4 beams of light that shot on top of Turtle.

Yue Zhong had already donned the light-gold Sun Battle Armor, the Type 5 nucleus glowing brightly. The energy was coursing through his body, pushing him to the peak of the Type 5 realm.

The Type 4 Nuclei Sun Battle Armor would only push Yue Zhong's strength to the mid of Type 5 realm. As for the light-gold Battle Armor, it could continue to push Yue Zhong's abilities beyond the Type 5 realm, it was just that his body might not be able to handle, just like how Zheng Zhen's body started to collapse on itself.

Yue Zhong's current physique could still handle the peak of the Type 5 realm. If it had been any other human, the max was the mid-realm of Type 5.

When his strength reached that level, Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed as he activated his Gravity Manipulation, causing a powerful gravitational force to weigh down on the 4 Mid-Grade Generals.

They were caught in the sweeping force, and their movements faltered for a moment.

Immediately, Turtle opened its huge mouth to spit out countless ice picks, ice blades, ice arrows towards 2 of the Mid-Grade Dino-Generals. Under the buffeting storm of ice, even a Type 4 Divine Warrior would be torn to shreds.

Facing the sudden assault, the 2 Mid-Grade Generals wielded their bone spears and struck out at the impending rain of ice. Some of the sharp ice picks managed to pierce their body, causing them to be riddled with injuries.

With a single step, Yue Zhong's body flickered, conjuring 3 clones, each of them wielding the Sun Battle Spear as their bodies

were enveloped with Dark Dou Qi. They appeared in front of one of the Dino-Generals and thrust out.

The Mid-Grade Dino-General was in mid-air, and could not utilize any force to dodge. His eyes flashed with a fierce light, bringing his own spear to strike at Yue Zhong.

Hong!

Yue Zhong and the Mid-Grade Dino-General came to blows, causing a powerful clash and shockwave to spread out.

"Strong! These Dino-people are truly freaks!!"

Yue Zhong felt his hand turn numb from the recoil, the Battle Spear in his hand almost knocked away. His heart was thus filled with shock.

As for the Mid-Grade Dino-General, due to him being in mid-air, he had been knocked flying a few dozen meters, landing beside Turtle.

Turtle immediately opened its mouth to draw a powerful breath, causing the Dino-General to fly into its mouth. With a sickening crunch, blood flowed out of Turtle's mouth, and the Dino-General was thus consumed.

After sending one Dino-General to his doom, Yue Zhong turned around and noticed Ku Kinken already on Turtle's back.

Ku Kinken stared back at Yue Zhong, his killing intent billowing. Without any words, he immediately shot towards Yue Zhong. In a breath, he appeared in front of him, sending out a powerful thrust towards him.

Yue Zhong raised his own Battle Spear to meet the incoming strike.

A powerful force traveled from the point of contact, sending Yue Zhong's Sun Battle Spear flying away.

Ku Kinken's cold glare was fixed on Yue Zhong, his left hand

punching towards Yue Zhong's chest with a sharp bone blade.

Yue Zhong twisted his body at an unbelievable angle, however, the blade still slashed past his chest, tearing the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake hide, as well as slicing through the Level 5 Defense Vest, leaving a wound which exposed the bones.

At the moment Yue Zhong evaded the killing blow, Ku Kinken's sharp tail came swinging at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong was caught in a difficult position, unable to dodge further. His left hand opened wide, and 7 Shields of Light flashed out, blocking in front of him.

That sharp tail of Ku Kinken slammed into the energy shields, destroying them one by one at the blink of an eye. However, which each minor impediment, it bought Yue Zhong some time to breath, and he made use of the opportunity to retreat backward.

Ku Kinken lashed out in a roundhouse kick, his leg slamming into Yue Zhong's body, together with the sharp spikes at his foot. The blow connected with Yue Zhong's chest, tearing apart his stomach, while sending Yue Zhong shooting back dozens of meters, fresh blood and parts of his broken organs splattering out.

"Fuck! Fucking strong! Mid-Grade Dino-Generals are truly sick existences!!"

After receiving this single kick, Yue Zhong's chest was split open, his inner organs rattled and injured. If it was not for the insane defense of the Sun Battle Armor, he might have already been split in two.

The ferocity of a Mid-Grade Dino-General was revealed for him to see, completely suppressing Yue Zhong even when utilizing the Sun Battle Armor.

Every Mid-Grade Dino-General was a Type 5 Divine Warrior, an expert that had crawled through battles to reach where they were. It was not advisable for Yue Zhong to engage them in any form of

melee combat.

They were squashed to death in front of Mount Tai not because they were weak, but because Mount Tai itself was perverse in terms of strength as well.

Since Ku Kinken had injured Yue Zhong gravely, his eyes flashed fiercely, and his entire person charged towards Yue Zhong like a cannonball.

All of a sudden, a large hole appeared in mid-air, as 10 sharp bone spikes shot out from the void, aiming for Ku Kinken.

His eyes flashed, and he grabbed out with his right hand quickly, twisting forcefully, pulling White Bones from within, and lashing out with a kick.

With a loud crunch and countless shattered bone parts, White Bones' entire lower body was destroyed by Ku Kinken.

He then tossed casually, sending White Bones hurtling towards the water like a broken rag doll.

Ku Kinken had just incapacitated White Bones, when Yue Zhong channeled his Devil Flame, as a beam of blazing flames shot towards him.

Frowning, he could feel a sense of danger from the red-hot flames. He tapped his foot and retreated explosively, after all, the extension of the Devil Flame could not compare to the speed of such a Type 5 Divine Warrior.

Right then, a green shadow swooped down from the skies at an unbelievable speed, slashing towards Ku Kinken's body. The powerful Type 4 claws pierced his body. It was precisely Greenie, its speed raised to the maximum, exceeding even Ku Kinken's reaction time.

This injury was grievous to Ku Kinken, as he spat out a mouthful of blood. He swung his spike tail towards Greenie. At the same time, he channeled his Radiance of Light in a bright flash,

combined with the strike of his tail, causing one of Greenie's claws to break away in a shower of blood.

Greenie was weak in defense in the first place. Although its claws were sharp, they were weak as well, and could not withstand such a blow from a peak Type 5 expert.

Breaking one of the claws, Ku Kinken swung once more, breaking the other, and he tumbled to the ground, escaping from Greenie's clutches amidst heavy wounds.

# Chapter 833: Killing Ku Kinken!!

---

Having suffered such an attack from the Dino-General, Greenie also howled out in misery, flapping its wings to soar higher. One of its claws had been destroyed, even with the regenerative power of the Type 4 Mutant Beast, it would take another 1 or 2 days to recover. Meanwhile, its combat prowess was definitely affected.

Ku Kinken tumbled on the ground once before getting up immediately. At this time, Yue Zhong had already appeared in front of him with his Battle Spear, thrusting viciously.

Ku Kinken's eyes flashed dangerously, sending an elbow strike. His sharp bone elbow slammed into Yue Zhong's body, causing his body to crumble and disappear in a puff.

"Illusion!!"

Ku Kinken was shocked, right behind him, another Battle Spear shot out towards his back filled with Yue Zhong's power. At the same time, his body was weighed down by a sudden gravitational force.

Ku Kinken was also an experienced fighter, without even looking, it swung its sharp tail towards the direction Yue Zhong was at.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed fiercely as the Battle Spear was set ablaze with his Devil Flame, sending a powerful blow towards Ku Kinken's chest. The Devil Flame instantly enveloped the Dino-General.

At the same time, Yue Zhong was slammed in the chest by the sharp tail. The force, combined with the sharp spikes, were enough to tear through the Sun Battle Armor, piercing into his body. At the same time, the immense force forced him a few hundred meters away. Yue Zhong tumbled for a few rounds, spitting out a large amount of blood.

Ku Kinken was not any better off. His body was enveloped in flames, as he screamed in pain. The Radiance of Life continued to glow, blocking the burning flames.

Liu Mei'er, who had been hiding one side, saw Yue Zhong being sent flying, and her eyes flashed with fear. She turned around to run towards Turtle.

Han Zi Xuan looked at Ku Kinken and his radiance, her eyes flashing with a decisive look. Her Storm Armor glowed as the Type 3 nucleus released its power. Under the enhancement, her strength was raised to the threshold of Type 4. She readied her Battle Spear and charged right behind Ku Kinken, thrusting her spear into his heart.

"Ah!!!!"

His heart had been destroyed, the Radiance of Life around him crumbling. The Devil Flames then continued to consume his body, causing him to scream.

As he screamed, his latent combat ability lashed out, as he sent a fist towards Han Zi Xuan's chest. The terrifying strength burst out, penetrating through her Storm Battle Armor, sending her flying back dozens of meters.

"Damn it!! How can I die here!! How can I die at the hands of these ants!! I'm not willing!!!"

As he screamed, the Devil Flames on Ku Kinken's body continued to burn, as he turned into a pile of ash, while a large amount of life force went into Yue Zhong.

"Congratulations, you have gained Vitality +30, Endurance +20!"

"Congratulations on killing a Mid-Grade Dino-General, you have gained +3 skill points. Since you have completed your objective, you can also reopen the Gates to the 2nd World."

The moment the life force of the Type 5 Ku Kinken entered Yue Zhong's body, a number of notifications rang out, at the same

time, with the enhancement, Yue Zhong's Regeneration kicked in and his wounds began to heal.

The Type 5 Divine Warrior's life force was even more precious than the meat of a Type 5 Mutant Beast. With its nourishment, Yue Zhong's Regeneration could exhibit its fullest potential, his wounds healing at a visible rate.

Once he could move, Yue Zhong flashed and appeared beside Han Zi Xuan.

Currently, her chest had been blasted wide open by Ku Kinken, and one could see her destroyed organs and flesh. It was a terrifying sight, and she was not far from death. Although she was a peak-Type 3 Divine Warrior, she did not have Yue Zhong's Regeneration. To most normal people, having their chest burst open and their organs destroyed would be extremely fatal.

Han Zi Xuan's eyes were half-closed and she could not say anything. She just looked at him, a look of comfort flashing past her eyes. At least she had completed her mission as a warrior.

The life force of humans was not comparable to Dino-people. Ku Kinken was able to scream and make noise even with his heart penetrated. As for humans, once their hearts were pierced, most would die on the spot. Other than some special cases like Yue Zhong, or those who had life extension-related abilities.

Yue Zhong grabbed her pale hands and barked out, "Don't give up! With me around, you will not die!"

To those heavily injured, willpower was an important factor. If they did not have the intention to fight for their lives, then even the most miraculous medicine would not be able to drag them from away from death.

With that, Yue Zhong then pulled out the vial of the Type 9 expert's blood. He took one in his mouth and quickly bent down to kiss Han Zi Xuan on her lips, passing the drop of blood through her

throat.

A Type 9 Divine Warrior was extremely powerful, reaching the levels of god-like existences. Each of them would be mythical or legendary characters. Their blood held precious and valuable opportunities. To lower-level lifeforms, it was a sort of miracle drug.

The moment the blood entered Han Zi Xuan's body, a large life force coursed through her body, instantly repairing her broken parts, healing the various wounds and injuries. Even her eyes regained some form of spirit.

When she regained her energy, she saw Yue Zhong kissing her and her eyes flashed with embarrassment, and her face flushed.

Yue Zhong lifted his head and saw this valiant female warrior, her expression one of shyness now, and his heart could not help but skip a beat. However, he recovered quickly, and barked, "Liu Mei'er! Come over!! Take care of Han Zi Xuan! If she dies, you can forget about living also!"

Liu Mei'er heard his tone and her face changed, gritting her teeth to reply, "Yes!"

She was clear that Yue Zhong was someone who would kill without batting an eyelid. If she dared to disobey him, she might really incur his wrath. Even with her looks, it would not help her one bit.

After she was called over, Yue Zhong gently placed the brave Han Zi Xuan down, while allocating the 3 skill points to his Dark Dou Qi, reaching the +2 stage. With a tap of his foot, he charged over to Turtle.

There were still 3 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals that were not dead, if any of them were to get on Turtle's back, their party would perish.

The combat abilities of a Mid-Grade Dino-General was too terrifying. Even with his light-gold Sun Armor, he was struggling

against them.

He swiftly arrived at Turtle's head, only to see Turtle opening its jaws to fire out an icy storm at the 3 Dino-Generals.

They were still on the water, trying to dodge Turtle's attacks. At the same time, they were trying to get closer.

Turtle was extremely crafty though, as it spat out the ice picks, it would retreat slowly. Each time the 3 Dino-Generals got closer, it would then utilize its innate ability to fire out a snowstorm to retreat further.

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, as long as they had no way of getting up on Turtle, he had a chance.

All of a sudden, a large tentacle came bursting out of the water, coiling around one of the Dino-Generals, pulling him downwards in a swift motion.

Shock flashed across the face of the Dino-General, and his body burst out with his Radiance of Life. He asserted all his might, and caused his bone blade to twist, slashing the tentacle into pieces.

It was just that once the tentacle was dealt with, another tentacle came slithering up, twisting around the Dino-General and pulling him further into the water. Both parties were engaged in a never-ending tug of war.

The other 2 Dino-Generals exchanged looks, both of them feeling fear. In these waters, danger was everywhere. If they were not careful, they would be ambushed by the aquatic Mutant Beasts.

Right at this time, the humongous Type 5 Triceratops shuddered, before slumping into the water, a large amount of blood pouring out of its mouth.

Mount Tai had slammed its tail viciously, in a bid to quickly defeat the Triceratops.

At the end of the day, Mount Tai held the upper hand. While the

Triceratops was also an Overlord-class titan, if it had been on dry land, it could seriously injure Mount Tai in a charge. However, the waters caused its speed to be reduced drastically. Although it had managed to injure Mount Tai, it was not enough to damage it seriously, instead, it was injured severely.

# Chapter 834: The Dino-people Retreats!

---

Seeing the fall of their Type 5 Triceratops, the remaining 2 Dino-Generals exchanged a look and quickly fled as their bodies turned into beams of life. On such terrain, they were not a match for Type 5 Mutant Beast.

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief when he saw that. Turtle had no way to continue utilizing its innate ability. If they were not careful, as long as one of the Dino-General got on the back of Turtle, it would be a disaster for them.

Yue Zhong's gaze landed on the body of the Type 5 Triceratops, his eyes burning with desire. It was a powerful tool that could be used to break into cities. The moment it started its charge, any tanks and landmine formation would be destroyed by its pure might.

Right now, Yue Zhong had 2 Type 5 Nuclei, one was to power the light-gold Sun Armor, while another could be turned into a Type 5 Puppet Rune, meant to control Type 5 life forms.

Yue Zhong flickered forward, landing on Mount Tai's body.

Mount Tai was intelligent and seemed to sense Yue Zhong's intention. The moment Yue Zhong got on its back, it quickly opened its huge jaws to bite down viciously on the head of the Triceratops, before twisting forcefully. A huge, bloody hole was torn out, and Mount Tai's tongue reached in to gobble up the contents, including the Type 5 nucleus.

Yue Zhong stared at this speechlessly, slapping down on Mount Tai's head in anger, but could not bring himself to say anything.

All of Yue Zhong's tamed beasts would consume their enemies' nuclei to push their own evolution, while he, the master, only got their blood and flesh.

However, at the end of the day, these Mutant Beasts had used

their own strength to defeat their enemies, thus Yue Zhong could not snatch their prize as well.

After swallowing the Triceratops nucleus, Mount Tai lowered its head to begin consuming the corpse. Turtle also swam over, munching on the corpse. The meat of these Type 5 Mutant Beasts was after all powerful nutrients to other Mutant Beasts.

The other aquatic Type 4 Mutant Beasts eyed the corpse for a good while, before dispersing helplessly.

Yue Zhong pulled out his tablet and ordered Bai Yi, "I wonder how the Vulture Valley is now! Bai Yi, activate the Storm Battleship and control it to fly here. Give Luo Qing Qing an hour to prepare."

As a Super A.I, Bai Yi had already infiltrated the Central Computer of the Storm Battleship, replacing the authority of the ship.

Bai Yi replied, "Understood!"

Not long after, Bai Yi appeared on the display of the central computer back in Storm Valley, "Warning! Warning! The Battleship will be moving out after an hour, everyone, please make your preparations! Please make your preparations!"

Luo Qing Qing was in the captain room of the Battleship, when she saw the sudden appearance of Bai Yi, a complicated look appeared on her face, "He's actually still alive!"

There was a manual and automatic mode of the battleship, if the central computer was affected by some invaders for whatever reason, the manual operation would come in handy.

Of course, within the whole Storm Valley, there was no one capable enough to pilot this Battleship. However, Luo Qing Qing liked to stay in the captain's room. It was equipped with the decent communication equipment, and she could pass her orders from here.

She immediately gave her order, "Heed my command, everyone is to return to their room, prepare for take-off!!"

Hearing Luo Qing Qing's order, the people busying on the ship quickly returned to their respective places.

After an hour, the ship glowed once, spitting out a large amount of gas, its speed gradually increasing as it shot into the skies.

Vulture Valley was an elevated place in Green Region, thus, it was currently surrounded by the flood, and the people trapped within the valley, but otherwise fine.

Han Qiong had led a dozen soldiers to the edge of the valley, eyeing the flood below that seemed to have no end, her brows furrowed.

She suddenly asked Ma Lei, "What's the situation inside?"

Ma Lei responded seriously, "It's still considered somewhat stable. Previously, after Leader executed those rebels, I think no one dares to act up now. However, it is likely temporary. Once there is an issue with the ration, things might fall apart."

At this time, the 4 heads of Vulture Valley were Han Qiong, Sun Lan Lan, Shao Yun and Ma Lei. Although Ma Lei was slightly unhappy that Han Qiong was above him in position, seeing the Type 4 Divine Warrior Bolius guarding her, he knew that Han Qiong was more important than him to Yue Zhong. Thus, he could only obediently be her assistant.

Han Qiong considered it all quietly. When Yue Zhong had left and she was left in charge, she finally realized how difficult it was to become a proper leader in this cruel world.

Suddenly, the surface of the lake water churned, and a dozen 20m-long Mutant Water Snakes broke through, crawling up the city wall.

30 Type 2 Divine Warriors rushed up the city wall, wearing their Sun Battle Armor. They wielded powerful bone bows and nocked

their arrows. Within seconds, the sharp bone arrows show towards the dozens of Mutant Water Snakes.

The bone arrows were filled with power, piercing the heads of the Mutant Water Snakes. However, their life force was strong, even after being buffeted by a number of arrows, they did not die. Instead, they charged forwards with renewed fury.

The 30 warriors had to fire another three volleys to take down 2 Mutant Water Snakes. Although their strength had been pushed to the Type 3 stage, their accuracy was poor, missing the vital spots of the Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong had conquered a number of tribes, and after cleansing those traitors during the uprising, the total number of elites left in his troops were little. There were only about 30 Type 2 Divine Warriors. Even after the enhancement of the Battle Armor, there was still some weakness.

Eyeing the incoming horde of Mutant Water Snakes, a lot of people lost their composure, as fear started to cloud their mind. If the Mutant Beasts were to break through, it would be a disaster.

At this time, Bolius waved his large beast bones and leaped down the city wall. The moment he landed, he appeared right on top of a Mutant Water Snake, smashing down viciously, causing the entire head to cave in.

He continued to weave in and out of the horde, the beast bones in his hand smashing out from time to time, directly killing Mutant Water Snakes with every hit.

Soon, beneath the walls, there was a large pile of snake corpses.

After he was done, Bolius flashed back up the city wall, standing quietly behind Han Qiong.

Seeing how he had casually taken care of the horde, everyone heaved a sigh of relief, their gazes towards him filled with respect and admiration.

At this moment, the waters at a distance started to churn, and a huge Type 4 Mutant Water Snake broke out of the surface of the water.

Beside the Type 4 Mutant Snake, countless Type 3 and Type 2 Mutant Water Snakes formed a disgustingly massive horde as they swarmed over.

When the people on the wall saw the sudden appearance of these snakes, their eyes were all filled with shock. If these snakes broke through the wall, the people within the city walls were sure to perish.

Bolius took one look and barked coldly, "Miss Han Qiong, please make preparations to leave with Miss Sun Lan Lan. I will protect the two of you in your retreat."

Hearing his words, everyone's expression turned pale, their morale almost collapsing. Even Ma Lei and Shao Yun were no exception.

Han Qiong's expression sunk as she rebuked in a righteous manner, "Mr. Bolius, there are over hundreds of thousands of people in this valley, you're actually thinking of fleeing without fighting, aren't you ashamed?"

Bolius replied coldly, "There's only so much I can do. The strongest Mutant Beast is likely a Type 4 Mutant Beast based on my conjectures. With my abilities, there's only a 5% chance of winning it. However, there are so many other beasts aiding it, thus my success rate has been reduced to 0%. The task that Master Yue Zhong had delegated to me was to keep you and Miss Sun Lan Lan safe. I can sacrifice myself to protect you, but the life and death of everyone else are not within my consideration. If orders are to be changed, it has to be done by Master Yue Zhong."

After Bolius had been subdued by the Puppet Rune, he had become a tool that only knew how to listen to orders. He would not listen to anyone else.

Ma Lei took a long deep breath, "Forget it! Han Qiong, you and Sun Lan Lan better prepare to leave! You guys have done your best!"

Although he was not willing, he had no way of overpowering Bolius, thus he could only comply.

Han Qiong gritted her teeth and exclaimed, "I won't leave! I will live and die together with Vulture Valley!! Like this, Bolius, you will have to stay and defend as well! Because your mission is to protect me right? If I die, you will fail our mission as well!"

# Chapter 835: Eradicating the Type 4 Mutant Water Snake!

---

"Then you'll have to excuse my rudeness!" Bolius replied with an impassive look, before he suddenly dashed behind Han Qiong, and knocked her out with a single strike. He then placed her on his shoulders, before leaping deep into the valley.

Ma Lei turned to Shao Yun and asked, "Aren't you leaving?"

Shao Yun laughed bitterly, "Now that the entire valley is surrounded by the damn water, other than that freak Bolius, no one else can leave, why not risk it and fight it out? Dying on the battlefield is an honor to us warriors."

Ma Lei turned to the soldiers on the city wall and barked, "Well said! Brothers! Since we have no way to retreat, this is our final home, if we don't protect it, who will? Let's fight to the death!!"

"Fight to the death!!"

"Fight to the death!!"

"..."

The soldiers had felt low in spirits when Bolius left, but under the motivation of Ma Lei and Shao Yun, they were rejuvenated. Although they were facing a huge beast, their fear so powerful that their legs were shaky, they were still standing there, eyeing the distance.

Ma Lei looked into the distance at the incoming Mutant Snake horde, and sighed, "If only Leader Yue Zhong was here!! He would definitely have a way to deal with this."

The moment he spoke about Yue Zhong, Shao Yun's eyes flashed with a complicated gaze, "If it's him, he definitely would have a way. It's just that after he brought that Type 5 Diplodocus to destroy the Sun Alliance, there had been no news. Who knows if

he's dead or alive."

Shao Yun had followed Yue Zhong in a bid to broaden his horizons and step on a bigger stage. He had seen for himself how Yue Zhong had created miracles after miracles. He knew that he was far from his match, and the jealousy towards him had long since disappeared, leaving only utmost respect.

Before everybody's eyes, the horde of snakes was getting closer, and the fear in everyone's heart was rising. The city wall that had fended off so many other Mutant Beasts was nothing to these snakes.

"Look at the sky!!"

Just then, a warrior suddenly pointed to the skies and exclaimed.

Everyone immediately looked up, only to see a floating fortress flying towards them. The gigantic floating city was enough to cover part of the sunlight, therefore almost blocking part of the sky.

Ma Lei looked up and could not help sucking in a cold breath, "That's a floating city!!"

Shao Yun took a look at the Storm Battleship and conjectured, "There's actually such a city?! What in the world could it be? Are there gods residing within?"

"May the gods protect us!!"

"May the gods protect us!!"

"May the gods protect us and lead us through this!!"

"..."

The soldiers began to get on their knees, praying and kowtowing to the ship.

The physique of the human warriors on this world was much stronger than those on Earth. However, most of them had never received any education before. Many did not know how to perform

simple maths and were quite simple in intelligence. Hence, when they saw something they did not understand, they would attribute it to the higher powers.

As they prayed, a figure clad in light-gold suddenly descended down from the skies, turning into a beam of light that landed directly on the head of the Type 4 Mutant Water Snake.

The person was precisely Yue Zhong, he had made use of the Sun Battle Armor to push his strength to the peak of Type 5 realm. When he descended suddenly, the Battle Spear in his hands penetrated the head of the Type 4 Mutant Water Snake.

As the spear went through, a powerful force erupted, blowing a large hole in the head of the snake. The Type 5 force coupled with the sharp Battle Spear was enough to tear through even the armor of a Type 5 Beast, not to mention this Type 4 Mutant Water Snake.

Yue Zhong immediately burrowed through the fleshy wound, wielding his Battle Spear to tear the Type 4 Mutant Water Snake from within.

The mighty beast roared out in pain and rage, thrashing where it was, causing large waves to spread everywhere.

A number of Mutant Water Snakes of the basic and Type 2 realm were caught in the struggles of their overlord and were flattened into meat paste.

The rest of the horde quickly dodged to one side, eyeing their king with wide eyes.

This Type 4 Mutant Water Snake was their overlord, and since it did not move, they lost their command and were thrown into confusion as well.

After a few seconds, Yue Zhong emerged from the head of the Type 4 Mutant Water Snake, his hands holding a bright Type 4 nucleus.

The Type 4 Mutant Water Snake twitched slightly and slumped

into the water.

With its death, the dozens of Type 3 Mutant Water Snakes instantly surrounded Yue Zhong. They could sense danger from this man, and they ignited their innate abilities, firing black venom at him.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, and with a flash, he dashed across the surface of the water as though it was flat land, evading all the toxic spit.

When the black venom landed in the water, many of the lower-level Mutant Beasts were immediately poisoned to death, causing their bodies to float up.

Yue Zhong continued to leap from head to head, using his Battle Spear to thrust through their brains. He would then retrieve the nuclei before jumping to another.

With his enhanced Type 5 strength, he was practically invincible, flickering among the bodies of the Type 3 Mutant Water Snakes. In just a few breaths, all of them were killed by him, and he gained many nuclei as a result.

Right at this time, Greenie flapped its wings and shot down to the surface of the lake, biting down on a Type 2 Mutant Water Snake and lifted it towards the skies.

Greenie's species, the Green-feathered Eagle was a natural predator of the Mutant Water Snake. When it was at a Type 2 Stage, it was already threatening to those Type 3 Mutant Water Snakes. Many of them felt the threat from above and quickly sought to flee.

In a few breaths, the huge horde of snakes was gone, leaving behind only the peaceful lake.

Seeing this, everyone on the city wall heaved a sigh of relief.

Yue Zhong watched the horde of Mutant Snakes disperse, then quickly heading back to the city wall, jumping on top in a few

flashes.

The moment Ma Lei saw him, he got down on a single knee emotionally, "Leader!! It's you!! That's great!! We greet Leader!!"

"Long live Leader!!"

"We greet Leader!!"

"...."

The 200 soldiers erupted in cheers and excitement as they got down on a single knee and performed a respectful greeting.

Had Yue Zhong not appeared, the entire Vulture Valley would have fallen to those Mutant Water Snakes.

Seeing how Yue Zhong went to take on the mythical-like Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake by himself, as well as killing so many Type 3 Mutant Snakes and causing the rest to flee from terror, there was a blind idolizing in the hearts of the soldiers now.

Yue Zhong looked at these 200 soldiers and felt pleased, "You all could step forth even in times of danger, good! You're all men!!"

He was pleased that he had such warriors who did not fear death for the sake of protecting their own homeland, those who did not give up even in the face of despair. He deeply appreciated such warriors.

"Thank you for your praise, Leader!!"

"...."

Hearing his words, all the soldiers felt a wave of emotions. They venerated him, and at this moment where their feelings were the highest, such praise from their leader would cause them to be even more moved.

He looked at all of them before frowning slightly in disappointment, "Where's Han Qiong? How come she isn't with you? Did she flee?"

She was someone Yue Zhong had grown to favor, possessing a resolute yet kind heart. In times of such danger, it was not strange that a lady might choose to flee. However, Yue Zhong had harbored hopes for her, and since he did not see her, he was naturally disappointed.

Ma Lei stepped forward to reveal the truth, "That's not true, Leader! She did not run. It was Bolius who knocked her out for her own safety and brought her away. Han Qiong wanted to fight till the end together with us."

Yue Zhong pointed to the descending Storm Battleship and said, "Ma Lei, go get Sun Lan Lan and convey my orders, everyone in the valley is to prepare to move to that city. From now on, that's our home."

"What!! That's our city?!!"

"For real?! That's our city!!"

"Amazing!!"

"..."

The soldiers took a look at the floating city and their eyes flashed with delight and excitement. They could not help feeling that way knowing that they were about to reside in a powerful-looking floating fortress.

Ma Lei was naturally no exception as he replied excitedly, "Yes! Leader!!"

# Chapter 836: Cloud Region!

---

Everyone was in a state of panic in Vulture Valley, but news of Yue Zhong's return caused them all to be relieved.

A huge crowd of them were assigned in batches by the government to board the Storm Battleship, their hearts filled with excitement.

"This place is beautiful!!"

"Is this our new home?"

"..."

Upon stepping on the Storm Battleship, everyone was taken aback, as they took in the sights with wonder and amazement.

The Storm Battleship used to be the Imperial City of the Storm Valley after all, thus, many buildings were constructed with lavish and luxurious looks. The street layouts were extremely orderly and clean, a huge difference compared to the Vulture Valley.

With the help of the different personnel, the entire population of Vulture Valley was settled on the Storm Battleship.

Inside the cockpit, around a huge oval-shaped table, the upper echelons of Storm Valley and Vulture Valley had gathered.

Vulture Valley had more male officials, with only Han Qiong and Sun Lan Lan the female exceptions. As for Storm Valley, they were all women, and beautiful ones at that, with Luo Qing Qing and the Storm 8 Greats taking the helm.

The Storm 8 Greats was an honorable title for those in the Storm Valley. Other than the Queen and Princess, they were the next most outstanding personnel.

Although 2 had perished in the coup de grâce and war with the Dino-warriors, 2 other outstanding ladies quickly filled up the position. They were also as beautiful and had a strength of peak

### Type 3 Divine Warrior.

Yue Zhong's subordinates looked over at the ladies from Storm Valley, each of their eyes filled with a heated gaze and expectant look. These women were all beautiful and had attractive charms, the men were naturally drawn in.

"Beautiful! They have such a demeanor as well!" Han Qiong and Sun Lan Lan stared at the ladies, their eyes also filled with envy. They had never seen such beauties in their lives before.

The Storm Warriors looked over at Yue Zhong's subordinates, their gazes filled with disdain. They knew that they were outstanding and were proud of it. As for Yue Zhong's men, none of them had reached the Type 3 Divine Warrior stage, and in this world where the strong ruled the weak, and power was everything, they naturally looked down on them.

Yue Zhong asked Luo Qing Qing solemnly, "Today, we're gathered here to discuss our next move, and where to go. Luo Qing Qing, what plans does your Storm Valley have?"

The Storm Battleship could not remain flying all the time, the energy consumption was an atrocious figure. The land was where humans belonged, and even though Yue Zhong was still unclear about this world, he needed a place to set his foot and establish his faction.

Luo Qing Qing shot Yue Zhong a strange look, "Green Region is no longer suitable for us to reside in. Based on what I know, the Stegosaurus only has 4 Battalions. Since one had been destroyed, they would definitely come for us!"

Everyone from the Storm Valley also looked to Yue Zhong with strange gazes. They had heard from Han Zi Xuan's mouth, that this man in front of them had destroyed the natural dam of Green River, causing a flood to pour into the entire Green region, and he managed to defeat the seemingly-invincible Dino-army. At the same time, he was capable of summoning multiple Mutant Beasts,

including a Type 5 one.

Just based on the strength of his tamed beasts which surpassed that of Storm Valley, they could not help but be interested.

Luo Qing Qing continued, "Even if they're impeded by the water now, with their strength, if they're resolute enough, the Green Region will still end up in their hands. However, because of the flood, it would take the Stegosaurus King about 3 to 5 years to gain full control. Within this period of time, the Stegosaurus Army would definitely not step foot into Green Region. They would still send Mid-Grade Dino-Generals to hunt us, after all, we destroyed their battalion. To them, it is a huge disgrace. Furthermore, the Mid-Grade Dino-Generals are too strong, we aren't their match. The only thing we can do now is to evacuate and expand in Cloud Region."

Yue Zhong nodded slightly, he had experienced for himself the terror of a Mid-Grade Dino-General. It was not something he could handle right now. Previously, he had relied on the terrain and his Mutant Beasts' abilities, to obtain a victory.

If they were sent as assassins, then before Yue Zhong could even have time to summon Mount Tai, he would be killed instantly.

In order to defeat just one part of their forces, Yue Zhong had been forced to reveal many of his trump cards. Those intelligent Dino-people would definitely think of ways to deal with him.

The next time, he might have to face an entire squad of well-prepared Mid-Grade Dino-Generals.

Mount Tai might have monstrous strength, but its weakness was very obvious. It had only a single style of attack, its range within a few hundred meters. There was no innate ability, and its movement speed was slow as well.

As long as 10 Type 5 Divine Warriors rode on Pterosaurs and used their abilities or powerful long-range weapons, they could easily

deal with Mount Tai. Of course, the requirement was for Mount Tai to be out of a water body. Otherwise, it could easily dive into the waters, and the Dino-warriors would be helpless.

Yue Zhong continued to ask, "What's the situation over at Cloud Region? Is there anywhere suitable for us to expand?"

Yue Zhong had swallowed his fair share of factions, building up a decent-sized power. However, it was far from the Storm Valley's intelligence network.

Luo Qing Qing replied softly, "Cloud Region is the last front of the 12 Northern Regions. There are also many prehistoric technologies there. Even Mid-Grade Dino-Generals would not dare to enter alone. The Cloud Region has been against the Triceratops Kingdom for many years, even though it has always been at a disadvantage, it has not been destroyed yet."

Yue Zhong revealed a look of interest, "They can hold their own against the Dino Kingdom? Seems like they're pretty strong! Our next destination should be there then!"

Yue Zhong knew just how terrifying the Dino-people of this world was. Every single Dino-Kingdom was sure to have a few peak-level existences. The fact that the people of Cloud Region could stand their ground, it meant that their weapons were definitely powerful because the physique of the humans could not compare to the dino-people.

Luo Qing Qing replied, "Yue Zhong, before we head there, I hope that you can make a trip to Gray Mountain first! Our allies, the Winged Race, is there. It was due to their help that we could maintain our guard at the Cracked Tooth Gorge for so long. I hope to invite them along."

Yue Zhong asked, "How many people are there in the Winged Race?"

Luo Qing Qing replied, "30,000! Their resources can be provided

by our Storm Valley."

Yue Zhong fixed his gaze on her, "There has to be a toll on them. The energy consumption of the Storm Battleship is large; if they want to board this ship, they need to pay a toll. I will not let them along for free."

Luo Qing Qing sunk into silence upon hearing those words. She was clear that the operation of the Storm Battleship required large amounts of nuclei. They could not provide it at all. Yue Zhong's request for a toll was extremely reasonable. However, after so many battles, they had expended most of what they had, and could not fork out much.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed as he continued, "Luo Qing Qing, I know that your Storm Valley doesn't have many nuclei right now. I hope that you can grant Han Zi Xuan to me, and allow her to work for me as my subordinate. I can waive the toll for the Winged Race."

Han Zi Xuan was someone Yue Zhong admired and respected for her strength and values. Even in times of despair, she did not abandon him and was loyal throughout, even if it was on Luo Qing Qing's orders. Such a person would definitely aid Yue Zhong if she joined him.

Hearing his request, Han Zi Xuan turned pale, her expression one of bewilderment.

Every subordinate of the Storm Valley also turned to look at Han Zi Xuan with strange looks.

Luo Qing Qing frowned, her gaze on Yue Zhong turning cold, "Yue Zhong, I've told you this, I will definitely not exchange my subordinates for anything. They are all independent people, and not goods to be exchanged!"

Yue Zhong did not get angry, instead, chuckling, "Then please pay the toll to for the Winged Race to join us on the journey, 3

Type 4 Nuclei or 300 Type 3 Nuclei. You know the energy requirements of the Battleship. It's not an unreasonable amount. As long as you can fork out, on account of our alliance, I can take them along. Remember, they are your Storm Valley's friends, not mine, Yue Zhong's, friends!"

Luo Qing Qing frowned and continued staring, her head filled with countless thoughts. 3 Type 4 Nuclei or 300 Type 3 Nuclei, these were not small numbers. Even if they all submitted their current stash, it might not be enough.

"There's no need to quarrel!" At this time, Han Zi Xuan stood up, her pupils narrowing as she stared at Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, I'm willing to be your slave and work for you! Please waive the fees for our friends of the Winged Race to board!"

Luo Qing Qing stared at Han Zi Xuan and exclaimed, "Zi Xuan!!"

# Chapter 837: The Winged Race!

---

"Your Majesty! Let your subject please refer to you once more as Your Majesty!" Han Zi Xuan came to her knees in front of Luo Qing Qing as she kowtowed, "Becoming Yue Zhong's slave, is your subject's own volition! From today on, Zi Xuan is Leader Yue Zhong's subordinate, and I can't serve Your Majesty anymore! I'm sorry!!"

After that, she lifted her head to stare at Luo Qing Qing, her beautiful eyes filled with tears. Her expression was resolute though, "Having received Your Majesty's care all these years has been Zi Xuan's honor. Serving Your Majesty has been Zi Xuan's fortune. Your Majesty, the Winged Race is our most trusted ally and friend, we cannot abandon them for the sake of myself! For the future of Storm Valley, we need their continued support. For this, I, Zi Xuan, am not worthy of destroying this friendship between our two races!"

Luo Qing Qing stared at the crying Han Zi Xuan, her heart stirring, and her lips trembling. Yet, she remained silent.

The Storm Valley already owed Yue Zhong too much. Even if he wanted Han Zi Xuan, no matter how dissatisfied she felt, his request was not too much. After all, operating the Storm Battleship really required many nuclei.

Han Zi Xuan kowtowed thrice before standing to look at Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, from now on, I'm your slave. You can do anything you want of me, but you must promise me, to help the Winged Race and waive their toll!"

Yue Zhong stared back at her and smiled, "Sure! That's definitely not a problem! However, I want your loyalty, that's the trait I value about you, your righteousness and loyalty. As long as you are loyal, I can waive the toll."

She wiped off the tears and replied, "As long as you honor the

agreement, I will swear my loyalty."

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Deal!"

After ascertaining the next step, both sides discussed a few more issues before calling for an end to the meeting.

"Excuse me, you must be the younger sister of Phineas of the original Storm 8 Great, Phoenina."

As everyone was about to leave, Yue Zhong called out to a young lady of about 15 to 16, her golden hair tied up in a long ponytail, her figure explosive.

Phoenina stared at Yue Zhong coldly, "That's right! I am Phoenina, Sir Yue Zhong, what's the matter?"

Since he had used such a method to obtain Han Zi Xuan, she was filled with disgust towards him.

"I know you possess the ability to make equipment out of Mutant Beast materials."

Her eyes flashed with hate, "It must be that bitch Liu Mei'er who told you!"

Liu Mei'er's betrayal was made known to everyone in the Storm Valley, causing everyone to hate her.

"I hope that you can help me craft some equipment!"

She coldly refused, "I reject!"

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, and with a flip of his hands, a huge Type 5 Mutant Beast scale appeared in them.

Phoenina took one look at the scale and sucked in a deep breath, grabbing the scale over to take a good look, her eyes burning with a passion as she exclaimed, "This is a Type 5 Mutant Beast scale!!!"

Phoenina was the equipment craftsman of the Storm Valley. After her sister Phinea's death, she had accepted the title of Storm 8 Greats, and became the 1st Equipment Craftsman. She had

produced decent equipment from Type 4 Mutant Beast parts before. However, she had yet to work with a Type 5 material. To her, it was a dream that she could not reach, and to be able to use it was a dream come true.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "That's right! I hope that you can create 50 sets of armor out of these Type 5 scales. As compensation, I can pay you 10 Type 3 Mutant Beast nuclei."

Phoenina continued to hold the Type 5 Scale tightly, almost shouting, "No! No!! I can create 50 sets for you. But you must give me another huge scale! You have killed a Type 5 Mutant Beast after all. There are so many of them, it's just a small piece to you. There's no loss giving one to me!"

Yue Zhong's eyes twinkled as he laughed, "No way! Phoenina, you also know the preciousness of the Type 5 Mutant Beast hide. It is definitely a valuable life-protecting treasure! Such a piece can easily create 3 sets of armor! If you want one, then it's definitely not enough to help me create 50!"

The higher the grade of the Mutant Beast hide, the more precious, and the stronger the life-saving qualities. Yue Zhong's Type 4 Mutant Beast hide had saved him countless times.

Phoenina grabbed the scale tightly and positively screamed, "I know! I will help you create more until you're satisfied! Is that fine now?!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Fine, deal!"

Yue Zhong took out the Type 5 Mutant Beast Scale in a bid to attract Phoenina, luring her to work for him. He had a huge stash of Type 5 Mutant Beast parts, yet there was not a single person who could work on them under him.

"Bye!"

Phoenina hugged the Type 5 Mutant Beast scale and dashed off, intending to make use of the scale to manufacture a few decent

pieces of armor.

Gray Mountain was a steep area near the Cracked Tooth Gorge, its side as smooth as a blade. There was no foothold, and ordinary people would never be able to scale this mountain.

At the center of the mountain, there was a large cave, guarded and patrolled by numerous Winged people wielding spears and bows on their backs. From time to time, other Winged people would fly into the cave with hunted prey.

"Is this where the Winged Race lives? Interesting!"

Yue Zhong was at the foot of the mountain, looking at the huge cave with Winged people flying in and out, a look of excitement and curiosity flashing across his eyes. It was the first time he had witnessed such a way of life.

Luo Qing Qing eyed Yue Zhong and frowned, "Yue Zhong, remember the points I told you to take note, do not antagonize them."

This time, Luo Qing Qing wanted to visit the Winged Race and persuade them to leave together with her. Yue Zhong was interested hence he tagged along.

Yue Zhong laughed, "I know!"

Yue Zhong's party had just arrived at Gray Mountain when a number of Winged People flew down and surrounded them.

The leader was a burly man with dark skin, dressed in wolf hide. His features were handsome, and he barked, "Who are you people?"

Luo Qing Qing was filled with confidence and she stood forward and replied coolly, "I'm Storm Valley's Luo Qing Qing, this is my ally, Yue Zhong. Today, we're here to pay Queen Shailene a visit."

Hearing Luo Qing Qing's name, the face of the wolf-pelt man turned warmer, "So it was the Storm Queen, please wait a

moment. We will make a report."

A Winged person swiftly flew up towards the cave.

Yue Zhong took the opportunity to observe the 16 other Winged people. Among them, there were 10 women and 6 men.

The men had decent looks and ripped bodies, the women were beautiful and voluptuous. Behind them, they all had the distinct feature of gray wings. It was obvious that this particular race was extremely blessed in the looks department. In fact, they looked similar to the mythical angels, although angels were depicted as having white wings, while these people had gray ones.

Soon, 26 more Winged people flew out from the cave, landing with a huge box.

The handsome leader gestured, "Please!"

Yue Zhong, Luo Qing Qing, as well as Han Zi Xuan and Hai Xi from the Storm 8 Greats went into the box.

With a flap of their wings, the 26 Winged people hoisted the box up and soared towards the cave.

The entrance was about a hundred meters wide, right near it, there were numerous huge crossbows. Yue Zhong guessed that the huge Mutant Beast bone arrows that laid on those machines were at least 20m-long, and the tips smeared with poison.

With such a threat, even if aerial Type 4 Mutant Beasts wanted to attack, they would face a certain degree of risk. As for Type 5 Mutant Beasts, while they might be catastrophic existences, and did not fear the arrows, they were too large to enter the cave.

At the same time, Yue Zhong noticed hundreds of Winged people patrolling with their spears and bows.

"This is also a matriarchal society!" Yue Zhong observed carefully and discovered that there were at least 70% females among the warriors and the rest were males.

The Winged Race also had women in power, the only difference is that in the process of reproduction, the chances of males were lesser than females, thus the higher ratio of females.

# Chapter 838: Winged Queen Shailene!

---

There was a higher ratio of female offspring, and many were outstanding experts, thus suppressing the males to be a matriarchal society.

It was precisely because of that, that they formed an alliance with the Storm Valley, both sides working together to resist the Stegosaurus Kingdom.

After passing through the cave entrance, they continued forward, and Yue Zhong saw many interesting and strange weapons along the way. At the same time, he discovered dark traces of blood on the weapons and even the walls on either side. It was apparent that there had been an intense battle in the past.

After passing through the cave, the light did not diminish, instead, there was a radiance emitting from the walls of the inner parts of the mountain, illuminating the entire place brightly.

Yue Zhong stared in wonder, "This is amazing! How did they do it?"

Luo Qing Qing spoke, "The glowing moss is a treasure of the Winged Race. Borrowing the light from these miraculous things, all Winged Race areas are always basked in light."

Yue Zhong took the beautiful sight in while muttering to himself, "Glowing moss!!"

To him, the glowing moss was a valuable treasure.

Humans suffered limitations in sight during the night and were vulnerable to other races and species. On Earth, Yue Zhong had often taken the advantage of his class specialty to defeat his enemies in the night. However, he was also worried about his enemies doing the same to his army.

If he could utilize the moss properly, then his troops would be able to exhibit a terrifying might during night combat.

After passing heavy security and going through another tunnel, they finally arrived at a huge city.

There seemed to be no end to the sides, with countless honeycomb structures. Many Winged people were flying in and out of these buildings.

On the streets, a number of children were playing games or undergoing training under the guidance of their parents.

At the central region, there was a single honeycomb that reached the top of the cavern city, entirely in white, and it gave off a majestic feel.

Yue Zhong and the rest of the party were brought up towards this building.

Yue Zhong's eyesight was sharp, and he noticed from observing that these Winged people were backward in terms of technology and knowledge, most of them covered only in beast pelt. Some of them only had a small layer around their lower private areas, and the women would even let their chests be exposed. Yet no one seemed particularly surprised, or embarrassed. There were also a few that were stark naked as they went about their activities.

Furthermore, their outlook on life was evidently different from humans. Yue Zhong just had to take a casual look and noticed that there were many couples engaged in copulation in public. Some groups of females would even surround a male for a good time without any reservations.

The huge box soon came to a rest at the peak of the white honeycomb structure.

Yue Zhong's party took a single step out and they were immediately greeted by an extremely beautiful woman with long gold locks, dressed in white satin. She was flanked by 4 other Winged female warriors wearing Storm Armor.

The golden-haired lady broke into a smile as she looked at Luo

Qing Qing, "Queen Luo Qing Qing, you've come!! Her Majesty has instructed for me to receive you, please come with me!"

Luo Qing Qing stared in confusion before she suddenly recognized her, "Winnie?! Have you broken through already?"

"Queen Luo Qing Qing, you're truly capable, indeed, I've broken through a month ago, and am a Type 4 Divine Warrior now," Winnie responded with a slightly proud tone. A Type 4 Divine Warrior was an existence not to be underestimated, even among the Winged Race, they were rare and a few.

Winnie shot Yue Zhong a look, and could not help but stick out her tongue to lick her lips sensually, "Is this your King? He seems pretty strong!"

Since the Winged Race had more females than males and were a matriarchal society, the women would usually make advances on the men. Although Yue Zhong was not exceptionally good-looking, however, through the countless battles, he had grown to possess a unique aura that was attractive.

Seeing Winnie's undisguised greed, Luo Qing Qing was slightly uncomfortable, frowning as she replied, "Winnie, this is Yue Zhong, an important ally, and friend, and not my King. Take me to see Queen Shailene."

"Yes! Please follow me!"

She withdrew her gaze from Yue Zhong's body reluctantly, before leading the party deeper into the palace.

Under her lead, they quickly came to a vast hall.

"Luo Qing Qing, the last time I saw you was about... 3 years ago? Why don't you come over more often?"

The party had just entered the place when another absolute beauty appeared, her jade-like skin glowing, her hair golden, and she was wearing a Storm Battle Armor. If it wasn't for her wings being gray instead of white, she would look like the epitome of

angels. She immediately hugged Luo Qing Qing and chuckled amicably.

Behind her, there were 8 other female warriors with the Storm Battle Armor, 2 other beauties in white silk, and 2 young male warriors with good looks and muscular bodies.

Seeing how close the woman was with Luo Qing Qing, the faces of the 2 women in silk sunk. As for the 2 men, their eyes brightened upon seeing Luo Qing Qing. In terms of appearance and aura, Luo Qing Qing surpassed the top beauties of the Winged Race ever so slightly.

Luo Qing Qing had an apologetic smile as she explained, "My apologies, Shailene, there have been too many problems over at Storm Valley. The Sun Alliance and Pterosaur Mountain had been eyeing us for some time, I couldn't pull out the time to come over for leisure."

"Forget it! I know it's hard for you. I forgive you." Shailene chuckled in joy, extracting herself from the hug.

One of the mature ladies in white silk had blue hair, her face sullen as she spoke solemnly, "Your Majesty, you are now representing our Winged Race, please mind yourself."

Shailene smiled bitterly, before turning around to return to her throne, before assuming a wooden expression and eyed Yue Zhong's group silently.

After waiting for Luo Qing Qing and the rest to be seated, the blue-haired lady then spoke with a severe expression, "Storm Queen, what brings you here to our Winged Race palace?"

Luo Qing Qing returned the expression, "Elder Dorothy, this time, I've come hoping for the Winged Race to come with us to leave Green Region. The Stegosaurus Kingdom had already set their sights on our Green Region, and with our strength, there's no way of defending against their advances. If we make our way to

Cloud Region, we have a chance."

The 2 older women beside Shailene were called Dorothy and Doreen, they were the 2 Elders of the Winged Race. Both of them had the strength of a peak-Type 4 Divine Warrior. They were just a few steps away from the Type 5 Realm. They had considerable authority within the Winged Race, even the Queen Shailene had to listen to them.

After hearing Luo Qing Qing's words, the faces of all the Winged people present changed.

One of the males suddenly laughed coldly, "Leave Green Region? Impossible. Our Winged Race had toiled for countless years, now that we finally have our own sacred grounds in this mountain, yet, you want to waltz in here and ask us to leave with you with a single sentence? Our Winged Race is not at your beck and call, Luo Qing Qing."

The other male continued in a sharp tone, "Yade is right! The biggest mistake of our Winged Race was to ally with your Storm Valley. You useless human trash, you couldn't even defend Cracked Tooth Gorge without the help of our Winged Race. Yet, what have you done? You actually blew up the gorge, allowing the Stegosaurus Kingdom to invade Green Region! Damn it! Because of you, our Winged Race has now become their target as well. We've lost 400 of our brothers and sisters. You dare come in here, hoping for our Winged Race to follow you out of Green Region? What do you see us as? Your subordinates or your toys?!"

When Luo Qing Qing heard their words, her expression turned ugly and she clenched her fists, looking towards Dorothy and Doreen.

Instead, the 2 of them stared back at Luo Qing Qing quietly, not saying anything, causing Luo Qing Qing's heart to turn cold.

With their position, without their consent or expressed intention, the 2 male Winged warriors would definitely not have

shot their mouths like that. Evidently, there were many among the Winged Race that was already dissatisfied with the alliance with the Storm Valley

Luo Qing Qing stood up with an impassive face, "Since this is the case, I have nothing better to say. Our Storm Valley will leave the Green Region by ourselves. Farewell!"

Dorothy suddenly spoke up, "Wait! Storm Queen, although we can't leave, we are still good friends. We hope that you can stay and allow us to host you well."

Shailene also looked at her with an apologetic look, "Storm Queen, stay on! Let us host you!"

Luo Qing Qing had intended to leave immediately. However, upon seeing Shailene's look, her heart could not help but soften. They had shared many years of friendship, while the rejection of Luo Qing Qing's proposal was a collective decision, while Shailene was merely a figurehead. The power she held could not compare with the 2 Elders. Luo Qing Qing did not want to make things difficult for her as well.

# Chapter 839: Courtship Offering!

---

Inside a secret room, Dorothy, Doreen, and the 2 handsome Winged men were seated, the atmosphere heavy and tense.

Doreen was frowning, a look of hesitation on her face, "Are we really doing this? The Storm Valley is our ally after all!"

One of the males had a resolute look, "Elder Doreen. We have to do this. We know clearly the might of the Stegosaurus. Any Mid-Grade Dino-General is not an existence we can handle. Now that the Cracked Tooth Gorge is destroyed, we don't have any defenses left. We can only plead with their kingdom for survival!"

The other male also spoke up with an insufferable amount of arrogance, "Wayne is right! If we go against the Stegosaurus Kingdom, we're just courting death. Although the Green Region is submerged with water now, they would never let off anyone involved with their losses. Especially since the Storm Valley is one of 3 main factions, they will be their target for vengeance. If we send them the Storm Queen Luo Qing Qing, they will be appeased, and let us off."

Wayne spoke softly, "Although it would mean that we will become under the banner of the Stegosaurus Kingdom and lose our independence, it will avert the wipeout of our clan. Esteemed Elders, this is our only choice. If we hesitate any further, once the experts of the Stegosaurus Kingdom arrive, our entire Winged Race will be their targets as well!"

The Winged Race knew the might of the Stegosaurus Kingdom. They were just a small species of this world, and the last Winged Queen had merely been at the initial-Type 5 Divine Warrior stage, the only one of the entire Winged Race. However, even this Winged Queen had perished at the hands of a Mid-Grade Dino-General in a battle some time ago, highlighting the difference in strength between them and the Dino-people.

The current Queen Shailene had only ruled for 3 years. Although she had the exalted blood of the previous Queen, her age was still young, and her power was still at the initial Type 4 Divine Warrior realm. Among the Winged Race, she barely had any authority.

With the pressure of the Stegosaurus Kingdom weighing on them, the 2 Elders were starting to feel nervous. Their might could not compare to the Stegosaurus Kingdom. If they did not navigate properly, they would easily be wiped out.

In this Third World, the Dino-people were the overlords of this world. They had the strongest advantage and were also the most savage people. There were many species that had been wiped out by them, and they were widely feared.

Doreen looked towards Dorothy, "What do you think, Dorothy?"

Dorothy was silent for a long while, her eyes flashing with a complicated gaze, before she heaved a long sigh, "For the sake of our Winged Race, we can only sacrifice the Storm Queen."

Doreen asked after a while, "Are we going to tell Her Majesty?"

Dorothy shook her head with a cold look, "Her Majesty values her relationships. If she knows we're plotting against her friend, she would not agree. However, she is not stupid. When we go under the banner of the Stegosaurus Kingdom, she will understand our difficulties. Wayne, Lars, go make your preparations!"

"Understood!" The 2 handsome Winged men responded and left.

At night, within the honeycomb city, the glowing moss near the top of the enormous cavern was starting to dim. However, there were a few other plants that were radiating light as well, illuminating the city.

At a huge field, there was a bonfire, with numerous good-looking Winged people dancing around with festive clothes.

Silk existed in this world as well, however, only humans were able to produce beautiful silk by rearing some Mutant Bugs. The

amount produced was not a lot, and even in the Winged Race, only a few ladies of higher caste could afford them. These were obtained through exchange with the Storm Valley in the past.

There was also a circle of tables, where the guests of the Winged Race would be seated.

Yue Zhong was currently seated at one of the table, drinking juice while enjoying the food provided by the Winged Race.

This time, the feast was of an important level, the juice was produced from various Mutant Plants and fruits that could boost the physique of humans. The culinary habits of the Winged Race were not particularly high, they only knew how to barbecue the meat roughly. However, the ingredients were collected from delicious Type 3 Mutant Beast meat. Furthermore, they were using spices and other seasonings that Yue Zhong had never seen or tasted before, causing the meat to taste even better.

On a podium, Shailene and Luo Qing Qing sat together, as the most important people of the honeycomb city.

Shailene looked at Yue Zhong curiously, "Sis, is that Yue Zhong your consort King? Based on your Storm Valley rules, you should have already reached the age to choose your King right? In fact, I've counted, today should be the day you choose a King. You actually brought him here, he should either be your King or a beloved concubine, yea? He doesn't look particularly handsome though, why him?"

Shailene and Luo Qing Qin were the best of friends, and since Luo Qing Qing was older than Shailene, hence, when no one was around, Shailene would call Luo Qing Qing 'Sis'. At the same time, since their factions were allies, Shailene knew the ritual of choosing a King.

Luo Qing Qing shot Yue Zhong a look, her own gaze filled with complicated emotions as she shook her head, "He's not my King, nor concubine. He's an ally, this time, thanks to him, our Storm

Valley managed to survive."

Shailene asked with curiosity, "Oh? What's going on? Mind telling me?"

Just as Luo Qing Qing was about to say something, a bout of strong drum beats began to resound, as all the beautiful female dancers left the stage.

40 muscular men wielding spears and bows entered the scene. All of them had rippling muscles, their bodies taut, in combination with their good looks, they had attracted the excited screams and cheers of many women.

Shailene looked at the good-looking Winged men entering the parade square and became excited, "It's starting! Sis, our Winged Race's Courtship Offering!!! Look, these are all our strongest and handsome warriors. They are all much more good-looking than Yue Zhong! Wayne, Lars, do your best!"

Of the 40 males, Wayne and Lars were pretty outstanding in their demeanor.

Luo Qing Qing glanced at the excited Shailene and chuckled mildly.

The Courtship Offering was a sacred ritual of the Winged Race, in this ritual, the most outstanding males of the Winged Race would step forward to perform in front of the Queen, competing in battles to narrow down to the 10 most excellent warriors.

Of these 10 outstanding males, they had the chance to choose any females above the age of 25 of their liking, other than the Queen and Elders, to be their partners for one night.

At the same time, their performance would rile up the attention and adoration of countless women.

On top of that, in the past, there was usually a chance to become the King or concubine of the Winged Queen. Therefore, many males would strive to take part and do their best.

Of the Courtship Offering, there were 3 components to the competition, namely, close combat, archery and spear combat.

The Winged Race had a different sense of close combat compared to humans. Due to their wings, they could fly in the sky and engaged in a melee. It was a test of their control as well as combat.

In the skies, 2 gray figures clashed, when all of a sudden, they merged together and crashed towards the ground.

Peng!

With a loud explosion, and after the dust dispersed, Wayne was standing on top of another Winged warrior.

The Winged warrior spoke with difficulty, "I admit defeat!"

"Wayne! Wayne!!"

"Wayne!! I love you!!"

"....."

Wayne took his leg away from the other Winged warrior, raising his hands up high amidst an explosion of cheers. He had revealed a suppressing strength, successfully defeating the other contestants. Even Lars had chosen to admit defeat. He was not his match.

As the sounds continued to ring out, Wayne walked over to Yue Zhong, his eyes filled with disdain as he challenged, "Yue Zhong, I heard that among the humans, you men are all weak trash, with no balls, hiding behind women. Do you dare compete against me?"

Wayne's voice was not soft, and a number of condescending, curious and even excited gazes fell upon Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong shot Wayne a look, entering the stage, "You have successfully pissed me off, useless trash. I accept your challenge."

Shailene squealed in delight, "He's challenging Wayne!! This time, he's in trouble!!"

# Chapter 840: One-Move Victory!

---

"Wayne, do your best!!"

"Finish him!!"

"Stuff his head into his arse!!"

"..."

Seeing Yue Zhong enter the stage, the spectators erupted in excited cheers and hollers. None of them thought that Yue Zhong could succeed as he was a human. Hence, they all shouted their support for the hero of their hearts, Wayne.

Wayne's eyes flashed with a savage glint, "I had originally intended to teach you a lesson. Now, you have infuriated me. Yue Zhong! I will take your right arm and force it so far up your arse! In close-quarter combat, both parties have to be responsible for their own life and death! If you're afraid, get down on your knees and lick my shoes, I will let you off and spare your life!!"

Wayne was the top male warrior of the Winged Race, having never suffered any setback during his growth. With the exception of the Queen and some other upper-class women, as long as he hooked his finger, any other female would gladly go to bed with him. He would also enjoy their adoration and respect. He looked down on the weaker humans, and thus, since he was challenged by an 'ant' he despised, he was filled with rage.

Yue Zhong eyed him and laughed coldly, "You spout too much bullshit! Get started, fool!"

Shailene called out excitedly on the podium, "Wayne! Go all out! Teach this arrogant fellow a lesson!!"

Since she had been queen for too short a time, and she was still young, there was still a little childish temperament to her. Because of that, although she had the strength of a Type 4 Divine Warrior, her authority had not yet exceeded the 2 Elders.

When Luo Qing Qing saw this, a strange glint flashed across her eyes as the corners of her mouth lifted in a strange smile.

Wayne got down on a single knee and declared to Shailene, "Understood! Glorious Queen, I will fulfill your wish!"

"Now, you can regret your foolishness and arrogance!!"

Wayne stood up, turned around, his eyes flashing fiercely. With a tap of his foot, 6 clones suddenly shot towards Yue Zhong.

"6 Shadow Clones! He can already conjure up 6 of them! Seems like his strength had reached the peak of Type 3, nearing the Type 4 realm!"

"Outstanding! He's only 25 this year, and yet, his strength has reached such a stage! Seems like we might soon have a powerful Type 4 King!"

"..."

Upon seeing the 6 Shadow Clones, many Winged people had expressions of shock, as they began to discuss excitedly.

To the Winged Race, Type 4 experts were considered the pinnacle. There were only 5 of them in the entire race, thus, having one more Type 4 Divine Warrior meant that they would have an additional powerhouse.

Many of the pretty young ladies stared wide-eyed at Wayne, their eyes filled with adoration. With such a handsome and powerful man, it was impossible to not be attracted.

The 6 Shadow Clones pounced towards Yue Zhong, as long as he made the wrong judgment, Wayne would be able to grab hold of him and toss him to the ground. Even among most human Type 4 Divine Warriors, it would be hard to block against such a move.

Each of the clones was fixed on one of Yue Zhong's vital areas, namely his waist, heart, throat, brain and other spots. The spectators were filled with glee, excitement and even bloodlust,

hoping to see Yue Zhong heavily injured, if not dead.

Yue Zhong stared at them coldly, before sending out a casual slap towards one of the clones.

At the moment, all 6 clones disintegrated, while Wayne was sent soaring towards a wall in a flash, looking like a broken doll.

The handsome mug of his was contorted due to Yue Zhong's strike, his teeth all knocked out, as blood gushed out in large amounts.

Seeing this, everyone was caught slack-jawed. They had never expected that their top male warrior to be defeated in a single move by this human without being able to defend himself.

Only Luo Qing Qing and the rest from Storm Valley who knew his strength did not falter. They had long since anticipated such an outcome.

Yue Zhong looked at Wayne who was stuck in the wall, laughing coldly as he shot towards him, "Still not dead? Your constitution is pretty decent, eh?"

Immediately, a dozen Winged Warriors came gathering in front of Wayne, protecting him as they raised their spears at Yue Zhong.

One of them barked out, "Yue Zhong, what do you think you're doing?!"

Yue Zhong declared in a loud and self-justified manner, "Of course it is to end his life! It is a combat between the two of us! In this battle, as long as he doesn't admit defeat, he still intends to battle! I'm going to end this, there's not a single rule I've broken! Instead, you guys are trying to flout the rules eh? So the Winged Race is such a lawless place, is it?! You still don't want to back off?"

Rebuked by Yue Zhong, the rest of warriors had ugly expressions. In the Courtship Offering ritual, it was true that there would be casualties during the competition. As long as one party did not acknowledge defeat, the spectators could not intervene no matter

what. However, Wayne had been slapped silly by Yue Zhong, his mind apparently out of focus. He was not in the right state to admit defeat. If Yue Zhong were to go over now, Wayne would surely die.

Right at this moment, Shailene's voice rang out, "All of you, stand down! Our Winged Race is not a clan that is not trustworthy! We do not flout our traditions and rules!"

"Yes! Your Majesty!"

Hearing Shailene's words, the warriors bowed and quickly stepped aside.

Shailene was currently emitting the bearing of a ruler, well beyond her years, as she looked at Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, our Winged Race will stick to our words. As long as Wayne does not admit defeat, you do have the right to kill him. However, I hope that you can let him off. I do not wish for our Winged Race and the humans to become enemies."

Shailene might be naive and childish at times, however, she was after all raised to be the future Queen. At this current moment, she truly did have the bearing of royalty.

Yue Zhong stopped and shot Shailene a look of appreciation, "Fine, then who is the winner here?"

Shailene's mouth curled, as she gazed back at him with a hint of a smile, "Of course, it's you!"

Yue Zhong then stood at the center of the stage and shot the male warriors condescending looks, "Good! I've won this round! Who else dares to take me on!"

The male warriors all looked at him, their eyes flashing with fear. No one had the confidence to take on this human who had defeated their strongest with a single hit.

Among the female warriors, many had looks of fury as they glared at Yue Zhong. At the same time, a few beautiful ones were

looking at Yue Zhong with appreciation. In this world where strength meant everything, as long as one was strong enough, there would be no lack of suitors.

"Who dares to challenge me?"

Yue Zhong continued to taunt the men as he looked down with disdain.

Many of the male warriors lowered their heads to avoid eye contact. If they were to go up and got slapped like Wayne, then after today, they would become a joke.

Yue Zhong smiled coldly and taunted once more, "Are there no brave warriors among the Winged Race?"

"I'll challenge you!!"

Under his constant challenges, a beautiful girl with an oval-shaped face, her long golden hair tied in a ponytail, and her figure explosively sexy, came up to the stage. She stared straight at Yue Zhong, her voice ringing with anger, "I, Lai Wei, am here to challenge you!! Our Winged Race has no lack of warriors!"

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "If I recall correctly, in the Courtship Offering ritual, females are forbidden to take part, am I right?"

In the Winged Race, the females had a higher strength than the men. Therefore, they were forbidden from taking part. Otherwise, there would not be a single man worthy to present themselves.

Just like on Earth, if there wasn't a clear separation, then top female athletes could not compete against the top male athletes.

Lai Wei shot Yue Zhong a challenging look, "What, you're scared? Coward!"

"Coward!"

"You don't even have the courage to accept another challenge, Yue Zhong?"

"You're the coward!!"

"Lai Wei, teach this man a lesson! Although he fits my taste, he's too arrogant!"

"..."

Among the spectators, many of the female warriors were screaming excitedly, with some even blowing wolf-whistles.

Yue Zhong flipped his hands and a Type 4 Nucleus appeared in his hand, "Of course not. I accept your challenge, however, let's make it more interesting. If I do not defeat you in the allotted time, I'll lose this nucleus to you. If I do defeat you, you will be my subordinate, even when I leave this honeycomb, you must come with me, and fight alongside me. How about that?"

Yue Zhong had observed this Lai Wei carefully and noticed that she had a valiant and sturdy aura, obviously the result of countless battles. He needed such talented warriors.

Lai Wei licked her lips in excitement, "No!! I want to change the conditions! If I lose, I'm yours. If you lose, you're mine! You'll have to stay here with me!!!"

Yue Zhong chuckled and nodded, "Fine!"

# Chapter 841: Genius Lai Wei!

---

"Hehe! This time, you'll definitely lose!" Lai Wei saw how easily Yue Zhong agreed to her conditions and revealed a crafty smile. She then walked to one side, looking towards a mature Winged woman, "Mama, lend me your Storm Battle Armor!"

The beautiful woman laughed lightly, and tossed the suit together with a Type 4 nucleus, before smiling coyly, "Lai Wei, I like this Yue Zhong too. Once he becomes yours, let him accompany me for 3 nights!"

Lai Wei stared back, after taking the armor, "No way! He's someone that caught my eye. If you want to play with men, go choose some others. He's mine!!"

Without any hesitation, Lai Wei swiftly put on the armor, standing on the stage, staring at Yue Zhong with a gaze full of battle intent, "Shall we start?"

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "Bring it on!"

The moment his words landed, Lai Wei's eyes flashed with a glint. The nucleus behind the armor radiated brightly, and with a tap of her foot, 16 Shadow Clones dashed towards him.

"Type 4 Peak, what a fast speed, she's already a Type 4 Divine Warrior!"

Yue Zhong caught sight of the 16 Shadow Clones and was full of shock. His heart turned cold and he became serious, withdrawing his contempt.

Lai Wei was a genius combateer among the Winged Race, although her age was young, she had been through countless battles, and had reached the initial Type 4 Divine Warrior stage. With the enhancement of the Storm Battle Armor, she was even able to push herself to the peak of Type 4.

Her speed was extremely quick, every single shadow clone

looking extremely life-like. It surpassed what Wayne was capable of. Yue Zhong had been able to discern the authenticity behind Wayne's technique but was unable to do so for Lai Wei's.

His pupils narrowed, and with a tap, he shot backward like an arrow, activating his Gravity Manipulation, as a powerful gravitational force spread outward.

He had just stepped back when he suddenly felt an intense sense of danger from above. A powerful hurricane came crashing down towards his head.

"From above?!"

Without lifting his head, he twisted his body slightly and channeled his Dark Dou Qi. With that tight space he had, he sent out a powerful fist towards the direction of the danger.

Both fists connected, and Yue Zhong who was less prepared was sent flying backward.

He twisted his body, his pupils constricting, looking up only to discover all 16 Shadow Clones flapping their wings and coming after him.

The Type 2 Gravitational Force was only enough to impede Lai Wei for barely a second. Due to the sudden change in gravity, they were caught unaware, but once they got used to it, it did not affect them much.

Yue Zhong eyed them and his gaze turned frosty before he suddenly charged towards them with a fierce killing intent.

Lai Wei's eyes flashed with shock but threw a punch without holding back.

"This is the real one!"

Upon getting close to them, Yue Zhong finally determined one of them to be the true body. There was a wildfire behind his eyes as he allowed the punch to reach his chest.

Her peak Type 4 strength burst out, almost bursting his chest open.

With the new armor, he was wearing made from the Type 5 Mutant Beast scale, together with his Body of Steel, it negated about 60% of Lai Wei's force, however, the remaining was enough to send his insides tumbling. He almost threw up blood, but he managed to suppress it.

"Hehe! I caught you!"

At the moment her punch landed on Yue Zhong, he opened his arms wide and grabbed her tight, as he sent a vicious knee strike towards her abdomen.

She received the blow and her eyes flashed with madness, kicking out the same way towards him.

He took a step closer and used his legs to block, causing her knee to slam into his thigh, from which a sharp pain shot through his body.

He hugged her tight and tumbled towards the ground, using his body to stick close and assault her.

Not willing to stand down, Lai Wei utilized the same fighting style and threw close punches.

Both parties were reduced to brawling together like hoodlums.

This is close-quarter combat, and not just skills or abilities. At the first instance of their clash, Yue Zhong had already determined that he was not a match for her without using some means.

Yue Zhong had been through countless combat and crawled through seas of zombie corpses and blood, his experience abundant. Lai Wei was not that far off as well, having fought her fair share of battles. She was also more talented in combat compared to Yue Zhong. Combined with the natural wings that their Winged Race possessed, it allowed their speed to be faster, and the flight ability. Utilizing the many means, they could gain an

upper hand in close combat.

When the spectators watched this, they were stunned silly, who would have thought that 2 experts would actually be reduced to brawling like this.

Yue Zhong and Lai Wei's attacks were reaching an intense level, as Lai Wei twisted constantly in a bid to escape Yue Zhong's grip. As for Yue Zhong, he held her tightly, not allowing her to escape.

Both parties continued to rain blows, and Lai Wei was starting to throw up blood.

As for Yue Zhong, who possessed the Regeneration and Body of Steel abilities, he was like a bull that hung on. Although there was blood at the corners of his mouth as well, he was still brimming with vitality, with no trace of exhaustion.

"Damn it! Get the hell away!!"

As the battle reached a climax, Lai Wei's eyes flashed fiercely, as the Type 4 Nucleus on her back glowed. Her strength was pushed to the Type 5 realm, and she was starting to lose her rationality from her anger, intending to defeat Yue Zhong quickly.

"No, Lai Wei!!"

"Don't do it!! You can't use that power!"

"..."

Seeing the bright glow of the Storm Battle Armor, many of the upper-class Winged Race had huge changes in expression, frantically calling out to stop her.

Lai Wei was currently utilizing the strongest that the armor had to offer. She would likely lose control and go on a killing spree, and the same time, after the burst of strength, the Type 4 Nucleus would also crumble into dust.

"Sorry, this strength does not belong to you!"

Yue Zhong spoke coldly, with blood near his lips, before suddenly

letting go.

Lai Wei's eyes flashed wildly and she shot up like an arrow, slashing towards his chest with her nails. At that instant, her claws slammed into his body.

'Yue Zhong' disintegrated, turning into dust and disappearing.

Her eyes widened in shock when suddenly, a palm came knocking at the back of her head, making her unconscious.

Although she had gained a boost in strength from the armor, she had lost her rationale, and to Yue Zhong, her current state was easier to deal with.

After knocking her out, Yue Zhong turned to Shailene and chuckled, "Beautiful Queen, this round is also my victory, no?"

Shailene looked straight back at him with a coy smile, "That's right! It's your win! Yue Zhong, I appreciate and admire you very much. Stay with us! I will make you my King!"

"Your Majesty!"

"Do reconsider, Your Majesty!"

"..."

Hearing Shailene's words, all the Winged Race immediately had expressions of horror as they tried to persuade her otherwise.

All along, the King's position usually belonged to the Winged Race, never a foreign race or species. To the Winged Race who valued their blood and tradition, they would never allow a human to become their King.

With Shailene's words, many of the male Winged warriors had ugly expressions. They were the best among the best, and based on tradition, the King would have been chosen from among them. Yet now, there was a human who was going to take that position, they could not help but feel ashamed.

"Shailene, don't mess around!"

At this time, Dorothy, Doreen and 20 other elites with Storm Armor, as well as a hundred Winged female warriors clad in beast hide came marching out.

Shailene looked at them and frowned, "Elders, what's the meaning of this?"

Dorothy's eyes flashed as she barked, "Your Majesty, we need to talk to the Storm Queen for the sake of our future. Please be silent."

Being admonished by Dorothy, the atmosphere turned frosty, as Shailene gritted her teeth, her hands clenched tightly.

Doreen smiled at Luo Qing Qing, "Storm Queen, please come with us."

Luo Qing Qing's facial expression suddenly changed, as the fruit juice in her hands landed on the ground. She stared up in shock, "You guys actually poisoned the food?!"

Hai Xi's face also turned, as she rushed up in front of Luo Qing Qing to protect her.

Luo Qing Qing turned to Shailene with a hurt look, "Shailene, you actually poisoned me as well?"

Shailene stared back in horror, "No!! Sis!! I did not do anything of the sort!!" She then turned to Dorothy and screamed, "Dorothy, Doreen, what's going on?!"

Dorothy eyed Shailene and barked, "Your Majesty, keep quiet! This has to do with the survival of our Winged Race!! It is the decision that we Elders have made for our sake!"

# Chapter 842: Type 4 Prehistoric Monitor Lizard!

---

Shailene's face turned bad, her eyes filled with a chilly gaze, "A unanimous decision by the Elder Council? How come I wasn't made aware of this?"

Under the gaze, the rest of the upper echelon all averted their eyes. Shailene was after all the Queen of the Winged Race. Keeping this matter from her was truly an offense.

Dorothy frowned as she chided Shailene with a tone as though rebuking a child, "Because you're always so headstrong. The Elder Council was afraid that you might be too agitated, that's why we kept it from you. Seems like our decision was right. Shailene, you're still too young."

In the eyes of Dorothy, Shailene was still a kid that had not yet grown up. Although they had chosen her to be the Queen due to her bloodline and heritage, she had basically zero authority.

Shailene stood up frostily, ordering with a majestic aura, "The decision of the Elder Council? What a joke. The Queen wasn't even consulted in this. Is my position as Queen a joke? Elder Dorothy and Elder Doreen, I hereby command you in my position as Queen to stand down immediately, and take out the antidote right now!"

Dorothy frowned, "Your Majesty, you aren't well. Doreen, go bring her back to rest."

Doreen flashed and appeared right in front of Shailene, her face filled with a warm smile, "Your Majesty, come, let's head back for a rest."

Shailene's eyes shimmered, as she gritted her teeth. She then turned to Luo Qing Qing helpless before apologizing in an exasperated tone, "I'm so sorry, Sis!"

Shailene only had the strength of an initial Type 4 Divine

Warrior, whereas Doreen was near the peak. Furthermore, Doreen had experience under her belt, and Shailene was just not her match.

Luo Qing Qing spoke indifferently, "It's nothing to do with you, I've been careless."

She had not expected that as a Queen, Shailene could not even muster her authority. She had put too much trust in her character and was thus poisoned by her subordinates unknowingly.

Dorothy smiled, "Storm Queen, please rest assured, as long as you don't resist, we will not hurt you."

Luo Qing Qing retorted icily, "You guys want to hand me over to the Stegosaurus Kingdom. Shameless. To think that the Winged Race has fallen to such depths. Allying with you people had been blindness on my part."

Luo Qing Qing was after all an outstanding leader, having seen the strange actions of Dorothy, she could immediately guess their intentions.

In truth, if the Winged Race did not want to leave, and lead a vagabond life, the only choice was to submit to the Stegosaurus Kingdom.

A look of guilt flashed past Dorothy's eyes, in the end, she sighed, "It's us who have let you down. However, for the sake of our future, we have to do so. Men, grab her, and keep her in the prison."

The 20 Winged elites in Storm Armor charged towards Luo Qing Qing.

Right at this moment, a loud voice barked out, "Hold up! I have something to say!"

Everyone's attention fell on the owner of the voice, Yue Zhong.

Dorothy eyed him coldly, "What is it?"

He chuckled, pointing towards the entrance of the cavern, drawling indifferently, "I think, you guys are in for some trouble."

At this moment, alarms blared throughout the entire honeycomb city.

Hong!

Following a loud sound, a huge explosion rang out from the caverns, as dozens of Winged people flew out, their mouths filled with blood.

At the same time, hundreds more flew out from behind them, seeming to flee pathetically.

Dorothy's eyes flashed with shock as she screeched, "What's going on? How can our defenses fall so easily? What's happening?"

At the entrance of their caverns, there were plenty of defensive weapons. Even a Type 4 Mutant Beast would have to pay a huge price to try and invade. However, right now, their defensive line had been broken by some unknown force, this caused Dorothy to be shocked.

Right in front of them, a huge monitor lizard of about 10m, its entire body covered in scales came crawling in swiftly.

Yue Zhong activated his Eyes of Perception and received a flurry of information.

"Type 4 Mutant Beast: Prehistoric Monitor Lizard. It can easily scale mountain walls and possesses a tough hide. With its nimble movement and strength, as well as its innate poisonous ability, it is a formidable existence."

After Yue Zhong's Eyes of Perception was strengthened to the Second Order stage, as well as his physique reaching the peak of Type 4, the information he got from any Mutant Beast of Type 4 and below was a lot more comprehensive.

The Type 4 Monitor Lizard was covered with countless arrows

stuck in its scale, as well as a huge bone arrow that had pierced through an area of its body. It was obviously enraged, and as it charged in, it began to crush and destroy a number of honeycomb structures.

The speed of the Monitor Lizard was extremely quick and deft, its charging speed reaching the sound barrier. In a few breaths, it had reached the center of the honeycomb city, and with every swing of its tail, it would cause a building to crumble, while the Winged warriors within would be forced to fly out.

The moment those Winged warriors flew out, they suddenly disappeared without a trace.

Seeing this, many others began to fly out from their own homes.

In just an instant, it was like a swarm of Winged people flying out of the honeycomb structures, looking like bees.

Since they were an intelligent race, while they might have some outstanding warriors, they would also have some cowards within them. A particular group made their way towards the entrance in a bid to get out of here.

To their horror, just as they reached the entrance, they suddenly disappeared in one fell swoop as well. Following that, another Type 4 Prehistoric Monitor Lizard leaped in from the entrance, entering the city.

Not long after that, yet another Type 4 Prehistoric Monitor Lizard followed suit.

Their numbers began to increase as they invaded and tore through the city. In just a few moments, there was a dozen of them.

They began to unleash carnage and slaughter everywhere they crawled. Their tails would swing into buildings, destroying them, and the moment the Winged people appeared, they would vanish mysteriously.

Even those that were flying at about a hundred meters in the skies, as long as they got near the Prehistoric Monitor Lizards, they would disappear without a trace.

Many brave Winged warriors flapped their wings, wielding their bows and firing at the Monitor Lizards. The arrows only served to bounce off the thick armors. A few stronger ones managed to land and pierce through, yet, those arrows were like toothpicks, not causing much damage.

Instead, the beasts continued to advance further towards the directions of the Winged warriors, causing them to disappear again. Such a strange sight was causing the rest to be bewildered and fearful.

Dorothy soared into the air, her face pale at the sight of hell within their homeland, "What's going on? How did these Monitor Lizards suddenly band together to attack us?"

These Monitor Lizards were smaller than those Type 4 Diplodocus and Triceratops, and their strength might not be comparable to those large ones. However, they had fast speed, astonishing defenses, and strange means. To the Winged Race, they were practically disaster.

Dorothy's eyesight was powerful, and she caught sight of a few Dino-warriors charging in from the entrance like ants. Her eyes flashed with despair, "Those are Dino-people!! Damn it!!! These are the troops from the Stegosaurus Kingdom!! They've come!!"

Yue Zhong's heart sank upon hearing those words, "Dino-people? Shit!! We're in a jam now!!"

Previously, Yue Zhong had managed to strike preemptively with the help of Mount Tai and Turtle. However, this cavern in the mountains was only about a few hundred meters away from the ground. If he were to summon Mount Tai, it would likely get stuck.

Hearing Dorothy's cry of despair, many Winged people had looks of shock and fear on their faces as well. They knew the savagery their enemies were capable of. Once they killed their way over, all that awaited was death.

Lars' eyes flashed with a strange glint as he pointed at Yue Zhong's party, "It's them!! Those humans must have lured the Dino-people over!! Kill them!! After that, we can present their heads to the Stegosaurus Kingdom to plead for mercy! They will spare us!!"

At Lars' shout, many of the upper-class Winged people turned to stare at Yue Zhong's party, their eyes filled with rage. Many of them raised their spears and let out howls of fury.

# Chapter 843: Intense Battle!

---

Yue Zhong eyed them and barked out coldly, "A bunch of fools! Now that the Dino-people have already broken in, based on their nature, they will definitely wipe you all out! The only ones willing to help you guys are us!! What you should be doing is to fight against those beasts and Dino-people, not us!! You want to make enemies out of us as well?!"

After that, he turned to Lars with a heavy killing intent. This male warrior had tried his patience time and time again. If it was not for the upper-class Winged people all around, he would have acted to kill this Lars a long time ago.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, the faces of the Winged people turned pale. They knew the nature of the Dino-people. With them, as long as they attacked, they would make a clean job out of it.

Lars could not help but retreat a few steps when stared by Yue Zhong. He continued to shout out loudly, "Don't trust him! As long as we capture these humans and hand them over to the General Ku Weili, they will let us go and discuss a peace treaty! We can become their vassal force!"

Yue Zhong's face fell as he barked out suddenly, activating his Art of Fear together, assaulting Lars, "You actually dare to collude with the Dino-army's Ku Weili and sell out your own race to them?! Speak! What did they promise you for you to betray your own people and become their dog?!"

Affected by the Art of Fear, Lars panicked even more as his face fell and he stammered, "I didn't!! I didn't betray our race!! General Ku Weili promised that as long as our race submits to them, he will accept us as their vassal!!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly and swept a glance over the rest of the Winged elites "Everyone has heard it now! These Dino-people weren't led here by us, it was this fool of a trash that had revealed

your location to the enemy!"

When Lars heard Yue Zhong's words, his face turned pale and he looked around, only to discover furious gazes on him.

He had come in contact with people from the Stegosaurus Kingdom before, it was precisely his foolish actions that led the Type 4 Prehistoric Monitor Lizards and Dino-warriors here.

Yue Zhong then looked at Dorothy, his tone solemn, "Elder Dorothy, you had best take out the antidote. You know clearly the Storm Queen's capabilities, with her help, we might have a chance to deal with those freaks."

Hearing his words, some of the upper echelons of the Winged Race exchanged looks, obviously in a dilemma. They had just used poison on Luo Qing Qing to seal her powers, now, they had to help her diffuse it. They were afraid of her anger and retaliation.

With a peak-Type 4 Divine Warrior strength, as well as the Storm Armor, if Luo Qing Qing chose to push her strength to the Type 5 realm and fought with the Winged Race, they would definitely suffer.

Dorothy flew down and handed a bottle over to Luo Qing Qing, with a sincere, apologetic expression, "It was my fault! I'm sorry! Esteemed Storm Queen, this was all on me. It has nothing to do with the Winged Race. If you want revenge, after this, I will hand myself over to you. However, I hope that you can let it slide for now, and help our Winged Race."

Although Dorothy was not an ideal governor, her foresight was decent. With the critical situation at hand, if all of them could work together, there was a chance to avert this disaster. If it were just the Winged Race, then the dozens of Type 4 Prehistoric Monitor Lizards were enough to wipe them out.

Luo Qing Qing downed the contents of the vial in one go, feeling her energy return to her. She shot Dorothy a cold look while

speaking icily, "Don't worry, I'm not as stupid as you! I will help you, purely because the Winged Race is our ally. Our Storm Valley does not have the habit of betraying our allies!"

Immediately, Dorothy and the other various Elders felt a sense of shame.

"The battle is commencing!"

Dorothy quickly readjusted her emotions, and turned to the various Winged warriors and declared.

With that simple order, the various Winged warriors flapped their wings and left quickly to reorganize themselves and their troops.

In the city, each upper-class personnel was the leader of their own clan, because they were away, the rest of the warriors were caught unprepared and unorganized, that was why they were easily killed.

Once the leaders left, Yue Zhong swiftly came up to Dorothy and asked seriously, "Dorothy, are there any escape tunnels in your honeycomb city?"

This time, the Dino-army came prepared, Yue Zhong was not sure if there were any experts or trump cards they were prepared to utilize. If he could choose, he would rather flee.

Dorothy's eyes flashed as she replied bitterly, "No! We have never prepared anything of the sort!"

The entire honeycomb city was built up through the efforts of the Winged Race, and during the design process, they had not taken into consideration the possibility of needing an escape route.

Yue Zhong eyed the entrance and frowned as he cursed lowly, "Shit! So we can only attack? That's not such a good idea!"

Outside the cavern city, it was unknown how many Dino-people were lying in wait. Thinking about the possibility of facing another

Mid-Grade Dino-General caused his scalp to turn numb.

Right at this time, the genius Lai Wei came up to Yue Zhong, shooting him a disdainful look, "Coward, are you scared? Dying on the battlefield is a given for us warriors, especially when dying to protect our homeland. It is the greatest honor!"

Yue Zhong turned to her, "The problem is, this is not my home! Lai Wei, you're a soldier that belongs to me now! Your life is already not yours but mine. Unless you're intending to go back on our bet!"

Lai Wei's pupils narrowed slightly, as she stepped forward, a resolute look flashing by her eyes, "Yes! According to our agreement, I'm your subordinate. However, this is my country, I'm a warrior of the Winged Race. I have to fight for my country! If I survive today, I will follow your orders. As of now, I'm still a Winged Warrior!"

After that, she immediately flapped her wings and soared towards the frontlines.

Yue Zhong watched his prize flying off and shook his head slightly. With a flash, he swiftly leaped after her. Lai Wei was not controlled by the Puppet Rune after all and still possessed her own thinking and fighting will. To her, protecting her home was more important than the result of the bet between Yue Zhong and her.

Han Zi Xuan followed tightly behind Yue Zhong. She was no longer one of the Storm 8 Greats, instead, his personal guard.

At the frontlines, a Type 4 Monitor Lizard was destroying countless structures, at the same time, the Winged warriors were disappearing mysteriously.

As the leaders of the respective clans returned to their positions, many of their subordinates flew out from behind, swarming the skies.

"Release the arrows!!"

Following the orders of the respective leaders, arrows rained down upon the Mutant Beast.

Facing the torrential arrows, the Type 4 Monitor Lizard displayed its ferociousness. The arrows bounced off its scales, and while many of the arrows shot by the Type 2 Divine Warriors managed to pierce through the scales, yet, they were like toothpicks on its back. Some of the stronger ones fired off by the Type 3 Divine Warriors managed to penetrate the skin, drawing the slightest bit of blood.

However, it was not enough to cause any major harm to the beast. It was still sufficient to enrage it, as its body flashed and charged towards the Winged warrior forces at the speed of sound. Everywhere it went, a large patch of the Winged warriors would disappear mysteriously.

"Beast! Go to hell!!"

At this time, 10 Winged warriors in Storm Battle Armor charged their suit with the Type 3 Nuclei on their back, pushing their strength to the Type 4 realm, as they aimed their bow and arrows at the beast and let loose more arrows.

10 arrows shot out like fearsome laser beams, piercing through the eyes of the Monitor Lizard, causing it to burst open in a gory rain of blood and flesh. It was the first time being injured gravely.

Some of the elite warriors knew the weakness of these Monitor Lizards, which were their eyes. In fact, the eyes were one of the weaker spots among most Mutant Beasts.

The Type 4 Monitor Lizard began to struggle in agony, twisting its massive body as it continued to rampage throughout the city.

Just as the 10 elite Winged warriors wanted to charge forth to hunt another, a black torrent shot out towards them from one of the Monitor Lizards below.

They quickly scattered, however, 4 of them were just a beat

slower and were instantly wrapped by that black shape, turning into a puddle of liquid.

As for the remaining 6 elites who had just dispersed, one monitor lizard took the opportunity to pounce towards them.

Swish! Swish!

In barely a second, all of them disappeared without a trace.

"What a fast tongue!!"

Yue Zhong had caught sight of what happened and was shocked.

# Chapter 844: Morale!

---

The reason why the Winged warriors had been disappearing nearby the Monitor Lizards was because the speed of their tongues was extremely fast. In just a blink of an eye, their tongues could extend out and catch a number of Winged warriors into their mouths.

If it attacked suddenly, even Yue Zhong would not be able to evade that tongue. If a Type 5 Divine Warrior was caught unprepared, similarly, they would be dragged into its mouth.

"Lina!!!"

At this moment, a heartbreakingly scream rang out from the skies, as Lai Wei turned enraged and channeled the power of the Storm Armor, drawing her bow.

A single bone arrow shot through space, slamming into the Monitor Lizard, blasting a fist-sized hole in its body.

However, its recovery rate was extremely powerful. The wound started healing at a speed visible to the naked eye. It leaped up and swiftly pounced towards Lai Wei, shooting its tongue out at her.

Lai Wei's combat experience made her a fearful opponent. She had seen the terror of the tongue for herself, and the moment the Monitor Lizard moved, she had already soared upwards.

The Monitor Lizard felt its tongue smack thin air, it was the first time it had missed.

Lai Wei's expression was pale, she had nearly been pulled into the beast's mouth.

However, with her experience, she had made the correct call and quickly flew backward while firing non-stop at the Type 4 Monitor Lizard.

"Effective range: 200m. Method of attack: tongue, poison, body.

Its speed is fast. Lightning and Greenie would not be a match for it."

Yue Zhong observed quietly and made a quick assessment.

In such terrain, it was disadvantageous for Lightning and Greenie. If they were not careful, they could be held down by the tongue, and be corroded by the poisonous spit.

They were more compatible to fight in a wide area, bringing with them the element of surprise. These Monitor Lizards were their banes.

"Come on out! Turtle!"

With a thought, Yue Zhong activated his Beast Summoning Technique. A void appeared in mid-air, and the house-sized Turtle lumbered out.

The moment Turtle appeared, it quickly shot out a huge breath of frosty air towards the Monitor Lizard.

The Monitor Lizard's response was slightly slower and it was quickly frozen solid into an ice sculpture.

Yue Zhong shot forward, dashing towards the Monitor Lizard like a lightning bolt.

The Monitor Lizard had an immense strength and resilient life force as well. It shuddered strongly, causing the ice around it to crack, as countless parts broke off.

At the moment the ice shattered, Yue Zhong, who was in his light-gold Sun Armor, his strength pushed to the peak of Type 5 Realm, appeared on top of the Monitor Lizard's head, the Sun Battle Spear in his hands striking down viciously.

A bright burst of gold light shone outwards, piercing the head of the Mutant Beast, tearing it apart.

The Sun Battle Spear could utilize the energy from the user to become a powerful burst to attack enemies. However, while its

might was tremendous, the energy consumption was likewise extravagant. If he continued like this, it would take another 10 times for his might to be depleted.

"Strong!"

"That was the human Yue Zhong! He's truly strong!"

"Powerful!!"

"We can win!! With him, we definitely can win!!"

"..."

Seeing how Yue Zhong destroyed the seemingly invincible Type 4 Monitor Lizard in a flash, the morale of the Winged Race soared from the depths of despair. They began to recover the will to fight. It was the whole point of Yue Zhong not holding back his energy to put on such a display.

Without any morale, most troops that had lost hope would find it hard to even fight with 70% or 80% of their strength. With a little hope, together with the notion of fighting for their home, these Winged warriors would be able to exert 120%.

Yue Zhong looked at Lai Wei in the skies and barked, "Go deal with the Dino-people! Let me handle these monsters!"

By now, a large number of Dino-warriors had also charged in right behind the Mutant Beasts. They were aiming to slaughter those missed by the Monitor Lizards.

After Yue Zhong's display of strength, all the Winged warriors regained their confidence and focus, instantly adjusting their emotions and charging for the Dino-warriors.

Arrows rained down upon the Dino-warriors without stop. These Dino-warriors only had Type 3 Divine Warrior strength, their bodies covered with Type 3 or Type 4 Mutant Beast hide. They were naturally struck down by the rain of arrows.

These Winged warriors had incredible archery skills, and

although they were unable to deal much damage to those Type 4 Monitor Lizards, it was mainly due to the recovery skills of the beasts. Therefore, they were more effective against the weaker Dino-warriors.

As for the Dino-warriors themselves, they were elite warriors as well, retrieving their own bows and arrows to return fire on the Winged warriors.

The dense rain of arrows fell upon both sides, every passing second, another warrior would be killed.

With a powerful gust of cold air, another Monitor Lizard was frozen solid. Yue Zhong dashed forward onto the top of the ice sculpture, using his Sun Battle Spear to strike down viciously, piercing the head and absorbing the powerful life force.

At this moment, a sense of danger arose in Yue Zhong's heart. All of a sudden, a nearby Monitor Lizard appeared, opening its jaws to fire out its tongue towards him.

The speed of the Monitor Lizard was simply too fast. Even with his enhanced Type 5 realm, Yue Zhong was unable to dodge in time. Caught by the tongue, he was pulled quickly into the mouth of the Monitor Lizard.

# Chapter 845: Survival from Danger!

---

The teeth of the Type 4 Prehistoric Monitor Lizards were extremely sharp, even a Type 5 Divine Warrior would be crushed to a pulp.

Even at that critical point, Yue Zhong maintained his calm and gathered his energy into the Battle Spear in his right hand. With all his might, he thrust towards the Monitor Lizard, causing a powerful golden radiance to burst out, slamming into the head of the beast, directly penetrating it.

Following its death, its mighty jaws began to close and the sharp teeth also came down towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong flipped his hands and a Type 4 Nucleus energy shield appeared, glowing brightly as it conjured a powerful shield out of thin air.

This energy shield was precisely the efforts of one of the new Storm 8 Greats, Phoenina.

The teeth of the Type 4 Monitor Lizard came slamming down on the shield, causing it to shudder slightly. However, they could not penetrate the shield.

Yue Zhong then swung his Battle Spear, slashing the tongue apart. He then dashed out of the mouth.

"Watch out!! Yue Zhong!!"

The moment he leaped out the mouth, Luo Qing Qing's shout traveled from the sky.

Yue Zhong felt an intense sense of danger and he twisted his body.

At that instant, a frightening salvo of arrows pierced through the sky, slamming into Yue Zhong. They ripped through the Sun Battle Armor, going through his body, causing him to soar slightly

into the sky.

A Low-Grade Dino-General eyed Yue Zhong coldly while wielding his bow. That salvo of arrows was precisely fired by him. His accuracy was terrifying, and he was considered a top-notch archer in the Stegosaurus Kingdom. Many Type 5 Divine Warriors of other races and species had fallen at his hands. He was one of the experts that had joined on the expedition this time.

"Go to hell! Monster!!"

As the Low-Grade Dino-General was about to fire another salvo, Luo Qing Qing swooped down on him, her body covered by numerous wind blades. The storm immediately buffeted the Low-Grade Dino-General.

The Low-Grade Dino-General had his fair share of battles and with a tap of his foot, he retreated backward. He lifted his bow to slam into the Storm Battle Spear of Luo Qing Qing.

After donning the equipment, Luo Qing Qing was at a Type 5 realm. Her skills and powers were at a different level. With a flash of her spear, it thrust out in a series of after-shadows, disappearing from the sight of the Low-Grade Dino-General. The next moment, it suddenly pierced through his heart mysteriously, as countless wind blades exploded from the point of impact, slicing the Low-Grade Dino-General up into many pieces.

The Dino-people had stronger physiques and a regenerative power compared to humans. That was why Luo Qing Qing knew the best choice was to slice up their bodies before they could regenerate.

Luo Qing Qing had just killed the Low-Grade Dino-General when the other 18 of them let out howls of anguish and charged over.

The Low-Grade Dino-Generals had witnessed Luo Qing Qing's strength, that was why they chose to team up to deal with her. Every one of them had the strength of a peak-Type 4 Divine

Warrior, while the best among them was half-step into the Type 5 realm. With all 18 of them working together, even a Type 5 Divine Warrior would find it hard to beat them.

Luo Qing Qing turned her gaze to them, her eyes flashing with a powerful desire to battle. With a tap of her foot, she directly charged towards 3 of them, intending to deal with them first.

The moment she moved, a number of powerful wind blades blew out around her, tearing the Dino-warriors into pieces. At that moment, on the battlefield, she showcased her true strength as the Storm Queen.

On the other side, Yue Zhong had been flung a distance away, bleeding badly.

Below him, 3 Type 4 Monitor Lizards dashed forward with all their speed, pouncing towards him. They opened their jaws and shot out their powerful and fast tongues.

In mid-air, a large void appeared, as White Bones leaped out, turning into an orb of light that enveloped Yue Zhong, becoming a sharp bone carapace.

The 3 tongues came swirling around Yue Zhong's body. In response, the bone blades on the bone carapace started to twist and grind, slicing up the tongues in a shower of blood.

Having their tongues broken, the 3 Mutant Beasts quickly retracted them, their eyes revealing a pained expression. Their tongue was their main tool for hunting prey. Even smaller Type 5 Divine Warriors could die in their mouths. Now that the tongues were destroyed, they were filled with fury towards Yue Zhong.

The 3 of them opened their stinky mouths and fired out poison towards Yue Zhong.

At the same time, on the frontlines, many Dino-warriors had raised their bows and were firing non-stop at Yue Zhong, their arrows raining down like water drops.

Yue Zhong's act of dealing with the 3 previous Monitor Lizards had caught the attention of the Dino-warriors, that was why they immediately focused fire on him.

The Type 4 Mutant Beasts were ferocious and violent, a preferred killing tool utilized often by the Dino-people. They were more important than how tanks and fighter jets were important on Earth. Having lost 3 to Yue Zhong, these Dino-warriors were enraged.

In mid-air, Yue Zhong had no way of evading. He could only activate his Gravity Manipulation and increase his weight by 8 times, his entire body descending downwards like a huge boulder.

Since the sky was filled with arrows, even as Yue Zhong was plummeting towards the ground, a huge number of arrows still landed on him.

Every one of the Dino-warriors had the strength of a peak-Type 3 Divine Warrior, their arrows made out of powerful Mutant Beast bones.

The fearsome arrows managed to pierce through parts of his bone carapace, before being stopped by the Sun Battle Armor.

However, the arrows still managed to bring with them a powerful force that was not weaker than the impact of a rocket, causing Yue Zhong's insides to shudder and his body wracked with pain. Fortunately, his Endurance was high, together with his Body of Steel, he was not too gravely injured. Even so, he suffered some pain.

With that move, he managed to dodge the 3 poison spit. Unfortunately, they landed on some Winged warriors nearby, and the affected Wing warriors immediately screamed out miserably as their bodies started to corrode.

The strength of the Monitor Lizards' poison was terrifying. Just the slightest bit of contact could kill a person. It was truly

overbearing.

Dozens of arrows landed on Yue Zhong, making him look like a porcupine. With his Gravity Manipulation still in effect, he continued plunging towards the ground.

The moment he landed, a Low-Grade Dino-General appeared in front of him, sending out a powerful fist. He wanted to slam Yue Zhong back up into the sky. His fellow comrades would then be able to fire continuously to kill him.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and without holding back, he sent a powerful slap enveloped by Devil Flames towards the Low-Grade Dino-General.

The Low-Grade Dino-General was too close to Yue Zhong, and without any time to defend himself, he was consumed by the flames. He began to wail and struggle amidst the pain, while his Radiance of Life glowed to protect himself.

Yue Zhong's Battle Spear shot out like a dangerous dragon, piercing the head of the Low-grade Dino-General, allowing a large amount of Life Force to enter Yue Zhong's body through the God and Devil Imprint. It instantly calmed the turbulent blood and energy, at the same time, regenerating a little of his Stamina.

He flipped his left hand and the Electromagnetic Gun appeared. With a tap of his foot, he charged towards one of the Monitor Lizards, firing out multiple beams towards the numerous Dino-warriors gathering towards him.

Since his Firearms Manipulation had been pushed to the Second Order, his accuracy was multiple times better than any sharpshooter from before the Apocalypse on Earth. Within a hundred meters, as long as any Dino-Warrior had not utilized its max speed, they would be killed instantly by Yue Zhong.

The Winged Race was also helping to suppress the Dino-warriors from up in the skies.

In a few breaths, Yue Zhong had appeared in front of the Type 4 Monitor Lizard. The beast had its tongue destroyed earlier and it immediately charged towards Yue Zhong.

With a glint in his eyes, Yue Zhong aimed at the beast and fired multiple times.

The Electromagnetic beams were fired at its eyes, and one managed to blast it apart, as blood and matter splattered out on the ground.

Yue Zhong's speed was extremely fast; before the Type 4 Monitor Lizard had a chance to react, he had already fired through the other eye in a mad salvo.

Under the barrage of beams, the other eye also burst apart, as blood flowed out in a gory manner.

# Chapter 846: Dino-General Ku Feng!

---

After destroying both eyes of the Type 4 Monitor Lizard, Yue Zhong swiftly turned and dashed towards another direction.

To kill a single beast like that, with his current enhanced strength, it would take a huge amount of energy through the Battle Spear just to kill in one blast. However, it took up too much energy, and with such a method, Yue Zhong would be left exhausted after doing it 10 times.

Once he left, the Monitor Lizard let out howls of pain and fury, twisting its body around maniacally, crushing a number of unfortunate Dino-warriors nearby it.

In the skies, Lai Wei barked, "Don't attack the blinded Type 4 Monitor Lizard! Attack those damn Dino-warriors!!"

Those blinded Monitor Lizards were no longer a threat to the Winged Race for the time being. Instead, they became obstacles for the Dino-Warriors, slamming into them during their rampage.

Yue Zhong appeared in front of another Type 4 Monitor Lizard in a few breaths, in response, the Monitor Lizard also dashed towards him.

Yue Zhong cocked his Electromagnetic Gun and borrowed the enhanced speed of his Type 5 realm to fire at both its eyes.

After destroying them, he dashed off towards the remaining Monitor Lizard whose tongue had been sliced by him earlier. Utilizing the increase in speed, he also dealt with its eyes smoothly.

When he was done, he made his way towards the other Monitor Lizards which were still largely uninjured. One of them suddenly opened its mouth to shoot its tongue at him.

In response, Yue Zhong made use of the bone blades of the carapace to twist once more, slicing the tongue up as blood splattered everywhere.

At this moment, the Monitor Lizard suddenly fired a poisonous spit towards Yue Zhong.

His face turned drastically, summoning the energy shield once more in front of him.

The terrifying poisonous spit landed on his shield and emitted sizzling sounds. The poison was so strong to even corrode the energy shield produced.

The beast then seized the chance to pounce on Yue Zhong, opening its jaws wide to bite down viciously.

Other than the tongue, the bite of these Monitor Lizards was also terrifying, containing a tremendous bite force, coupled with its natural agility, few prey ever survived such attacks.

Yue Zhong tapped his foot immediately after the poison was spit onto the shield, retreating backward explosively. He knew the danger of tackling the Type 4 Monitor Lizards at close range, and if not careful, he could also be killed instantly.

The Type 4 Monitor Lizard clamped down on thin air.

Yue Zhong's pupils constricted and fired out a few more electromagnetic beams with his gun, blasting the eyes of the Monitor Lizard.

"Watch out! Sir Yue Zhong! Beneath you!!"

At this moment, Han Zi Xuan's scream sounded out. She was currently pushing the limits of her Storm Armor with the Type 4 Nucleus to engage the Dino-Warriors in combat. She had been dispatching them with some ease.

"Below? Shit!"

Sweeping his gaze, Yue Zhong realized that his surroundings had already been covered in the poisonous spit of the Type 4 Monitor Lizard. In fact, one of his foot was covered with it, and there was poisonous fog rising, a result of his soles being corroded.

With a thought, 2 balls of Devil Flames appeared at his feet, instantly burning the poison.

"Watch out!"

Right at this time, Han Zi Xuan let out another piercing scream in anxiety.

Yue Zhong felt his Danger Perception ringing incessantly, and he shot out 2 bone spikes to send himself up to the skies.

A shadow suddenly bolted out of nowhere, sweeping a kick towards the spikes, crushing the bones.

Yue Zhong raised his hands to fire a spider silk from his ring, latching on to a honeycomb structure. He then retracted the silk, pulling himself towards there, while sweeping his gaze below. He discovered a Dino-General with the visage and aura of a demon, covered entirely in sharp bone spikes, and a layer of black spikes. The Dino-General was charging towards him, his fist punching out at a terrifying speed towards Yue Zhong's heart.

That punch had no glow or special abilities attached, it was just pure speed, so fast that even Yue Zhong at his enhanced Type 5 realm could not evade!

"Mid-Grade Dino-General!!"

Yue Zhong's face fell, his eyes flashing with a fierce glint. He pushed his might, enveloping the Battle Spear in his arms and thrust out towards the incoming Dino-General. He wanted to use the tactic of causing mutual harm to fight it out with this Dino-General.

Every single Mid-Grade Dino-General had at least a peak-Type 5 Divine Warrior strength. It was because they were the strongest race on this planet, and had an advantageous physique. In terms of body constitution, they were even above the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires of the 2nd World.

Yue Zhong was not a match for such freaks. Although he had

crawled through countless battles with zombies and beasts, these Dino-Generals were a different story altogether. They had gone on multiple conquests throughout the lands, their battle experience not losing out to Yue Zhong, in fact maybe even surpassing his. Only by risking his life would there be a chance to survive.

The eyes of the Mid-Grade Dino-General flashed coldly, as his Radiance of Life shone out, while he twisted at an impossible angle, dodging that critical strike of Yue Zhong. At the same time, he swung his tail to slam viciously into Yue Zhong's body, causing him to shoot back, smashing through the honeycomb structures.

With that single strike, Yue Zhong felt his chest area compressed as he spat out a mouthful of blood. His expression was pale, and his inner organs were in turmoil. The bone carapace was shattered in many areas, but fortunately, it had helped negate some part of the force, protecting the Sun Battle Armor. However, there was still a long, powerful gash right smack in the middle.

"Shit! That was painful! To think that there would be a Mid-Grade Dino-General."

Yue Zhong coughed out a few more mouthfuls of blood, thoughts flitting through his mind.

Hong!

With a loud boom, the Mid-Grade Dino-General had destroyed the wall of the honeycomb building and leaped in. His gaze immediately fixed upon Yue Zhong lying in a pool of his blood, and he dashed forwards without any mercy, throwing another punch towards Yue Zhong's heart.

The punch pierced through the chest of Yue Zhong, causing him to disperse into dust.

Beside the Mid-Grade Dino-General, the real body of Yue Zhong had been in Stealth, thrusting viciously with his Sun Battle Spear.

"Clone! Ability to hide in the shadows! You are Yue Zhong of the

Vulture Valley?! You beast, you killed 20 of our Stegosaurus Kingdom's Dino-Generals. Very good, today I will tear you apart, using your blood to pay respects to my fallen brothers!! Remember, the one to kill you is called Ku Feng!!"

Ku Feng's eyes flashed viciously as he grabbed onto the Sun Battle Spear.

At that moment, Yue Zhong let go of it, causing the Battle Spear to be knocked away violently.

Yue Zhong seized that chance to enter within range, his fist covered with Devil Flames to punch out at Ku Feng's heart.

Ku Feng's gaze turned cold as he slashed out without losing his calm towards Yue Zhong's right arm.

The Devil Flame burst forth with more intensity.

"You're a Flame-based controller, this I already know. Seal for me!!"

With a loud bellow, the Radiance of Life from his body burst forth, enveloping the Devil Flames, pushing it back, before he clamped down violently.

With a loud crack, the bones of Yue Zhong's right arm were instantly shattered from the force of Ku Feng's grip.

Although Yue Zhong was considered a top-expert among humans, his physique astonishing and powerful, against these Dino-warriors who were even more freakish, he was still far off.

"Go to hell!!"

Since he gained the upper hand, Ku Feng let out a savage smile and tugged on Yue Zhong's right arm towards himself.

Yue Zhong's pupils constricted as a powerful blast of Devil Flame burst outwards from his body, before transforming into a flame dragon that enveloped around Ku Feng.

Ever since the Devil Flame was pushed to the Third Order, Yue

Zhong's control over it had become extremely minute, its might had also increased by leaps and bounds.

Ku Feng stared at Yue Zhong, enveloped by the Devil Flames, and laughed coldly, before flinging him forcefully towards a wall.

Yue Zhong slammed into the wall, suppressing his pain as he fired out another flame dragon towards Ku Feng.

With a cold chuckle, Ku Feng disappeared from his position suddenly.

Yue Zhong felt alarmed and twisted around, his gaze sweeping the area. All of a sudden, a sense of danger welled up, and he quickly leaped to one side while curling his body tightly.

At the same moment, a powerful arrow shot out from a particular corner, slamming into his left shoulder with the force of a comet strike, directly piercing through his bone carapace, Sun Battle Armor, even the Type 5 Mutant Beast scale armor. After the 3-fold defense, it directly tore through Yue Zhong's Body of Steel, piercing into his bone, and shattered his left shoulder.

In the corner, Ku Feng was wielding his bow, his gaze cold. It was him who had shot that arrow. Against a fire-attribute expert like Yue Zhong, close quarter combat was disadvantageous. Thus, he had relied on his powerful archery skills to assault Yue Zhong. Among the Mid-Grade Dino-Generals, he was considered one of the best, having shot and killed a Type 5 Mutant Beast before.

# Chapter 847: Killing Ku Feng!

---

Yue Zhong rolled on the ground in agony, towards a building behind, as he hurried to activate his Second Order Stealth. In the blink of an eye, his aura disappeared.

The Stealth skill was extremely useful in battle. As long as Yue Zhong left the sight of Ku Feng, he could quickly make use of it together with his Shadow Clone ability to confuse his enemies.

Yue Zhong darted into the honeycomb structure, flipping his hands and laying a few remote-controlled bombs noiselessly at the various corners.

The humans of the 2nd World were versed in acts of terrorism, utilizing such means to attack the Saint Clan. Since their personal strength was lacking, making use of such explosives, they had dealt with some Type 4 Saint Clan members before.

With a tap of his foot, Ku Feng dashed towards the direction where Yue Zhong was last at. In a few breaths, he charged right into the honeycomb structure. He had already deemed Yue Zhong a must-kill target, at the same time, his strength was vastly superior to Yue Zhong, thus, he was not afraid of whatever means Yue Zhong might employ.

At the moment he entered, he suddenly felt danger, and he raised both hands to protect his head.

Hong!! Hong!!

Powerful explosions happened right in front of him, as the shockwaves and force enveloped him entirely.

Having gained an advantage, Yue Zhong did not dare stay, quickly turned around to flee the area.

Ku Feng was too powerful as a Mid-Grade Dino-General, and Yue Zhong did not think that he was capable of blasting this freak to death with just some explosives.

Before the dust could settle, a powerful figure loomed and dashed out of the area of impact. It was precisely Ku Feng. The powerful explosions that could cause even an armored vehicle to be blasted into bits and pieces only managed to cause some small wounds on him. His body was charred black, but there was no real harm done.

"Damn freak!!"

Yue Zhong eyed the uninjured Ku Feng and could not help but curse. It was likely that only these Dino-warriors were able to resist the impact of explosions and blasts without any damage. If it were him who was caught in such a frightening display of explosives, he would have been injured gravely as well.

Ku Feng's speed was incredibly disgusting. The explosions barely did anything to slow him down. He had almost leaped out right after the explosions, appearing in front of Yue Zhong, sending out a powerful punch.

Yue Zhong immediately covered his body with the thick, Dark Dou Qi. He threw out a slap of his own with all his might.

Ku Feng's tyrannical strength burst forth at that instant, sending Yue Zhong flying once more through another honeycomb structure.

He spat out another mouthful of blood, before pulling himself together to summon 3 Shadow Clones that separated in various directions.

With a cold glint, Ku Feng pulled out a handful of metal balls and threw them at all 4 Yue Zhongs, shooting towards them like cannonballs.

3 of them instantly disintegrated when struck, while the remaining true body was sent flying once more.

Ku Feng had a cold, mocking look, as he shot towards Yue Zhong in a beam of light.

Yue Zhong made use of the surrounding buildings to weave in

and out, trying his best to shake off Ku Feng. However, despite his best efforts, the Dino-General was approaching ever so slowly.

"Ku Feng! Today will be your death day!"

After passing another 2 structures, Yue Zhong suddenly came to a stop, his eyes flashing coldly as he turned around. He then pressed down on a remote control.

Hong! Hong!

Following 2 loud explosions, Ku Feng was directly enveloped by the 2 planted explosives.

"Just with your broken toys? If you want to hurt me, you'll require at least a Type 2 Energy Bomb. These toys are too backward!! Fool!!"

In the huge cloud of dust, Ku Feng continued to dash towards Yue Zhong like a demon.

"If the explosives are useless, what about these?"

With a fierce glint in his eyes, Yue Zhong flung his right hand, as a powerful Devil Flame dragon shot towards Ku Feng.

"Stupid! Your control over fire is too weak!!"

Ku Feng looked at the Devil Flame dragon coiling towards his heart and laughed coldly. He tapped his foot and appeared to the right, easily dodging the strike.

Right at this time, a green shadow shot out from behind Ku Feng, the Storm Battle Spear in her hands gathered with energy, thrusting towards him. If it hit, even a Type 5 Peak Divine Warrior would be heavily injured.

"Storm Queen Luo Qing Qing, I never thought that as a ruler of a faction, you would resort to such petty tricks. You've really opened my eyes!"

Ku Feng swept his gaze towards the green shadow, twisting his body and lowered it to the ground. His right leg then came kicking

at the Storm Battle Spear with a powerful force.

With that attack, the Storm Battle Spear was sent flying, while a powerful green energy beam shot to the sky, causing a deep hole in the mountain cavern.

At the same time, there was a strange change in Ku Feng's body. His tail that was covered with sharp spikes swung towards Luo Qing Qing's body, piercing through the Storm Battle Armor, slashing into her skin, and sending her flying dozens of meters backward. A large amount of fresh blood flowed from her wounds, and she looked miserable.

The Dino-people was one of the terrifying races with powerful combat skills among all the intelligent life forms that Yue Zhong had come across. Furthermore, on top of the Stegosaurus Kingdom, there was the other Tyrannosaurus Kingdom, Venatosaurus Kingdom, and various other Dino-races. These were existences that far surpassed the humans, even a peak Type 5 Divine Warrior from the human race might not necessarily survive a battle with a Dino-General of the same realm.

Afar, Han Zi Xuan's eyes turned extremely red, as she borrowed the power from the Storm Battle Armor to boost her strength, forcefully raising it to the Type 5 realm. She then unleashed her ice abilities, as a powerful freezing field covered Ku Feng.

Everywhere the freezing aura touched, they would turn to ice sculptures. Her moment of attack had been at the same time as Luo Qing Qing, thus when Luo Qing Qing was sent flying away with a kick, the terrifying freezing field had blown towards Ku Feng.

At that instant, Ku Feng was enveloped in ice, his whole body turning into an ice sculpture. The layer of ice was still thickening.

"Break for me!!"

With an angry bellow, a bright burst shone from his body, his Radiance of Life forcefully shattering the ice. Even the Type 5 ice

energy was unable to keep him sealed for long.

The moment he shook off the residual ice, Han Zi Xuan stared with her eyes bloodshot, when suddenly, her body began to tear in multiple areas, as blood splattered everywhere. She then crumpled to the floor.

Han Zi Xuan was after all a peak-Type 3 Divine Warrior, after fighting beside Yue Zhong, she had fortunately raised her strength to the Type 4 realm. However, as she had just advanced not too long ago, she was still unused to her new condition, and could not maintain the Type 5 strength at all. Therefore, after unleashing a move, she was struck by the powerful backlash.

Ku Feng had broken away from the terrifying freezing field, but some of the cold had seeped into his body, slowing his movements a little.

Suddenly, another green shadow shot towards him, pouncing with force.

"Type 4 Mutant Beast!"

Ku Feng eyed the sudden appearance of Greenie and his face fell. His body once again shone with the Radiance of Life, while he tumbled to the side, barely dodging Greenie's claws.

One of the targets of Ku Feng and his troops sent here to the Winged Race city was Yue Zhong. They hated him to the bones for killing multiple of their fellow commanders. At the same time, they had researched into his abilities, knowing that he possessed a Type 4 Green Eagle. That was how Ku Feng could maintain his wariness and dodge such a strike from Greenie.

He did a roll, when suddenly, a shadow charged out from a building like a specter, opening its huge jaws towards him.

It was precisely another one of Yue Zhong's pets, the Type 4 Lightning, whose speed had surpassed Ku Feng, and adding on to the element of surprise, Ku Feng did not manage to evade and was

bitten viciously on the leg.

The sharp teeth of Lightning pierced through Ku Feng's right leg, while it sent a powerful swipe towards his head.

Ku Feng was indeed tough and clear-headed. Even at a critical moment, his body burst out with a controlled Radiance of Life, and he forcefully severed his own right leg. His body then rolled to one side, swinging his tail towards Lightning's claws. That blow forced Lightning's claws away, at the same time, the sharp bone blades dug into its flesh, tearing huge wounds. Fresh blood burst out in splashes.

Lightning roared in agony and was knocked back.

As an Agility-based Mutant Beast, its Strength could not compare with some large Type 4 Mutant Beasts, however, it was still stronger than most Type 5 Divine Warriors. And yet, Ku Feng was able to send it sprawling away. This showed how overbearing his strength was.

Ku Feng himself rolled away, as Yue Zhong dashed over, his spear thrusting towards him.

Ku Feng's eyes flashed, as he grabbed the ground and whirled once, his sharp bone spikes slashing through Yue Zhong.

"Clone?!"

The Yue Zhong then crumbled, and Ku Feng was shocked. At that moment, the Sun Battle Spear shot out explosively from the sides, directly piercing through Ku Feng's body, as a powerful radiance burst out.

The moment he gained the upper hand, Yue Zhong shot forwards without hesitation, sending his Battle Spear through Ku Feng's head, directly removing it with a powerful slap.

# Chapter 848: Type 5 Metamorphosis!

---

With Ku Feng's death, a large amount of life force entered Yue Zhong's body. When the pure Type 5 energy coursed through him, it combined together with the God-Devil Nucleus that was constantly spinning and absorbing energy, slowly transforming it and making it bigger. Its size increased by a large amount.

The God-Devil Nucleus had just increased in size when a number of golden rays shone out, enhancing the various parts of Yue Zhong's body, down to the very minute cells.

"Congratulations, you have broken through, and are starting the Type 5 Metamorphosis. Once you are done transforming, you will become a Type 5 Divine Warrior. The Metamorphosis would take 24 hours, in this 24 hours, please do not use external tools to forcefully enter the Type 5 realm, otherwise, you might cause the metamorphosis to fail."

The system announcement rang in his mind.

"Type 5! I am finally going to become a Type 5 Divine Warrior!!"

When Yue Zhong heard that notification, he was filled with ecstasy, almost leaping into the skies with excitement

In this cruel world, the Type 4 Divine Warriors were still not considered true experts. Only when one was a Type 5 Divine Warrior would there be a chance to shine on the stage.

As for the human race, the Type 5 realm was an unreachable plateau, even Luo Qing Qing, the outstanding leader of the powerful Storm Valley faction was still merely at the peak of Type 4. As for Yue Zhong, although he lacked the resources, combat experience and skills compared to her, he had finally broken through the critical bottleneck.

This was mainly due to the God and Devil Imprint on him, without it, he could not have absorbed the life force from his

defeated enemies, and would not evolve so quickly.

Remembering his status, he quickly calmed his emotions down, and flashed towards Han Zi Xuan, hugging her gently.

Han Zi Xuan was covered in blood, her face pale as she laid in Yue Zhong's arms. Her expression was one of relief, helplessness, and even joy when she saw Yue Zhong, smiling, "Sir! I'm sorry! Zi Xuan... is unable to carry out her promise... to serve you any longer!!"

Forcefully utilizing a strength that did not belong to oneself would ultimately cause a backlash. Yue Zhong had thus only pushed his strength to the peak of Type 5 realm. However, he would just suffer some minor injuries. This was because he would only utilize the bodily enhancement to fight.

"When you entered the agreement with me, you'll have to uphold it for life! I want you to live, you can't die!!"

With a flip of his hand, the fresh blood of the Type 9 Divine Warrior appeared in his hands. He pulled Han Zi Xuan's lips open and dripped 3 drops into her mouth.

The moment those 3 drops were ingested, a powerful Vitality and life force began to course through her body, healing her body at a visible rate.

"White Bones, go take her to the back!"

With a thought, White Bones disengaged from his bone carapace form, turning into a fragile skeleton that was riddled with injuries save for its legs.

White Bones nodded and carried Han Zi Xuan. With a single move, it grabbed the corpse of Ku Feng and dashed to the backend of the battle.

As he leaped, Ku Feng's corpse began to soften, turning into a pile of rubbery meat. His bones had been completely absorbed by White Bones.

The moment White Bones left, Yue Zhong turned and noticed Luo Qing Qing covered in blood, still battling the Dino-warriors in her Storm Armor.

She was not utilizing her abilities over the tornadoes, instead, purely using her spear techniques and strength to deal with the Dino-warriors. Each time she struck out with her multiple spear shadows, a Dino-warrior would find his heart pierced. She looked extremely ferocious and seemingly unaffected by her own injuries.

In a breath, over dozens of Dino-warriors had fallen at her spear. If it had been any human enemies, they would have long since lost their confidence and fled.

However, these Dino-warriors were different. The more ferocious she was, the fiercer their counterattack. They gathered together, and 14 of them lunged towards her.

At that moment, a salvo of arrows soared through the sky, buffeting the Dino-warriors.

It was precisely the aerial support troops covering Luo Qing Qing. With their help, she had routed a long way to launch a sneak attack of the dino-warriors.

After using her Storm Battle Spear to kill another 30 dino-warriors, her body suddenly glowed once, as her face turned pale, and she spat out a mouthful of blood.

Ku Feng was, after all, a peak-Type 5 Divine Warrior. When its attack had slammed into her body, her physique that could not compare to Yue Zhong had already suffered great injuries. Due to her rampage, it had aggravated her injuries.

One Dino-warrior roared out, "She's injured! Kill her!! Kill this damn human!!"

Luo Qing Qing eyed the 30-over Dino-warriors surrounding her, as their gazes flashed savagely and they pounced.

A cold look flashed past her eyes, as she readied her spear, and

began to unleash a torrent of counterattacks.

The Storm Battle Spear continued to flicker in and out of the light, slaying a Dino-Warrior each time it appeared.

"Strong! This is truly the Storm Queen, she's amazing!!"

In the skies, the Winged Race saw how Luo Qing Qing was tearing through her enemies like a tiger through sheep. They were truly filled with shock.

Those female warriors knew the strength of the Dino-Warriors. The Winged Race had the advantage of the skies and had fired countless shots. And yet, they had only killed a dozen Dino-warriors. Those who could truly hold their own against the Dino-warriors might only be one or two of them. Also, only those Type 3 Winged warriors could possibly fire an accurate shot to kill a Dino-warrior.

Furthermore, those Dino-warriors were also firing at the Winged Race, and their 70% accuracy rate was even more terrifying, killing various Winged warriors. Some of them died instantly on impact when plunging to the ground.,

The Winged Race might have the advantage in their home, however, since the start of the battle till now, the number of Winged people that died at the hands of the Dino-warriors far surpassed the Dino-warriors that perished.

In a few breaths, Luo Qing Qing had killed another 30 Dino-warriors.

One Low-Grade Dino-General appeared before her, sending a powerful fist towards her heart.

Luo Qing Qing raised her spear in response, thrusting out in a series of profound movements, causing the spear to disappear, before piercing towards the heart.

The Low-Grade Dino-General had a fierce glint in his eyes, as he roared out in rage, his body bursting forth with the Radiance of

Life. He did not evade or dodge, instead choosing to receive the blow while continuing his punch towards her. He was planning to die together with her.

These Dino-warriors were truly not afraid of death, and brutal in nature. They had no concern for their own lives, unlike humans.

At the same time, 6 Low-Grade Dino-Generals were rushing over, if Luo Qing Qing were to retreat, they would reach her and unleash a powerful attack.

Her eyes flashed with a ferocious glint, as the Storm Battle Spear penetrated the heart of the Low-Grade Dino-General in front of her. With force, she destroyed the heart in one go.

Under the protection of the Radiance of Life, although the Low-Grade Dino-General sacrificed his heart, his fist continued to slam into Luo Qing Qing's body, tearing apart her Storm Battle Armor, leaving a deep gash on her.

The Storm Battle Spear flicked upwards, causing the corpse of the Low-Grade Dino-General to be sent flying. However, her chest felt compressed, and her body was wracked with a sharp pain. She then coughed out another mouthful of blood, as she felt a wave of weakness, her body almost crumpling to the ground.

Luo Qing Qing grabbed the Storm Battle Spear and stuck it forcefully on the ground, supporting her body weight from falling.

2 Low-Grade Dino-Generals saw this and immediately pulled out their bows, aiming at her. 2 powerful bone-arrows that could pierce through even the hulls of tanks were fired at Luo Qing Qing's heart and head.

"Am I about to die?"

Luo Qing Qing supported herself on the spear, while blood trickled down the corners of her mouth. She eyed the 2 incoming arrows, her eyes a look of peace and pity. She had killed an unknown number of Dino-warriors and was certain that one day,

she would also be killed in battle.

Although she could see the arrows coming at her, her body could not muster any strength. She had been kicked viciously by Ku Feng earlier, and in truth, her body was incredibly hurt. She had managed to hold out for so long because of the Storm Battle Armor. The physique of humans was still weaker compared to other intelligent life forms.

"No!! Your Majesty!!"

On the other side, Hai Xi let out a scream, she had just killed 2 Dino-Warriors, and was currently held down by 9 others, and could not leave.

Just as Luo Qing Qing was about to be killed by the 2 arrows, a shadow flitted past her, blocking in front with a large energy shield.

The 2 arrows bounced off when they struck the shield.

Luo Qing Qing looked at the man who had saved her life, speaking with an uncontrollable hint of resentment, "You're finally willing to come, Yue Zhong?"

She had seen Yue Zhong approaching Han Zi Xuan first instead of her after killing Ku Feng. This caused her to be filled with a strange, upset feeling that she did not comprehend. That was why she had started to go on a rampage without care for her injuries.

"Is this how you treat your savior? Drink this! It can help your injuries! Thanks for your help earlier!"

With a flip of his hand, a glass vial with a drop of the Type 9 Divine Warrior blood was passed to her, and he pulled out his Electromagnetic Gun, firing multiple beams at the Low-Grade Dino-Generals and Dino-Warriors.

Under the multiple blasts, the heads of the Dino-people were all split apart, as they turned into headless corpses. Some of them managed to dodge and dispersed. The electromagnetic beams were

able to penetrate the bodies of the Dino-Generals, however, their speed was fast, therefore, it was harder to hit them.

When the Type 9 Divine Warrior's blood entered Luo Qing Qing's mouth, a powerful life force coursed through her body, regenerating her broken parts. Her pale countenance also regained some color. She looked at Yue Zhong who stood in front of her like a sturdy rock, focusing fire on the Dino-warriors and felt a strange emotion.

He continued to kill them while speaking solemnly, "Let's retreat! We're not their match right now!"

She eyed the droves of Low-Grade Dino-Generals and replied, "Even if we want to, they will not let us go!"

There were a dozen Low-Grade Dino-Generals charging towards them. If they joined forces, even Type 5 Divine Warriors would find it hard to deal with them. After all, these freaks did not fear death and were willing to exchange lives for lives. It was truly troublesome.

Yue Zhong suddenly barked, "If we can't fight them, we can call for help! Greenie, kill them!!"

In the skies, Greenie howled once and flapped its wings to generate its innate ability. Instantly, countless wind blades blew towards the Low-Grade Dino-Generals.

Their faces fell, and quickly channeled their Radiance of Life, trying their best to dodge the wind blades.

"Retreat!"

With a tap of his foot, Yue Zhong retreated explosively. During his retreat, his gaze was still fixed on those Low-Grade Dino-Generals. All of a sudden, he fired twice, the beams penetrating the heads of 2 Low-Grade Dino-Generals, and their life force was absorbed by him.

"Go take a good rest!"

After covering her retreat to safety, Yue Zhong left behind a single sentence, then re-entered the battlefield. However, this time, he chose to fire from afar, the Electromagnetic Gun in his hand reaping the lives of the Dino-Warriors.

# Chapter 849: The Lion Opens Its Jaws!

---

Inside the honeycomb city, Greenie swooped down from the skies, pouncing on one Monitor Lizard. It pecked down viciously, and its sharp beak went through the head of the Monitor Lizard.

At the same time, its claws dug into its body, causing fresh blood to flow out of the puncture marks.

The life force of the Monitor Lizard was still strong, allowing it to struggle furiously.

Greenie flapped its wings and soared into the skies, dragging the Type 4 Prehistoric Monitor Lizard with it.

On the other side, Lightning had also pounced on the back of another Monitor Lizard. It opened its powerful jaws to bite down on the neck of the lizard, tearing off a huge chunk of flesh.

The Monitor Lizard let out a howl of agony. Just as it wanted to retaliate, a powerful ice shard shot out and pierced through its body, injuring it heavily.

Inside the cavern city, Greenie and Lightning might not be a match for all of the Prehistoric Monitor Lizards, however, in a one-on-one clash, their strength was still above these beasts.

The remaining Monitor Lizards were being taken down by Yue Zhong's tamed beasts, while Turtle continued to crawl towards the Dino-Warriors like a tank.

A Type 4 Crocodile-Snapping Turtle might not be fast on land, its movement speed losing out to the Dino-Warriors. However, with its size, the Dino-Warriors were being forced backward.

Those Dino-warriors who had been shot by the Winged Races or were forced to hide behind cover, could not retreat in time and were squashed into meat paste by Turtle.

Many other Dino-warriors charged towards it, however, as they

got close, Turtle would just open its mouth to breathe deeply, directly sucking the Dino-warriors into its mouth before it crushed them. It would also fire out ice shards from time to time, piercing the bodies of the enemies.

The huge weakness of Turtle was its movement speed. Its frontal assault might be strong, but its back, sides and behind were often exposed to attacks.

However, with Han Zi Xuan beside it to guard, any Dino-warriors that tried to take advantage of the weaknesses would be killed.

Once she was sent to the back to recuperate, Yue Zhong quickly replaced her position, swiftly appearing beside Turtle, cooperating with it to kill those Dino-warriors.

The remaining Monitor Lizards were quickly disposed of by Yue Zhong's tamed beasts. When Lightning and Greenie entered the fray of the Dino-warriors, the death toll of the Dino-warriors and Dino-Generals shot up significantly.

Dorothy and many other Elders began to don their Storm Battle Armor and charged into the fray as well.

While the Elders were arrogant and overbearing, not even respecting their Queen, they were outstanding warriors on the battlefield, each of them possessing powerful archery skills. Their aim was sharp, and they would seek out the Low-Grade Dino-Generals to take them out together with one another.

"Retreat!"

After many more Low-Grade Dino-Generals were killed and facing the combined assault of the 3 Mutant Beasts belonging to Yue Zhong, the Dino-Warriors were finally at a disadvantage. In this mountain cavern, the Winged Race had an advantage in terrain. With the help of the 3 Mutant Beasts, their morale was once again high, completely suppressing the Dino-Warriors. Since the main commander General Ku Feng had been killed by Yue

Zhong, the rest of them could only choose to retreat.

Once the order was given, all the Dino-warriors quickly made their way out, leaving behind countless corpses.

"Kill!!"

Dorothy and the rest of the Elders had joy on their faces, as they quickly flapped their wings to chase after them.

The elites of the Winged Race reached the entrance of the cave when suddenly, a rain of arrows fired towards the elite Winged warriors.

Under the salvo of arrows, many of the elites were nailed to the ground. The rest had no choice but to back up and retreat temporarily.

The huge tunnel was the only way out to the outside world, and also the only path of survival. Now that it was blocked, it was practically cutting off their only way to survive.

Dorothy led a few experts of the Winged Race to try and assault the entrance. However, with the Dino-warriors holding the fort there, they would be beaten back each time, with numerous Type 3 Winged warriors falling to the ground. Even Dorothy herself had suffered an arrow wound.

The Winged Race required space for them to display their abilities to the utmost. Although the tunnel was not exactly narrow or small, there was a limit to how much the Winged Races could fight with their abilities. Their advantage was minimized inside there, that was what the Dino-people had banked on.

However, that was the only way out for the Winged Race. After Dorothy's party retreated, the other warriors continued to send in batch after batch to storm the entrance, only to lose several of their people.

After multiple failures, the Winged Race surrounded the entrance, their faces grim, but they did not dare to charge in

anymore.

The tunnel prevented the Winged Race from going all out, and while they might have numerous warriors, each time they launched an assault, they could only deploy a hundred or so. Any more than that would cause the tunnel to be jammed. Like that, they would not be able to display their advantage, and thus, they could only surround it helplessly, not knowing what to do.

As they were waiting, Yue Zhong came to them, riding on Turtle's back.

"Yue Zhong! You're here!"

The moment Dorothy saw him, her eyes lit up with joy, and she stepped forward and spoke warmly.

Many of the other Elders also looked at him with respect and a hint of envy.

Many of the younger female warriors had seen how Yue Zhong had single-handedly done so much during the battles earlier. If it was not for the current situation, they would have charged and thrown themselves on him.

Due to his efforts to deal with the Monitor Lizards, the Winged Race had managed to extract themselves from the crisis and beat the Dino-warriors back. Otherwise, they might have been wiped out.

Even Dorothy, who was filled with hate and disgust for him initially, had a 180-degree change in attitude.

Yue Zhong assessed the tunnel carefully while asking with a frown, "What's the defense like inside?"

Inside the city, there was only this tunnel. There were many heavy weapons inside, that could be used to defend against enemies intending to assault the Winged Race. However, once it was captured and held by the enemy, it was likewise a blockage that sealed the people within.

Dorothy spoke seriously with a slight bow, "The defense is tight, with over 15 Low-Grade Dino-Generals inside. With them holding the fort, it's difficult to breakthrough. We can only rely on you now. Please help our Winged Race! If you help us break out of here, our Winged Race would definitely not forget your mercy and grace!"

Since the Dino-race had sealed the entrance, what the Winged Race needed was powerful weapons capable of smashing and destruction. In Yue Zhong's arsenal, he had 2 powerful Type 4 Mutant Beasts that fit the bill, namely Lightning and Turtle.

Lightning was swift as the wind, it could maneuver inside the cave with no problems, hunting the Dino-warriors. As for Turtle, while its speed was slow, it was the one that could face the attacks head on and crush the enemy with dominating strength.

With these 2 massive beasts, combined with the elite warriors of the Winged Race, Dorothy had the confidence of breaking through. Otherwise, the only method left was to throw as many Winged warriors as she could, costing them their lives.

Yue Zhong eyed the tunnel and spoke indifferently, "2,000 warriors! I can help your Winged race get back this tunnel. But, after this, I want 2,000 of your warriors to serve me. If you don't agree, then the deal is off, you can try and take back the tunnel by yourself."

Hearing Yue Zhong's appetite, one of the Elders lost her cool, "What?! 2,000 warriors?! Do you know that we only have a total of 6,000 warriors in our Winged Race?! You actually want  $\frac{1}{3}$  of our forces, that is impossible!"

Dorothy's face also fell as she stared fixedly at Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, our Winged Race, and the Storm Valley have always been on good terms. Your actions now are simply robbing when the house is on fire, it's lowly and despicable!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly and swept a glance at them,

"Despicable? Just who was it that wanted to capture us to present to the Stegosaurus Kingdom? Wasn't the actions of your Winged Race despicable earlier? If it hadn't been for me, how many more of your people would have died?! I've already extended my kindness and mercy, there doesn't seem to be anything that I owe to you people right? I don't have the responsibility to fight so hard for you nor risk my life for you. I've just brought up a deal, if you aren't willing, just forget about it! If you think that my actions are despicable, then Elder Dorothy, what would you make of your own actions?!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's cold sarcasm, many of the Elders flushed with shame.

# Chapter 850: Assault!

---

Dorothy bowed and apologized, "Yue Zhong, I apologize deeply for my disrespect and arrogance earlier. Now, our fates are all entwined together. If our Winged Race is wiped out by the Stegosaurus Kingdom, you guys will not survive as well. We should put aside our differences and dispute, work together and fight our way out for survival!"

Yue Zhong did not let up as he replied icily, "2,000 Winged warriors! Elder Dorothy, with my abilities, I might not be able to bring a dozen people out, but if Luo Qing Qing and I were to join hands, we can definitely bring our own subordinates out alive! If you don't agree, then feel free to fight for the tunnel by yourselves!"

One pretty Elder shot a glare at Yue Zhong, barking out, "We'll just attack then! Damn Yue Zhong, who do you think you are! Our Winged Race can take back our tunnel by ourselves! Sisters, come with me!"

After that, hundreds of elites charged up to the skies, dashing towards the entrance!

Dorothy's face fell as she barked, "Lai Li! No!! Come back!!"

Just as the hundreds of elites flew up to the entrance, a number of arrows shot out like shooting stars, piercing many of them.

With screams of pain and misery, many of them fell to the ground in pools of blood.

The Elder Lai Li, whose strength was at the peak-Type 3 stage and was wearing the Storm Battle Armor, immediately received medical care. She had 6 arrow wounds on her, causing fresh blood to flow out constantly.

The Dino-warriors were not stupid as well, prioritizing the Winged Race members who had the Storm Armor.

With Lai Li's death, the rest of the Winged elites who had charged forth immediately retreated back in dismay.

In a bid to break through this time, they had lost a number of Winged elites, but not even a single Dino-warrior had been killed. The only result was that they had cost the Dino-warriors more arrows and stamina.

Seeing this, the faces of the Winged Race fell, their brows furrowing together. The tunnel was securely guarded by those Dino-warriors, if they continued to push forth like this, it would only be in vain. At the same time, they did not know what other means the Dino-warriors possess.

Dorothy's eyes flashed with a strange glint after some hesitation, before coming in front of Yue Zhong in defeat, saying solemnly, "Yue Zhong, please help us! As long as you get us out of this mess, we're willing to send you a thousand Winged elites!"

"Great Elder!!"

"Great Elder!! No!!"

The other Elders lost color in their expressions as they exclaimed out in horror.

The Winged Race were not many, with only 6,000 elite warriors. With the invasion of the Dino-people this time, they had lost over a thousand warriors. If they were to give another 1,000 over to Yue Zhong, their military might would be at an incredibly low point.

Dorothy's face sunk as she barked out, "Shut up!!"

The moment she lost her cool, all the Elders kept quiet. Dorothy's position among them was very high, with her thoughts and actions constantly for the people, many of the Elders had received her grace before.

Dorothy eyed them, "It is a critical time for our Winged Race now. If we can't get past this, then all 80,000 of our Winged Race would perish here. As long as Sir Yue Zhong helps us, protecting

the lives of these 80,000 brothers and sisters, then what's giving a thousand of our soldiers to him? I believe that he would not mistreat them as well!"

Their technology was backward, and while their physique might be better than most humans, they still could not compare to the Dino-warriors. Their only advantage was that they could fly. Now that they were stuck here, even if they gave their all, and sacrificed the lives of thousands of people, they might not even be able to take back the tunnel. Dorothy saw this clearly, that was why she had no choice but to accept Yue Zhong's deal.

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "1,500!"

Dorothy's eyes flashed with a begging look, "1,200!! Sir Yue Zhong, please! If you can accept this deal, you'll gain our friendship and the 1,200 warriors will definitely be your most trusted and loyal subordinates!"

Yue Zhong thought before nodding, "Alright!"

Earning 1,200 powerful Winged warriors was already a decent haul for Yue Zhong. Although they might not be able to defeat even 200 Dino-warriors on the battlefield, that was because they were by themselves, unable to utilize their advantages to the fullest.

If given to Yue Zhong, he could turn them all into powerful and lethal weapons. After all, he had many Sun Battle Armor as well as Type 3 nuclei. If he gave them all the Sun Battle Armor, he could form a powerful aerial unit.

Yue Zhong then came up to Luo Qing Qing, "Hey, I'll have to rely on your help later!"

Luo Qing Qing was able to push her strength to the Type 5 realm with the help of the Storm Armor. Coupled with her natural combat talents, a Low-Grade Dino-General could easily perish at her hands. In terms of a frontal assault, Yue Zhong needed such a

force at the forefront, after all, he had to maintain his Type 4 strength.

With just him alone, there was no certainty of breaking through the defenses of the Dino-warriors. The tunnel was too small and narrow for the large Mutant Beasts, therefore, he could not rely on Mount Tai.

Right now, Luo Qing Qing had already recovered fully with the help of the blood, ready to rejoin the battle.

A crafty look flashed across her eyes, as she smiled, "No problem, but after this, I want half of those Winged warriors!"

These Winged elites were extremely useful to any faction. They were proficient scouts and could take on Mutant Beasts that had no aerial capabilities.

Yue Zhong frowned and spoke softly, "I had saved you so many times, how can you this?"

Luo Qing Qing looked back at him and replied in a low voice, "That's another matter. This was what you taught me. Since you've saved me, I can ask for less. 300!"

Yue Zhong's face contorted as he bled in his heart, "200!! That's the most!!! Otherwise, forget it!"

200 Winged elites, if they were trained properly, they could become an entire special force on their own. If he had to give them up to Luo Qing Qing, he could not help but feel some pain.

Luo Qing Qing stared at Yue Zhong's expression in glee, and spoke with a bright smile, "Deal!"

"Move out!"

The moment the deal was settled, Yue Zhong did not hesitate to gather the elites with Dorothy's help. Turtle stood at the center of the formation and began to launch an attack on the tunnel.

Turtle had already channeled its innate ability right at the start,

opening its huge mouth to breathe out powerful cold air. The cold air enveloped itself to form a huge, thick layer of ice.

The layer of ice weighed at least hundreds of tonnes, if that weight was on Lightning, it would crush it immediately. However, Turtle carried it and lumbered towards the entrance.

Although the Type 4 Crocodile-Snapping Turtle was slow, its huge body possessed a frightening strength. Other than a few other Type 4 Mutant Beasts, its strength could be considered one of the top.

When it appeared at the tunnel, countless arrows flew out once more, raining upon the layer of ice.

However, these arrows only managed to pierce through 20cm of the ice, and could not penetrate further.

The arrows fired by Low-Grade Dino-Generals were frightening, piercing through almost an entire meter before stopping.

As the rain of arrows shot out from the tunnel, landing on Turtle's armor, in a short while, it caused Turtle's back to look like a porcupine. However, it continued on its way, bulldozing over anything in its path.

"Strong! This Type 4 Mutant Beast is truly the best suited at besieging defenses!! Our Winged Race has hope!!"

Dorothy and the other Winged people saw how Turtle just braved all attacks as it advanced, their eyes filled with excitement. The rain of arrows that had cost them so much was being broken through easily, thus, giving them hope.

"Damn it!! Attack!! Route around that Mutant Beast!! Kill those fellows! That Mutant Beast is slow, as long as we kill those behind it, we can kill it!"

As one Low-Grade Dino-General roared out in fury, 12 others, as well as 200 Dino-warriors, leaped out from their covers, trying to run around Turtle.

This time, on their attack on the honeycomb city, they did not bring any heavy weapons. Therefore, they had no means of dealing with a moving fortress-like Turtle. The only way of victory was to use their military might against Yue Zhong and the rest, before kiting and wearing Turtle down to death.

# Chapter 851: Victory!

---

"They're coming!" Yue Zhong saw the Dino-warriors and readied his Electromagnetic Gun.

A number of electromagnetic beams blasted out on the bodies of the Dino-warriors, causing bloody holes.

Dorothy, Doreen, Lai Wei and a number of other Winged elites wearing their Storm Battle Armor readied their bows to fire at the Dino-warriors.

The strongest of the elite Winged warriors had taken part in the assault this time, and each arrow shot out like a shooting star, penetrating the bodies of the Dino-warriors in a shower of blood.

In the tunnel, one particular arrow was fired at one Low-Grade Dino-General.

The Dino-General reached out to swat the arrow aside, only to find that the force behind it exceeded its expectation. It penetrated through his right hand, going through his body, causing blood to spray everywhere.

The face of the Dino-General fell, as he sensed a bad premonition. Twisting his body slightly, he dodged to the left. At that moment, an arrow brushed past his body, penetrating deep into the wall behind him.

The Low-Grade Dino-General had just evaded it, when another arrow shot at him, penetrating his head, causing it to explode in a shower of blood.

"It's her! She has some capabilities!" Yue Zhong turned to look at the source, noticing that it was the Great Elder Dorothy.

That Low-Grade Dino-General had been an expert of the Type 4 Realm, in terms of close combat prowess, he was on par with Luo Qing Qing without her Storm Armor. Such a fearsome expert was actually killed by Dorothy, a testimony to her powerful archery.

Under their constant assault, the Dino-warriors were being killed one by one, however, their speed was pretty fast. In a breath's time, they managed to charge up to Turtle.

Facing the Dino-warriors that suddenly appeared, Turtle slammed into 8 of them viciously, causing them to be crushed into meat paste, as though they had been struck by a sports car at maximum speed.

However, that was the best Turtle could do, the rest of the Dino-warriors managed to get past it by its sides, launching a fierce assault on Yue Zhong's team.

"Kill!"

Luo Qing Qing's battle-lust was at its peak, as she stood there in her armor and wielding her spear. Her body was surrounded by countless tornados, and as she tapped her foot, her entire body shot forwards. She appeared in front of a Low-Grade Dino-General and immediately thrust her spear through his heart.

The Low-Grade Dino-General's face fell as he retreated explosively, raising his hands in an effort to block. However, he had just raised his hands when the terrifying spear already pierced through, and numerous wind blades exploded out from within, tearing his corpse up into slices.

Having killed one Low-Grade Dino-General in a single blow, Luo Qing Qing's eyes flashed coldly, and she suddenly disappeared from her location, before appearing in front of another Low-Grade Dino-General to thrust out her spear in a split second.

The eyes of the Low-Grade Dino-General gleamed, as he swung his tail noiselessly at her. He raised his right elbow as well, the bone blade on it slicing towards Luo Qing Qing.

When the right elbow bone blade slammed into Luo Qing Qing's Battle Spear, there was a flicker of a shadow, and the Battle Spear suddenly appeared right in front of the face of the Dino-General. It

pierced through his head easily, and with the wind blades billowing out, it shredded his entire head.

After killing 2 Low-Grade Dino-Generals in quick succession, Luo Qing Qing continued to charge through the enemies, every strike of hers easily felling a Low-Grade Dino-General.

"Strong! Seems like she has become stronger again!"

Yue Zhong watched as Luo Qing Qing tore through the battlefield as though she was slaughtering chickens, and sighed. This woman was truly majestic and valiant, her prowess constantly growing at every step of the battlefield.

After all, these Dino-Generals did not lack combat experience. Although they were only at peak Type 4, in terms of close combat, most Type 5 Divine Warriors of other races might not be able to best them. Such freaks were actually annihilated one after another by Luo Qing Qing. Even if the Storm Battle Armor did boost her strength, without her skills, it would not have been possible.

Luo Qing Qing continued to unleash carnage on the Low-Grade Dino-Generals, while the other Dino-warriors were being handled by Dorothy and her winged elites.

The Winged Race could not compare to the Dino-warriors in terms of close combat. As the Dino-warriors got past Turtle, they quickly assaulted the Winged warriors, killing many of them.

One particular Winged elite thrust her Battle Spear towards an incoming Dino-Warrior.

The eyes of the Dino-Warrior flashed, and with a twist of his body, the spear penetrated his left chest.

At that moment, his gaze seemed to turn savage, and his right elbow slashed out with lightning speed. A cold light brushed past the neck of the Winged elite, and her head was sent flying amidst a shower of blood.

A dozen of the elite warriors was equipped with the Storm Battle

Armor, in theory, their strength should be higher than those Dino-warriors with the enhancement. However, in close-combat, the Dino-warriors were unafraid of death and were able to tear apart these Winged elites.

Dorothy, Lai Wei, and a few other Elders began to increase their intensity, forcefully balancing the tides of the battle.

Yue Zhong was on top of Turtle, observing the ongoings below. He noticed that there were 2 main battlefields, the elites of the Winged Race clashing with the Dino-warriors, of which the Dino-warriors had the advantage. The other was Luo Qing Qing's slaughter of the Low-Grade Dino-Generals, rapidly decreasing their numbers. If things continued on like this, after Luo Qing Qing was done with the Low-Grade Dino-Generals, it would definitely be the Winged Race's victory.

The Low-Grade Dino-Generals seemed to know this point, and they gathered close together. However, when they got close to Luo Qing Qing, Yue Zhong would use his Electromagnetic Gun to shoot at them, forcing them apart.

Although he could not easily kill them with his gun at his current strength, with his Firearms Manipulation, his accuracy was more than enough to force them to retreat.

Just as they were gaining the advantage in battle, 300 Dino-warriors suddenly charged in once more through the tunnel.

If these 300 joined the fray, they would be able to turn the tide.

From behind, Lai Wei let out a shrill howl, and more Winged elites flew out from behind her, entering the fray as well.

"Burn!!"

Yue Zhong saw the incoming 300 Dino-warriors and his eyes flashed coldly. Waving his hands, a powerful Devil Flame tornado blew out towards them.

Within that small confined space, the billowing Devil Flames

instantly enveloped a large portion of the tunnel.

The 300 Dino-warriors were caught in the flames and instantly, every single one of them started to burn. They screamed out in pain, many of them turned to ashes within a breath. In the end, a mere 140-over managed to survive.

Such a casualty rate would have caused a human troop to collapse, however, those remaining Dino-warriors still continued to charge forth with renewed ferocity.

Yue Zhong kept his eye on them and fired with his Electromagnetic Gun, the beams shooting through the heads of the Dino-Warriors, causing them to explode.

Within a few breaths, over 30 more Dino-Warriors had been killed by Yue Zhong. However, by then, the remaining hundred had made it around Turtle.

Alas, they were too late, as the Low-Grade Dino-Generals had already fallen at Luo Qing Qing's spear. The Dino-Warriors had just appeared and were immediately swept up in Luo Qing Qing's rampage, their screams filling the cavern.

At the same time, Turtle continued on its steadfast march forward, crushing any unfortunate Dino-warriors still hiding behind cover.

"Retreat!"

One Low-Grade Dino-General looked out at the battlefield, knowing that there was no hope of victory, and roared out in anger and hatred, before turning around to flee.

The Dino-warriors quickly fled out from the tunnel.

Another group of Dino-warriors was trying to take Turtle down under the lead of one Low-Grade Dino-General, firing with all they had, but to no avail.

Turtle was like a moving fortress that crushed any obstacles

along the way, while Luo Qing Qing and the other Winged elites would catch and finish off any stragglers.

# Chapter 852: Alliance!

---

Those Dino-Warriors left behind continued to fight with all they had, however, they were still annihilated by the sheer might of Yue Zhong's group. The tunnel was thus reclaimed after a long, arduous battle.

After regaining the tunnel, the Winged elites began to swiftly fly out.

Outside, all over the cliff, Dino-warriors were retreating and fleeing.

The Winged elites continued to fire arrows at the retreating Dino-warriors, causing some of them to fall off and plunge to their deaths.

At this time, the Dino-warriors were caught in a disadvantageous position. Their bodies were crawling down the cliff, and it was hard to maneuver. Faced with the rain of arrows, they could not defend themselves.

Every Winged elite was filled with hatred towards these Dino-warriors. Under their frenzied assault, the 600-over Dino-people were shot down.

At the center of the honeycomb city, Lai Wei descended from the sky, her entire body covered in blood. She came up to Shailene and reported, "Your Majesty, we have killed all the Dino-people!!"

Shailene's face was filled with joy, and she flapped her wings and announced in her melodious voice, "Everybody! After the efforts of our warriors, the invaders have been wiped out!!"

Shailene had an interesting ability, which was that her voice could travel throughout the Winged Race, and hearing her words, those who were hiding in various corners felt relieved.

"That's great! Those monsters are finally dead!"

"Long live Your Majesty!!"

"Long live your Majesty!!"

"Long live your Majesty!!"

"..."

A number of Winged citizens began to erupt in cheers and celebration, and at this moment, everyone was filled with respect for their Queen.

The fact that Shailene could become Queen was also largely due to this innate ability. Only those with the Queen bloodline had this ability to bolster morale and appease hearts.

"Thank goodness!! We've won!!"

Shailene looked down at the celebrating citizens, her heart filled with part-joy, part-trepidation. This time, the attack of the Stegosaurus Kingdom had been sudden, and the entire city had almost been destroyed. If it were not for Yue Zhong and Luo Qing Qing, this place would have been a field of corpses.

Shailene's heart trembled slightly as she sighed, "What a pity, our Winged Race is still too weak!"

There were only 80,000 of them, and the entire base could not compare to the Dino-race. They did not even have a single Type 5 Divine Warrior. This time, there had been at most 2,000 Dino-warriors in the invading party. And yet, they had almost succeeded in wiping out the Winged Race. They were still a weak species of this world after all.

"If only Yue Zhong was part of our Winged Race!" Suddenly, Shailene had such a thought, thinking about his combat prowess, even her blood started to pump faster.

Inside a lavish palace, the entire upper echelon of the Winged Race was gathered. The atmosphere was vastly different from when Yue Zhong and the rest first arrived. Many of the Winged

Race members were looking at Yue Zhong with fervent gazes, their hearts fluttering.

In this world where the strong lorded over the weak, powerful people captured hearts easily. In this weak Winged Race where the females were more than the males, they were easily stirred. Copulating with strong people usually ensured better genes in their offspring. This was what caused them to have a desire towards Yue Zhong, eyeing him like a bunch of perverts towards an absolute beauty.

Yue Zhong did not hold back and requested his reward from Dorothy, "Elder Dorothy, when will you give me the 1,200 Winged elites?"

Dorothy looked at him and replied respectfully, "Sir Yue Zhong, I will get them ready by tomorrow."

To her, this man, who had Greenie, Lightning and Turtle, all Type 4 Mutant Beasts, was more frightening than Luo Qing Qing. Both Greenie and Lightning could hunt and kill Type 5 Divine Warriors, while Turtle was the best siege weapon. With his ability to summon them, Yue Zhong was practically a mobile army himself. Therefore, her attitude towards him was even more respectful than her own Queen.

Having obtained what he wanted, Yue Zhong nodded his head with satisfaction, "Good!"

Dorothy then asked with a strange glint, "Sir Yue Zhong, are you going to be staying a few more days, and allow us to host you?"

Yue Zhong immediately rejected, "No, I'll be leaving tomorrow. The Stegosaurus Kingdom knows about this place, and it's no longer safe to stay here. I intend to bring my people to Cloud Region, and we can't afford to waste even a single day."

This time, the victory of the Stegosaurus Army sent to the Winged Race was a close shave. Fortunately, they only had a Mid-

Grade Dino-General in their midst. Had there been 2 or even 3, Yue Zhong would have long since been killed. Even if he evolved to the Type 5 stage, and relied on the enhancement of the light-gold Sun Armor, there was no guarantee that he could kill one in close-combat.

Dorothy revealed a thoughtful expression, "Cloud Region?"

Doreen came up to Luo Qing Qing, bowing deeply as she spoke with sincerity, "Storm Queen, please forgive our travesty earlier. I'd like to apologize for our earlier foolishness!"

Hai Xi, who was standing beside Luo Qing Qing, had a look of disdain, as she spoke sharply, "Just a sentence and you want to us to forget everything? Remember, you guys were about to abduct our Queen to hand her over to the Stegosaurus Kingdom. Do you think an apology would cut it?"

Hearing that, many of the Winged Race elites had looks of embarrassment and shame. They had indeed gone overboard. Now that they were being mocked and ridiculed, they had no words.

Luo Qing Qing frowned slightly and barked, "Hai Xi, enough!"

Hai Xi then kept quiet, although her expression was one of unwillingness.

Luo Qing Qing turned to Doreen and said, "Let's forget about all these ugliness between us. I hope that there will never be a second time!"

After all, the Winged Queen Shailene was Luo Qing Qing's good friend. In the past, the Winged Race did assist Storm Valley on multiple occasions as well. Thus, she was not willing to break this alliance apart and push them towards the enemy.

Doreen bowed once more in gratitude, "Thank you for your magnanimity!"

After which, Doreen returned to her position.

Dorothy suddenly spoke, "Yue Zhong, our Winged Race would like to become your ally! What do you think?"

Yue Zhong touched his chin and fell into thought when he heard that, "Alliance, eh?"

Dorothy's eyes flashed with a strange glint, "Our Winged elites are the best scouts. With your strength, if we were to become allies, we definitely can become a powerful force, and join forces to resist the Stegosaurus Kingdom."

Yue Zhong pondered for a while, before shaking his head to turn her down, "I'm heading to Cloud Region, while you guys want to stay here in Green Region, there's no point in the alliance."

Dorothy immediately replied with resolution, "Yue Zhong, if we were to become allies, our Winged Race is willing to follow you to the Cloud Region."

"Great Elder!!"

"Great Elder!! You must reconsider!! We're not familiar with Cloud Region at all, if we were to go there, we could be slaughtered!"

"That's right! Great Elder, we had better stay here in Green Region. This time, all the Dino-warriors who had invaded had been killed. There's no one else who knows about our location. Even if we abandon this mountain cave, we can find another place to reside."

"..."

The various Elders started to speak up in order to dissuade her. The Winged Race had spent countless years in Green Region, their home, they knew where to hunt and where was safe. Their ancestors had paid the price to obtain intelligence and information, accumulated throughout the years. If they were to leave Green Region, there were Ferocious Beasts and Mutant Beasts everywhere, who knew how long it would take for them to re-

establish their roots again.

Dorothy eyed Yue Zhong and spoke solemnly, "Enough! Green Region is no longer safe. We have to leave here now!! Sir Yue Zhong, are you willing to be our ally?"

Yue Zhong smiled lightly, "Sure! If you come with us to Cloud Region, we can be allies!"

Although the Winged Race was not strong compared to the Stegosaurus Kingdom, they were more than enough compared to his own human troops. With such an ally, it would alleviate many things.

Dorothy heaved a sigh of relief and smiled lightly, "Many thanks, Yue Zhong!!"

Luo Qing Qing shot Yue Zhong a glare, as she thought hatefully, "This fellow is getting all the benefits!"

This time, Luo Qing Qing had come in order to bring their ally, the Winged Race, away from Green Region. Who would have expected for things to turn out like this, and the Winged Race actually becoming Yue Zhong's ally. If it wasn't for her bargaining for 200 Winged elites from Yue Zhong, this trip would have been a useless one.

After confirming the details, the palace threw a large banquet in order to celebrate.

Yue Zhong partook and enjoyed himself with the food provided, before heading back to his room to rest. It had been an intense day, and he was extremely exhausted.

# Chapter 853: Entering the Type 5 Realm!

---

As Yue Zhong fell into deep sleep, the light gold energy in his body continued to course through his body, strengthening and enhancing every single cell and fiber. His entire being was undergoing a huge chance, evolving towards a superhuman-level.

The God and Devil Imprint could absorb the purest of Life Force. Along his journey, Yue Zhong had killed plenty of experts and powerful Type 4 Mutant Beasts, the amount which could have easily pushed an ordinary person to become a Type 5 Divine Warrior long ago. However, Yue Zhong had been stuck at the pinnacle of the Type 4 realm, because the God-Devil Nucleus had only been absorbing the concentrated and purest form of energy, refining it constantly to lay the most solid of foundations.

If the foundation was not stable enough, it would be hard for a human like Yue Zhong to advance far. They had physique and constitution limitations, in comparison with the Dino-people, the Sea Clan, the Flesh-Eaters, even Zombies and other evolved life forms. Therefore, having absorbed enough Life Force, Yue Zhong was finally evolving towards the next stage.

The light-gold energy continued to flow slowly throughout Yue Zhong's body, going through multiple cycles, strengthening every single fiber of Yue Zhong's body. Even his red blood was starting to have a tinge of gold energy.

Every high-rank expert had a powerful life force. As Yue Zhong entered the Type 5 realm, his blood was refined to harbor a strong vitality within. If an ordinary person was to drink his blood, they would gain enhancements and even gain an immunity to some viruses.

"Congratulations on evolving to a Type 5 Divine Warrior! You have gained +30 in all attributes!"

"Congratulations on evolving to a Type 5 Divine Warrior! Your

'Body of Steel' has been raised to the Third Order!"

"Congratulations on evolving to a Type 5 Divine Warrior! Your 'Regeneration' has been raised to the Third Order!"

"Congratulations on evolving to a Type 5 Divine Warrior! Your 'Devil Flames' has been raised to the Fourth Order!"

"Congratulations on evolving to a Type 5 Divine Warrior! Your 'Dark Dou Qi' has been raised to the Fourth Order!"

"..."

When Yue Zhong woke up, he was bombarded by a flurry of notifications within his mind. All his skills had been raised to at least the Third Order. As for his Devil Flame and Dark Dou Qi, his two main skills, they had reached the Fourth Order, causing his strength to undergo a heaven-and-earth transformation.

Yue Zhong checked out his status and was filled with excitement, "Holy!! This is great, who would have thought that I would become so strong after becoming a Type 5 Divine Warrior!!"

After evolving to the Type 5 realm, Yue Zhong's largest gain was not the +30 in his attributes, but his skills reaching the Third Order stage. After all, every single skill required many skill points just to power up. Skill points were precious, and if it was on earth, it would take every increase of 10 levels to gain one skill point. Instead, he had gained a massive upgrade together with his evolution. The skill points he would have required otherwise would be at least hundreds.

Based on his conjecture, his current strength would surpass even Luo Qing Qing with her Type 4 Nucleus Storm Battle Armor. This was before the use of external equipment. If he were to equip the Type 5 Nucleus Sun Battle Armor, he had the confidence to take on Mid-Grade Dino-Generals in combat.

After celebrating for a while, he got up and left the room.

When Yue Zhong entered the hall, the upper echelon of the

Winged Race, including the Great Elder Dorothy, got up to greet him, "Sir Yue Zhong, good morning!"

Dorothy had just approached him when her face suddenly changed, and she wore a look of disbelief as she stammered, "Ah... you seem different!! Don't tell me... you've reached the Type 5 Divine Warrior realm?!"

In the past, the Winged Race also had a Type 5 Divine Warrior before. The previous Winged Queen had been a Type 5 Divine Warrior. Dorothy's perception was strong, and since her experience was abundant as well, she could tell that Yue Zhong possessed an even stronger aura than the previous Queen. This was obviously a sign of his evolution.

"Type 5 Divine Warrior?!"

"How is that possible?!"

"How could a human become a Type 5 Divine Warrior?"

"Type 5 Divine Warrior?! Is that a joke? Even Luo Qing Qing has not even reached it yet!! He has already broken through, does it mean his talent is even more fearsome than Luo Qing Qing?"

"..."

Hearing Dorothy's words, many of the Elders had changes in expressions, their eyes filled with disbelief, as they began to discuss among themselves.

The Type 5 Divine Warrior was a huge watershed, in this Third World, where powerful existences were numerous, and Mutant Beasts and life forms were rampant, even a Type 4 Divine Warrior would be in constant peril everywhere they went. Only those of Type 5 and above could walk around fearlessly.

In this world, a Type 4 expert was considered a peak existence among the Winged Race and Storm Valley. However, in the Sea Clan and the Stegosaurus Kingdom, they were just ordinary fighters. Instead, the Type 5 Divine Warriors were considered the

revered ones.

Humans were generally considered the weaker species and they had little experts. One of the few top fighters in the Green Region would be Storm Queen Luo Qing Qing, but even she was just a peak Type 4 expert.

Hai Xi, who was standing beside Luo Qing Qing, lost her cool and exclaimed, "Impossible! He's just a mere man, how can he evolve so fast?! Impossible!!"

Hai Xi had always regarded Luo Qing Qing as her idol and revered her. She believed that among humans, Luo Qing Qing was the most talented and the one who was the most likely to breakthrough the Type 5 realm.

In truth, her thinking was not wrong. If it were not for the God and Devil Imprint, Yue Zhong's natural talent could not possible surpass Luo Qing Qing, regardless of how hardworking he was. However, with the imprint, and the constant absorption of Life Force, Yue Zhong's body was remodeled from the cellular level, and he had already evolved.

Gazes fell on him, many of them hoping to hear his denial because they were all jealous as well.

Luo Qing Qing also looked at him, her gaze complicated. Although she was largely aloof, even she felt a tinge of envy at Yue Zhong's breakthrough. However, there was also a slight sense of joy that she did not understand.

Only Han Zi Xuan looked at him with a pure and hopeful look, praying that it was the case.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "That's right! I've just broken through, and am a Type 5 Divine Warrior!"

Dorothy's gaze was complicated as well, trying her best to maintain a smile, "As expected!! Congratulations!"

Hai Xi immediately challenged him as she could not help herself,

"I don't believe it! Yue Zhong, I want to take you on! As long as you can beat me, I'll believe that you're a Type 5 Divine Warrior!"

Yue Zhong glanced at her, and went to his table to sit while replying indifferently, "Why should I? If you want to challenge me, take on Han Zi Xuan first."

Han Zi Xuan stepped forward, her face apologetic, "I'm sorry Hai Xi, I'm already Sir Yue Zhong's subordinate!"

Although Han Zi Xuan was not willing to raise her weapon against her friend, if it were just a spar, she would still take it on.

Hai Xi shot Han Zi Xuan a look, as she gritted her teeth and spoke, "Yue Zhong, I want to challenge you. If you can beat me, I will sleep with you for one night, or obey a single order of yours. If you lose, you have to tell everywhere that you're a boasting liar!!"

Luo Qing Qing frowned and said, "Hai Xi! You're not his match!!"

Hai Xi was only at the peak of Type 3, with the enhancement of her armor, she could at most reach the mid Type 4 realm, which was vastly far from Yue Zhong.

Hai Xi replied resolutely, "Your Majesty, please grant me this selfish desire!"

Yue Zhong thought for a while, and wanted to test out his new strength, "A single order? Sounds good! Fine, I agree!"

Hai Xi immediately followed with her Storm Armor activated and continued, "I have additional conditions! First, you cannot rely on equipment. Second, I'm going to use the Storm Armor and Storm Battle Spear. Third, you must defeat me in 5 moves! As a Type 5 Divine Warrior, those conditions should be easy to meet!"

Yue Zhong shook his head, "Nope!"

Hai Xi was stunned, she had thought her conditions were fair but did not expect Yue Zhong to reject her, "What?"

Yue Zhong responded mildly, "2 moves! If I can't defeat you in 2

moves, I'll consider it my loss!"

"Arrogant! You're digging your own grave!!" Hai Xi lost her temper, and her Storm Armor radiated, enhancing her strength to the mid-Type 4 realm.

Her eyes flashed with anger, and she suddenly disappeared from her location, appearing behind Yue Zhong silently, sending a powerful spear thrust towards him.

Although Hai Xi was a Type 3 Divine Warrior, she had a natural talent in spatial abilities. At the Type 4 realm, she could utilize her ability to appear anywhere within an area of 100 sqm up to 20 times. Relying on such an ability, she had killed a Low-Grade Dino-General of her own before.

# Chapter 854: Shock!

---

"Spatial ability! What a good ability! No wonder you have the confidence to challenge me, however, your speed is too slow!"

After evolving to a Type 5 Divine Warrior, Yue Zhong's perception was much stronger. Hai Xi had just appeared behind him, when he reached out with his hands to grab, clutching her skull with lightning speed, as he turned and chuckled, "You've lost!"

Hai Xi could feel his huge hand, warm and powerful, and gritted her teeth to admit, "I've lost!!"

Although Hai Xi was a proud woman, she was not stubborn. She knew well that had this been a true life-and-death battle, with Yue Zhong's strength, he would have been able to kill her in one strike. Yue Zhong's response far surpassed Low-Grade Dino-Generals, even the powerful Luo Qing Qing in her heart would not be able to react similarly without her equipment.

"Type 5! He really reached that stage!"

"Strong! He's truly strong!!"

"..."

The various Elders, upper echelon, and elites watched how easily Yue Zhong stopped Hai Xi's attack. Their eyes flashed with shock, finally accepting that Yue Zhong was a Type 5 Divine Warrior.

In this world, a peak-level expert would possess powerful strength. Every leader needed strength as well. With Yue Zhong's Type 5 Divine Warrior strength, he could easily go to any small clan or faction and become their guardian. Together with the tamed Mutant Beasts that he could summon, his collective strength was astonishing.

"Powerful! I'm no longer a match for him!" Luo Qing Qing clenched her fist, her jaw tight, and there was a hint of the desire

to battle.

Not long ago, without any equipment, Luo Qing Qing was stronger than him. However, if they were to take on each other now, Luo Qing Qing would definitely lose. This fact caused her to feel slightly lost, at the same time, she felt a need to fight to become better.

Lai Wei's mother looked at Yue Zhong with a strange glint, smiling warmly, "Lai Wei! I really like this Yue Zhong! How about giving him to me? I'll replace you as his servant!"

Since the Winged Race was a matriarchal society, their exchanges were more brazen. Also, their women outnumbered their men, thus there was no moral or civic education in the sense that humans comprehended. They were even more backward than some ancient civilizations. It was common for mothers and daughters to share men.

Lai Wei was fully attracted to Yue Zhong, her eyes flashing brightly as she rejected, "No way! He's mine! Hai Xi, I'm warning you, don't think of taking my man! Otherwise, I will fall out with you!"

Hai Xi stuck out her impressive chest and displayed her charms and allure while smiling, "I intend to do just that, I won't let go of such a man. I will use my womanly charms to keep him around my fingers. At that time, I will be magnanimous to share him with you!"

Lai Wei snorted coldly, but there was a slight discomfort in her expression, "Hmph! I won't let you get your way!"

In terms of strength, it was naturally Lai Wei whose talents surpassed Hai Xi, however, in terms of charms, Hai Xi was definitely the victor.

Many more Winged women began to throw their undisguised lustful gazes towards him as though he was a delicious piece of

cake.

Yue Zhong did not expect that he had somehow become the Prince Charming of these many youthful women.

It was not a common sight on Earth after all. Yue Zhong had made use of his authority and power to obtain the women around him. He might have them with him, but he had never truly won over their hearts. As for now, he just had to hook his finger and he could gain so many top beauties of the Winged Race. However, he did not have the ability to read minds, thus he did not know he already held such allure over these women.

After breakfast, the Winged Race quickly moved out, having to relocate 80,000 members was no easy feat. They needed resources and time.

Dorothy came up to Yue Zhong with an apologetic face, "Yue Zhong, where are we gathering? If the journey is over a thousand kilometers, we would need at least 3 days to prepare."

According to the distance, the required resources would be different. If they had to move further, then the things they had to bring would be adjusted accordingly, increasing the preparation time.

Yue Zhong shook his head, "One day, that's all I'm giving you!"

Dorothy lost color as she exclaimed, "That's impossible! Yue Zhong, one day will only allow us to pack some simple things. We would not possibly survive out in the wild for long like that."

The ordinary warriors of the Winged Race could fly over 50 li in one day, while the Type 2 warriors could fly 100 li. Type 3 Winged elites could do a 200 - 300 li journey, while a Type 4 expert could fly over 700 li in one go.

However, there were children and the elderly to take care of as well. They would have to travel on foot after a few kilometers of flight. In the various forests with multiple Mutant Beasts, the

journey would be treacherous. Without ample preparations, they could easily lose over thousands of their people. If their luck was bad, it would not be a stretch to lose tens of thousands.

Because of this, the Winged Race was not willing to travel far on foot. It was because of this same reason that the Storm Valley wanted to follow Yue Zhong on the Storm Battleship to the Cloud Region.

Unless the Stegosaurus Kingdom made use of their Type 5 Mutant Beasts to crush everything in their path. That would allow for travel through the forests.

Of course, that would require the Stegosaurus Kingdom to pay a huge price as well. At that time when they had tried to invade the Green Region, many Mid-Grade Dino-Generals worked together to kill the powerful Mutant Beasts along the way, that was why the number that came to Storm Valley was low. Had all of them joined in, Storm Valley would have fallen in a day.

"If it were a long journey, then yes, naturally you will need more resources. However, it's only a short distance. Don't bring too many unnecessary things. Come with me, they should be here already!" Yue Zhong glanced at the communication device in his hands and walked out.

Dorothy and a few Winged Elders followed behind him.

When they came to the entrance of the cavern, they saw a huge floating fortress flying towards them from the distance.

Dorothy stared at the Storm Battleship and went wide-eyed with astonishment, exclaiming, "That's the Storm Imperial City! Oh lord, I'm not seeing things, am I?! It can actually fly?! It's actually flying!!"

Doreen was also shocked, "The Storm Imperial City! How is it moving?!"

All the Elders were taken aback, as the sight was overbearing.

Based on their knowledge, the floating Storm Imperial City that had been stationery within the Storm Valley had always been a mythical castle meant for residence.

Having been there before, they knew that the Storm Imperial City was likely a war weapon manufactured by humans of eons ago. Although Storm Valley had its own design built around it, there had been no way to move the Storm Imperial City. Had they known that the Storm Battleship could be piloted, they would not have tried to capture Luo Qing Qing in exchange for peace.

With a chuckle, Yue Zhong replied, "This Storm Battleship now belongs to me! It will allow us to go to the Cloud Region. I think a day would be enough for your Winged Race to be relocated up into the battleship!"

The moment Yue Zhong decided to ally with the Winged Race, he had made use of his communication device to command the Storm Battleship to fly over. He was clear that in this world, without such a tool, it would be hard to migrate on a large-scale.

Dorothy had a newfound look of respect, "Enough! Enough! Sir Yue Zhong, allying with you was the best thing to happen to our Winged Race! You're truly a man of many surprises!"

When the various Elders heard that the Storm Battleship now belonged to Yue Zhong, all traces of their discontent and dissatisfaction disappeared entirely, leaving only respect behind. At the same time, many rejoiced their decision to ally with Yue Zhong.

Dorothy's authority had suffered slightly due to the mistreatment of Luo Qing Qing and her party. When she insisted on allying with Yue Zhong, many of the Elders became even more dissatisfied, which affected her standing. However, upon seeing the Storm Battleship, many of them changed their attitudes, rejoicing in Dorothy's decisions.

Under the orders and organization of the various leaders, the

Winged Race began to shift and board the Storm Battleship.

After a day, the huge Storm Battleship flew towards the direction of the Cloud Region.

At various parts of the ship, many human male warriors were lifting heavy items and running around. Their backs were carrying at least tens of kilos, their backs drenched with perspiration and their breaths ragged. Yet, even after running over 5 km, none of them complained of exhaustion or wanted to drop out. Because, in front of them, Han Qiong was carrying even more than a few times their weight and running ahead.

Yue Zhong stood quietly to one side as he watched them trained. He had a large amount of Type 5 Mutant Beast meat, with the abundant life force within, it would provide adequate nutrients.

After training arduously, these soldiers would then eat the Type 5 Mutant Beast meat to replenish their energy and boost their constitution.

Undergoing such a regime, with the help of the Type 5 Mutant Beast meat, over 3 humans had awakened to become Evolvers. The physiques of the rest of the soldiers were also improving at a rapid pace, evolving towards elite forces.

# Chapter 855: Mutant Green Gulls Flock!

---

On the way towards Cloud Region, Yue Zhong poured a huge amount of resources towards those soldiers who had stood loyally by his side, strengthening them.

Every single day, the soldiers would be pushed to their very limit, before enjoying some Type 5 Mutant Beast meat and Blood-sucking Bees, allowing their cells and bodies to evolve. A powerful troop was starting to take form under Yue Zhong's training regime.

Although Yue Zhong had reached the Type 5 realm, his strength able to crush a small troop, he was clear that a single person could not grow an entire faction alone no matter how strong.

And while Type 5 experts were powerful, the weaker ones might make use of various methods to deal with enemies stronger than them.

Yue Zhong watched as his subordinates become stronger day by day, his heart filled with hope towards their growth and future. Their physique surpassed those humans on Earth, once they went through training, with the nourishment of the Type 5 Mutant Beast meat and Blood-sucking Bees, they would become powerful elites back on Earth.

Luo Qing Qing came up to Yue Zhong, looking at the training soldiers and sighed, "This training method is indeed decent! One can easily raise an elite unit like this. Yue Zhong, can you train our Storm Valley forces as well?"

The training methods of Storm Valley was backward, and while every female warrior possessed combat strength, in terms of discipline and order, they could not compare to Yue Zhong's forces, with the exception of those under Luo Qing Qing's direct command.

"No problem!" Yue Zhong replied with an easy-going attitude.

No one knew the situation over at Cloud Region. Yue Zhong, the Storm Warriors, and even the Winged Race were packed together, hoping to deal with the unknown dangers together. If the Storm Valley's strength could increase, it would bode well for the alliance.

All of a sudden, 12 Winged Race warriors in the skies screamed out, "Not good! There's a flock of Mutant Green Gulls right ahead!!"

Yue Zhong's face fell as he ordered "Mutant Green Gulls? Sound the alarm quickly!"

A blaring alarm rang throughout the entire Storm Battleship, and the expressions of all those civilians who were involved in shopping and having fun, and the soldiers in the middle of training turned. They were soon escorted by the various officers stationed to hide within the nearest covers.

Not long after, a large green cloud appeared on the horizon. It was comprised of various 6m or 7m-long, green-colored seagulls.

The majority of these Green Gulls were Type 2 Mutant Beasts. However, in a flock, with their massive numbers, even a Type 4 Mutant Beast will be consumed alive. At the same time, they were incredibly aggressive, attacking anything on sight. Many Winged elites had fallen to these Mutant Birds before.

One of the Elders looked up at the dense flock of Green Gulls, her eyes flashing with horror, "It's over! It's a large flock of them!!"

Hearing her words, many of the warriors had looks of horror while their eyes flashed with despair.

According to the classification of the Winged Race, the size of the flock was categorized as small, medium and large. Small flocks contained roughly a thousand birds, medium flocks numbered tens of thousands, while large numbered above hundred thousand.

A flock of hundred thousand Mutant Green Gulls was practically invincible, they were able to consume an aerial Type 4 Mutant

Beast. Even a Type 5 Mutant Beast might not necessarily be able to escape them.

In this cruel Third World, the threat level of the skies was slightly lesser than land. Even with the Storm Battleship, a long journey was not without risks.

Eyeing the birds, many human warriors also had expressions of fear, their hands trembling.

Yue Zhong glanced at the flock, his face impassive as he ordered calmly, "Fire!"

With Yue Zhong's order, the human soldiers inside the castle began to fire their weapons, as multiple electromagnetic beams shot towards the skies, blasting at the flock of Green Gulls.

Yue Zhong had obtained a large number of Electromagnetic Guns and Cannons, that required Mutant Beast nuclei to operate. There were a total of over 3,000 weapons. When they were all fired, many of the Mutant Green Gulls were instantly pulverized.

The bodies of the Green Gulls burst apart in showers of blood and flesh, as their corpses plunged towards the ground like raindrops.

Dorothy and the Winged Race watched in amazement, "Strong!"

Many of their warriors had viewed the subordinates of Yue Zhong with contempt, mainly due to themselves having superior physiques. They assumed that Yue Zhong's soldiers were useless, but now, they were filled with shock.

With the Electromagnetic weapons, the human warriors were able to exhibit destructive might not lose out the to Winged Race. Furthermore, they had the advantage of range, and the beams were more powerful.

Even for someone like Lai Wei, her bone arrows might not compare to the burst damage of an electromagnetic beam.

Dorothy looked at Yue Zhong who stood calmly as he

commandeered his fleet, her eyes flashing with surprise, "Humans truly cannot be underestimated! He actually managed to train up such a powerful unit!"

Although the speed of those Mutant Green Gulls was not as fast as the sound barrier, they were still considered fast. After losing about thousands of their numbers, the entire flock was within a hundred meter range.

The Winged Queen stood at the forefront, decked in her Storm Battle Armor as she barked out, "Fire!"

At the sound of her command, the various Winged warriors readied their bows and fired a salvo of arrows upon the approaching birds.

Storm Queen Luo Qing Qing also gave a similar command to her own troops, "Fire!!"

The rain of arrows shot out and fell upon the flock of Mutant Green Gulls.

Many of the birds were shot at and their bodies landed on the deck of the Storm Battleship.

As for many others, while their wings or any other areas were penetrated, they did not die immediately, instead, struggling painfully, knocking various trees and structures.

The rest of the flock immediately swooped down with frightening intensity.

At the various archer towers set up by the Winged Race, many of the Green Gulls went to attack them first.

One Winged elite only had time to fire out an arrow, before she saw a large bird claw grabbing onto her head. The claw clenched tightly with force, bursting her head wide open.

6 or 7 of these beasts also surrounded the corpse and began to consume it, finishing it entirely within a few breaths.

Many others slammed into the various dilapidated buildings.

The flock of Mutant Green Gulls crawled all over the deck of the Storm Battleship, destroying a number of watchtowers.

The various Type 4 experts of the Winged Race began to move out in groups, attacking the flock of Mutant Green Gulls.

Similarly, Luo Qing Qing led her subordinates to abandon the outer watchtowers, withdrawing into a defensive line, engaging the Mutant Green Gulls in combat.

After they had settled into a formation, the Green Gulls could not rely on their advantage in numbers. Instead, only a few of them could manage to reach the humans, therefore, the human casualties decreased sharply.

On the Storm Battleship, there were over 3,000 pillboxes, each of them filled with human warriors wielding electromagnetic weapons.

The soldiers never stopped their assault, and the multiple laser beams fired out constantly, injuring and killing many of the Green Gulls.

The Mutant Green Gulls continued to pounce and slam into the pillboxes, injuring themselves in the process. However, they did no harm to the humans within those steel structures. Their bodies were too large as well, so they could not fit in. Their strength was not enough to destroy those pillboxes as well.

A large number of them slammed into the pillboxes, denting the external structures, but were killed by the human soldiers within.

At this moment, a huge flame tornado charged towards the skies from a certain tunnel, enveloping a large number of them. As the Green Gulls were consumed by the Devil Flame, they were incinerated instantly.

Yue Zhong walked out from the tunnel, his thoughts whirring, and a huge void appeared, as Turtle walked out.

When the Green Gulls saw Yue Zhong and Turtle, they became excited, charging towards Turtle.

Turtle crawled forward a few steps, before it retracted its limbs into its shell, leaving only the turtle head.

The flock of Mutant Green Gulls swooped down onto its shell, only leaving behind scratches and claw marks, but not truly harming Turtle.

The moment Turtle attracted a large number of them, it opened its mouth to spit out a thick amount of frost, turning the Mutant Green Gulls into popsicles.

# Chapter 856: Dominating the Green Gulls!

---

On the other side, Yue Zhong activated his Gravity Manipulation with a glint in his eyes.

A powerful gravitational force spread out, since the Gravitational Manipulation ability had reached the Third Order stage. It could affect his enemies with a maximum 30-times weight. These Mutant Green Gulls were not strength-based Mutant Beasts, thus, when they were enveloped by the 24-times weight that Yue Zhong sent out, and plummeted to the deck, unable to move.

Countless Mutant Green Gulls flew over to Yue Zhong and instantly plunged down due to the gravity field around him. The mountain of birds grew larger and larger.

With a thought, Yue Zhong sent out a billowing Devil Flame, lighting up the hill of Green Gulls. They began to shriek out in agony, their life force entering Yue Zhong in droves.

Yue Zhong walked out in big strides amidst the flock of Mutant Green Gulls, causing them to pounce towards him like bees to honey. His surroundings fluctuated constantly with the Gravitational Manipulation, sucking the Mutant Green Gulls down towards him, before he sent out Devil Flames to burn them all into ashes, leaving behind numerous Type 2 nuclei.

After evolving to the Type 5 Divine Warrior realm, Yue Zhong's strength had grown to a whole new level. If it were in the past, he would not have dared walk through the seemingly endless flock of Mutant Green Gulls. However, with his improved Third Order Gravity Manipulation, as well as his Fourth Order Divine Flame, thus easily obliterating these Mutant Green Gulls.

On the other side, Turtle continued to spit out huge amounts of freezing air towards the skies. Everywhere the freezing field touched, the Mutant Green Gulls froze into popsicles and fell onto the deck.

Greenie and Lightning were not a match for these Mutant Green Gulls, if they were to appear, they would be easily ripped to shreds. Only Turtle, with its astonishing defense, was able to resist such aerial Mutant Beasts.

The intense battle continued for another 3 hours, and after Yue Zhong had obliterated over ten thousand Mutant Green Gulls, he had no choice but to retreat within the battleship for a rest. The expenditure of the Third Order Gravity Manipulation and Fourth Order Devil Flame was huge, and he could not utilize them to fight indefinitely. The fact that he could kill over ten thousand Mutant Green Gulls by himself was sick.

Luo Qing Qing was extremely valiant herself, but within that 3-hour time span, the number of Mutant Green Gulls that she killed was only about 300-plus.

The ones who managed to eliminate the most were instead the subordinates of Yue Zhong within those pillboxes. Inside the 3,000 pillboxes, the firing never stopped, killing large numbers every second. As the flock was dense and closely packed, there was no way that they would miss. Over 60,000 had actually been shot and killed over the time period.

This time, the number of Mutant Green Gulls that had attacked the Storm Battleship was over 160,000. In a short 3 hours, over 80,000 had been killed or heavily injured, their corpses were strewn all over the Storm Battleship.

The remaining Mutant Green Gulls saw that they had lost half their numbers in these 3 hours, and they did not get to consume much prey. Even with their low intelligence, they knew that things were not looking good.

Finally, they let out shrieks of misery as they flapped their wings and disappeared into the clouds.

The moment they left, the entire Storm Battleship erupted in cheers of joy.

The 160,000 Mutant Green Gulls had given them all huge pressure. Now that they were beaten back, everyone heaved a sigh of relief.

If they were careless, the entire ship might have been consumed by those Mutant Green Gulls.

Dorothy looked at the numerous corpses, her mind in a daze as she muttered, "We won?"

The Mutant Green Gulls were Type 2 Mutant Beasts and were terrifying. If it were a one on one clash in the skies, the Type 2 Winged warriors would definitely not be a match. Even Type 3 experts might fall.

In the wild, such a huge flock would easily decimate the entire Winged Race. Yet, they had managed to fend off such numbers, at the same time, killing over half of them.

After the Mutant Green Gulls retreated, Yue Zhong also relaxed and walked out of the command center. Earlier, his display of destroying over ten thousand of the beasts with a seemingly invincible posture was seen by all. However, the truth was that he had consumed a lot of his Stamina and Spirit, thus he had to retreat.

This time, the pillboxes that he had designated had contributed greatly to the victory, as it was precisely these structures that helped defend against their attacks, at the same time, allowing the soldiers within to slaughter the Mutant Green Gulls without fear.

"Quick! Go gather the corpses! Those are decent resources for food, as well as manufacturing equipment!!"

Since there were no threats in the skies, Sun Lan Lan quickly ordered and the humans came out in droves, gathering the corpses from the deck of the Battleship.

They were then transported to the storage facility of Yue Zhong's faction.

The Winged Race and Storm Warriors were taken aback, and they hesitated slightly. They had killed a number of the Mutant Beasts as well, but it could not compare to the efforts of Yue Zhong's troops. In the end, they were not shameless enough to snatch the corpses away.

As the corpses were being transported, Sun Lan Lan's face was beaming brightly. As the official with the highest authority, she naturally felt happy about such a harvest. The concern about food was reduced largely.

At the same time, due to the Mutant Green Gulls being Type 2 Mutant Beasts, every one of them had a Type 2 nuclei. Just like this, Yue Zhong had gained tens of thousands of Type 2 nuclei, which translated to their electromagnetic weapons having replenished their energy supply.

On the Storm Battleship, there were still a large number of injured Mutant Green Gulls. Yue Zhong's heart shook slightly when he saw them and he quickly ordered, "Don't kill those injured Mutant Green Gulls, try your best to bring them to me alive as much as possible!!"

Han Zi Xuan replied respectfully, "Yes! Sir Yue Zhong!!"

Han Qiong and Lai Wei also acknowledged and moved out.

These 3 great beauties were the strongest generals that Yue Zhong currently had, with their speed and their elite subordinates, they could bring the injured Mutant Green Gulls to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong walked up to one of them, causing the beast to look at him and shriek in a bid to deter him. At the same time, it struggled wildly, trying to get away.

Yue Zhong shot forward and punched out at its head viciously, causing it to be knocked unconscious immediately. He then grabbed out with his palm and sent a Type 2 Puppet Rune into its forehead.

After that, he spoke indifferently, "Alright, let it go!"

"Yes, sir!"

The 4 soldiers had expressions of shock, not knowing why Yue Zhong would give such an order. However, they had been trained to obey, carved deep into their bodies, and they quickly let go of the beast.

Yue Zhong then flicked the forehead of the Mutant Green Gull, causing it to wake up. It was already controlled by the Puppet Rune, and it lowered its head obediently, giving out a docile coo.

"Amazing! He truly is Leader after all!!"

The 4 soldiers had amazed looks when they saw how easily Yue Zhong had subdued the Mutant Beast.

He then pointed to one of them, "Go take it away and care for it properly. It might be your mount in the future!"

"Yes!"

The soldier was extremely overjoyed, and under the envious gaze of his friends, he led the Mutant Green Gull away.

Every soldier had seen the combat prowess of the Mutant Green Gulls for themselves. Gaining such mounts would increase their combat ability by a lot. In this world where strength spoke volumes, it would mean that they would gain more respect and standing, together with a better life.

More Mutant Green Gulls were brought over to him, and Yue Zhong brought them under his control with the Puppet Runes.

After condensing a number of Puppet Runes, Yue Zhong summoned Bolius and handed the role of imprinting the Mutant Green Gulls to him.

As long as the Puppet Box belonged to Yue Zhong, he could delegate the increasing of puppets through his own puppets.

Very soon, over a thousand Mutant Green Gulls were standing

obediently to one side of Bolius.

The Winged Race and Storm Warriors looked at this scene with incomparable shock, their eyes filled with disbelief.

Shailene watched how the Mutant Green Gulls were being subdued right in front of her eyes, "He can actually tame such a number of Mutant Green Gulls?! How in the world?! How did he do it?! This is a miracle!!"

The Mutant Green Gulls were ferocious and were Agility-type Mutant Beasts. The Winged Race had tried to tame them before, however, there had been no success. Yue Zhong could actually tame them, which caused them all to be shocked.

Dorothy eyed Yue Zhong, and her heart could not help but be stirred, "How many trump cards does he have? This is truly a man with plenty of miracles!"

Luo Qing Qing came up to Yue Zhong and her eyes flashed, "Yue Zhong, can you sell 100 of those tamed Mutant Green Gulls to our Storm Valley?"

# Chapter 857: Cloud Region!

---

Yue Zhong chuckled lightly, "What do you intend to buy them with?"

Luo Qing Qing smiled faintly and suggested, "Storm Valley can help you manufacture 300 equipment with Type 5 Mutant Beast hide, 1,000 Type 4 Mutant Beast hide, 1,000 bone blades, 1,000 bone bows, and 10,000 bone arrows."

Storm Valley used melee weapons often, thus, they had a number of skilled craftsmen. With their talented work and output, they were able to churn out such numbers quickly.

Yue Zhong thought for a while, before swiftly agreeing, "Deal!"

The firearms of the prehistoric times might be more powerful than the cold weapons, but they had a limit on usage. Once fired to a certain extent, their parts would fail, and could not be used again. And currently, they had no one who was capable of repairing any of these weapons.

It was because of this that even though the Storm Valley and Sun Alliance had many of such weapons, they did not dare to use them casually.

If it weren't for Yue Zhong's new recruits being so weak, and the perils of the long journey being glaringly present, he would not allow them to use such weapons to defend themselves. In this world, they were valuable.

After subjugating all the injured Mutant Green Gulls with his Puppet Runes, Yue Zhong had instantly gained an army of 5,000 Mutant Green Gulls.

The number was mighty, if they all flew up together, it would be enough to block out an entire patch of sky.

Each one of them carried significant injuries, however, with Yue Zhong providing a number of Type 2 nuclei and the meat of Type 4

Mutant Beasts, they quickly recovered.

The recovery rate of Mutant Beasts was truly terrifying. These 5,000 Mutant Green Gulls were just Type 2 Mutant Beasts, and in terms of physique, they were the weakest of Type 2 Mutant Beasts. Even so, their recovery was faster than humans.

After waiting for the 5,000 Mutant Green Gulls to recover, Yue Zhong then handed the control over to Lai Wei. As she was a Type 4 Divine Warrior of the Winged Race and flew constantly, she was extremely clear on giving commands. As for the rest, they were still inexperienced.

As they took care of the huge flock of Mutant Green Gulls, the huge Storm Battleship continued on its way towards Cloud Region.

Another week passed, before a number of tall peaks that seemed to break through the clouds appeared on the horizon, forming a number of natural valleys. Within the valleys was the last stand of the human race in this world! Only a narrow gorge of about 20 m wide led to the interior of the valley.

Yue Zhong did not know how the humans within the Cloud Region would take to his arrival, thus he chose to descend over a dense patch of forest that was about a hundred li away.

As the Storm Battleship descended, the hundreds and thousands of Mutant Beasts within the forest looked up and were shocked. They frantically fled in different directions, forming a stampede as they sped away.

The enormous Battleship was over millions of tonnes, thus when it landed, it caused a large patch to be flattened together with the Mutant Beasts and flora underneath it.

With just this landing, the Storm Battleship had caused the deaths of over a thousand Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong had seen the numerous Mutant Beasts being squashed, and he sighed, "What might! If it wasn't for the

consumption if only I can utilize this to bulldoze everything, what fun it would be!"

The Storm Battleship weighed over a million tonnes, even Turtle would be flattened under that sort of weight, not to mention other Mutant Beasts. In fact, among the crushed Mutant Beasts, there had been 2 Type 4 ones. However, before the kickstart of the Battleship, he would have to forego those nuclei for now.

After the battleship came to a complete rest, Yue Zhong gave an order to Lai Wei, "Go! Please ensure your safety above all else!"

"Yes! Sir Yue Zhong!" Lai Wei bowed respectfully, before leaving.

Soon after, a hundred Winged warriors flew out from the Storm Battleship, together with the 5,000 Mutant Green Gulls, making their way around the area, hunting down any Mutant Beast they saw.

After subduing the 5,000 Mutant Green Gulls, Lai Wei had become a sort of shepherd for them, especially bringing them to hunt Mutant Beasts and collecting their nuclei, or body parts that were useful, back to the ship.

At the same time, by hunting the Mutant Beasts around, it made the environment safer.

Luo Qing Qing and Shailene, the Queens of their respective factions also led their own subordinates to go and hunt. Although there were trees planted onboard the ship, they were insufficient to fill everybody on the ship. They might have brought along resources as well, but if things continued like this, they could not support themselves.

After delegating all the work, Yue Zhong then brought Han Zi Xuan along with him towards Cloud Region.

Han Zi Xuan's own strength had also gone through a metamorphosis since she had been through intense battles, reaching the Type 4 realm. She was beautiful and strong and loyal

to a fault. Yue Zhong naturally liked to bring her along as a personal guard.

As for the rest, Liu Mei'er was not dependable, Sun Lan Lan's strength laid in governance, while Han Qiong still required more training. Lai Wei led the Mutant Green Gulls to hunt for nuclei, hence only Han Zi Xuan was free.

Arriving at Cloud Region's entrance, Yue Zhong checked out the huge fortress at the entrance of the cliff, his heart filled with shock, "This is the legendary Xue Luo 20 Forts? Pretty intimidating! No wonder they're able to fend off the Dino-people for so many years!"

Within that narrow gorge leading into Cloud Region, there were 20 forts erected, these were the last and strongest form of defense of the humans here. In these hundreds of years, they had fended off countless attacks by the Dinosaur Kingdoms, killing numerous Dino-warriors. This was the last paradise for most human factions as well. If it were not for the treacherous journey leading to here, all of the human factions would have long since made their way here.

As for these Xue Luo 20 Forts, each one of them was about 200m high, together with numerous castle walls. There were soldiers stationed everywhere, keep an eye on everything,

All along the wall, there were many openings for cannons, electromagnetic guns, and cannons to fire out from.

Just along the first fort, Yue Zhong could already see 20 large electromagnetic cannons. Each one of them was at least 3 times larger than the Electromagnetic Gun he had. If hit by a single blast from these weapons, a Mid-Grade Dino-General would definitely be slaughtered instantly.

Beyond those, every single soldier stationed along the wall was filled with an intimidating killing intent, their backs carrying electromagnetic guns and ray guns.

Yue Zhong saw that the entire place was armed to the teeth, and did not know what trump cards the place had hidden. He felt his heart turn slightly cold. Even for someone as strong as him, if he was not careful, he might be turned into paste here.

Yue Zhong and Han Zi Xuan had just gotten close, when 4 human soldiers in black uniform barked out, "Who are you people?"

Yue Zhong replied without skipping a beat, "We're humans from afar, seeking refuge. We heard that Cloud Region is the last sanctuary for us humans, thus we came from Green Region. The Green Region has already been conquered by the Stegosaurus Kingdom. We don't want to become their slaves. We hope to enter Cloud Region."

"These warriors are strong!"

As the conversation was going on, Yue Zhong observed them carefully, his eyes flashing with a hint of shock. While they were just rank-and-file soldiers, their aura and demeanor was top-notch, comparable to the elite of his elites. At the same time, from their movements, he surmised that they were at least Type 2 Divine Warriors.

The 4 of them assessed Yue Zhong and Han Zi Xuan carefully also, before saying, "Go over there to register."

The 2 of them came to the gate and handed their belongings to be checked before they made some detailed identification. Once their prints were collected, they started for the inner city under the escort of the 4 soldiers.

After 6 hours, and multiple layers of check, as well as 20 large army camps, the 2 of them finally made it into Cloud Region.

Yue Zhong took a look and was taken aback, "This is Cloud Region?"

After the 20th army camp, it was a vast plain of green, where one could not see the ends, and a huge city appeared in front of them.

One of the soldiers handed 2 name cards to them and turned to leave, but before that, he said, "We have a total of 24 main cities in Cloud Region. This is one of them, Red Blood City. From today on, you're members of our Red Blood City as well. Let me give you a word of advice. We don't keep trash around here. If you want to survive, you have to showcase your worth. Your area of residence is in D district. After you enter the city, turn right. All the best!"

# Chapter 858: Gloom!

---

Yue Zhong took a glance at the name card in his hand. It was a thin, gold-alloy card, with his prints, name and original location on it.

Cloud Region was considered the last human defense against the invasion of the Dino-race. The only thing they were relying on was their prehistoric tech. The technology and weapons were not as backward compared to other places.

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong kept the card and started to walk further into the city with big strides.

Han Zi Xuan followed after him quietly, just like a shadow.

Outside the Blood Red City, there were 20 warriors that had a slight scent of blood on them, guns slung over their powerful and broad bodies. They looked over the cards of Yue Zhong and Han Zi Xuan, before letting them in.

Within the city, the layout was quite modern, with large steel and cement structures. The ground was covered with flat, cement paths, and a number of small cars were driving around. Seeing this, it felt like he was back on Earth.

Han Zi Xuan was filled with curiosity and excitement as she looked around, "So this is Cloud Region? It truly deserves its name as the last stand for humans."

Yue Zhong was speechless when he saw how she was. After all, he had come from Earth, and such sights were normal back there. There was nothing to be surprised about. However, to Han Zi Xuan who had grown up in Green Region and had never even seen a car before, it was truly an amazing sight.

"Let's go!"

Along the streets, there were signs set up to indicate the sector and district they were in.

Yue Zhong moved towards District D.

As they walked further in, the state of the district became worse. By the time they arrived at District D, the environment was foul and putrid. Things were falling apart everywhere, with some structures looking dangerously close to collapsing. The ground was covered in puddles of dirty water, and electrical lines laid everywhere. There were humans with tattered clothes walking around aimlessly, their bodies giving off a strong stench.

"Master, come and have one round, only 10 credit points, I'm all yours!"

"Sir, my skills are good, only 18 points and I'll be your toy for the whole night."

"..."

A number of women who did not have any makeup, only clean from showers stood by the roadside, trying to solicit business. From time to time, some men would not be able to resist them and follow them into the rooms.

Yue Zhong took a good look around, with his abundant experience and could tell that this was a slum. At the same time, he could tell roughly what Cloud Region was going through. "This is a slum. Seems like Cloud Region isn't that perfect after all. There're caste systems."

One particular girl of about 12 with messy hair, and a skinny body, walked out from a simple shop with a black bag.

3 men suddenly charged over, one of them covering her mouth, the other 2 grabbing her towards a dark alley.

The eyes of the girl widened in fear and shock and she began to struggle frantically while looking around with a pleading look.

The spectators only watched coldly, some even turning as though nothing had happened.

Han Zi Xuan could not watch on any longer, and she darted forward, appearing in the alley within a breath's time, only to witness a scene that caused her anger to boil.

Of the three, one was gobbling up the black bread in the bag, another was tearing off her clothes with a lewd smile, while the last was taking off his pants.

Han Zi Xuan's countenance turned incredibly ugly as she barked out loud, "Stop! Damn animals!"

One of them turned to drawl without any fear, "Stupid bitch, what are you? You dare to meddle in the affairs of our Five Ghosts Gang?! Are you tired of living?!"

One looked at Han Zi Xuan and his eyes immediately lit up in a lustful manner, revealing a wretched smile, "Hehe! This chick is pretty!! This senior wants to screw her first!"

The last man had a similar expression as he mockingly chided his friend, "Damn! Yellow-hair, you want to be the first to screw every chick we get our hands on, aren't you being too damn overboard?!"

The leader among them barked out, "Enough with the bullshit! Grab her before saying anything else, otherwise more problems might arise!"

'Fine!'

The other two men let go of the little girl and pounced towards Han Zi Xuan with excited gazes, like hungry wolves eyeing their prey.

"Seeking death! A bunch of trash!!"

Han Zi Xuan heard their words, and her face turned a deeper shade of black. She exploded out, and her powerful legs slammed into the bodies of those 2 incoming men.

The 2 of them immediately soared and slammed into the walls on either side, spitting large amounts of blood. They curled up on the floor in agony, moaning as they rolled about.

"Expert!!" The leader's pupils narrowed, and immediately pulled out a sharp blade to press it against the neck of the little girl, barking, "Bitch! Stay away!! Otherwise, this senior is going to kill her!!"

"I'm afraid you've already missed the chance!! Scum!!" Han Zi Xuan's eyes flashed with a cold light, and with a tap of her foot, she disappeared from her location.

When the hoodlum saw Han Zi Xuan disappear, his eyes flashed with shock, and in a moment of viciousness, he brought down the dagger across the neck of the little girl. However, he had just had the thought and moved slightly when a fair hand grabbed onto his right hand, twisting it forcefully and breaking it.

Han Zi Xuan then sent a kick towards the stomach of the hoodlum, sending him slamming into a wall, curling up into a ball.

Han Zi Xuan glanced at the 3 hoodlums with disdain, speaking coldly, "Bunch of trash!"

The leader whose hand was broken by Han Zi Xuan had a fierce glint in her eyes, as he looked towards the little girl, "Damn bitch, what right do you have to hit us?! This little bitch came here with us of her own accord! She wants us to screw her! You damn bitch, don't stick your nose where it doesn't belong! Wang Ning, tell her, you're a little bitch, one that is willing. Our Five Ghosts Gang had given you and your sister Wang Li Hua 40 credit points!"

When he was mentioning the sister, he emphasized those words, his eyes staring fixedly at the girl.

When the little girl heard the name of her sister, her body shuddered, and her eyes were filled with fear. She got down on her knees in despair as she sobbed, "Big sister, I'm a bitch. I'm willing

to be the toy of these people. I had already accepted their payment. Please leave!! Just leave!!"

"You!! How can you be like that!!" Han Zi Xuan looked at Wang Ning and was filled with rage and indignance. She then turned to the smug-looking leader of the trio, and her eyes narrowed into slits, "Is he threatening you?! I'll teach him a lesson for you so that he won't bother you anymore."

Wang Ning's face turned pale in fright as she grabbed Han Zi Xuan's legs, "No! No!! Please, don't hurt him!! Please just go!! Big sister, please!!"

If Han Zi Xuan harmed the hoodlum, then the Five Ghosts Gang would not let Wang Ning nor her sister off. Thinking about their horrendous methods, Wang Ning could not help but feel a chill.

The gangster roared with laughter, "Haha!! Haha!! Meddling bitch!!! Haha!! Haha!! Did you hear that someone is asking you to scram!! You're still so thick-skinned to stay here, you want to watch us screw her?"

Han Zi Xuan's countenance turned cold once more, however, she did not know what to do. The person she was trying to help was pushing her away, leaving her at a loss.

"Zi Xuan, your method won't work. Against these trash, you must do it like this!"

Yue Zhong chuckled as he stepped into the alley, his Flame Blade in his hands, cleaving the head of one of the gangsters casually.

The head of that gangster rolled with a 'thump', a warm gush of blood spraying from the neck wound, dying the wall of the alley red.

Wang Ning saw this and screamed in despair, "No!!"

"I'm from the Five Ghosts..."

As the hooligan called Yellow-hair stammered out in fear, the

blade flashed cleanly past his neck, causing it to roll off as well, his eyes still filled with shock and despair.

By this time, the arrogant hooligan who had been sarcastic towards Han Zi Xuan kneeled on the floor towards Yue Zhong, pleading profusely, "Don't kill me!! Please, don't kill me!! This brother, sir, boss!! Don't kill me!! I'm trash, scum, rubbish!! I'm willing to slog for you!! I promise!! I promise never to disturb Wang Ning and her sister ever again!! I promise!! I promise!! If you kill me, the Five Ghosts Gang would not let these sisters off!!"

Yue Zhong had slaughtered countless human trash, and he did not even view them as fellow humans anymore. Thus, there was no burden or hesitation when it came to killing them.

"What has that got to do with me? I just dislike the sight of you. Scum, die!"

With a wave of his hands, Yue Zhong's blade flashed again. The head of the hoodlum dropped to the ground, fresh blood spraying everywhere.

Wang Ning watched this and screamed out in despair, "No!!"

# Chapter 859: Five Ghosts Gang!

---

Wang Ning stared at the three corpses lying in a pool of blood, muttering, "I'm finished! I'm finished!!"

The methods of the Five Ghosts Gang was truly vicious and despicable. If the matter blew up, knowing that three of their subordinates had fallen here, the Gang would not let Wang Ning's family off. Thinking to this point, Wang Ning was filled with despair and fear. Both her and her sister dared not envision their fates at the hands of those monsters.

Yue Zhong shot Wang Ning a look and spoke indifferently, "Rascal, they're dead now. You must be vexed right? Where is the headquarters of the Five Ghosts Gang? Take me there!"

Wang Ning's face was as pale as a sheet, looking at Yue Zhong with an expression as though she was about to cry, "This sir, I don't know where they're at."

Yue Zhong frowned, and he began to consider if he should use some other means to obtain that information.

Right at this time, there was a heart-wrenching shout, her tone full of urgency and anxiety, "Little Ning!! Little Ning!!! Where are you?! Little Ning!! Quick, come out!!"

Wang Ning heard the voice and shouted back, "Sister!! I'm here!!"

The next moment, a woman with tattered clothes but a clean appearance, her nose covered with a few pockmarks, came running over. Her demeanor was demure, and yet, she ran forward to hug Wang Ning without a care for her image or cleanliness, eyeing Yue Zhong and Han Zi Xuan with fear. Her body trembled uncontrollably, but she continued to hold Wang Ning tightly.

Wang Li Hua shot them a fearful look, handing her name cards over while pleading, "Who are you people? I only have 30 credit points here, please take them all! Don't kill my sister!!"

Wang Ning grabbed Wang Li Hua's arm and spoke, "Sis!! They saved me!! They saved me from the hands of the Five Ghosts Gang!!"

Hearing Wang Ning's words, Wang Li Hua heaved a sigh of relief. However, she caught sight of the 3 headless corpses and still remained fearful. These people in front were not exactly saints.

Yue Zhong held the card and asked out of curiosity, "Credit points? Is that the currency here? How does it work?"

"Like this!!"

Wang Li Hua saw that Yue Zhong was truly in the dark, thus she walked up bravely, holding up both her card and his. Some numbers appeared.

On Yue Zhong's card, there was a clear '0'. He did not have a single credit point. As for Wang Li Hua, there was a '30' on it.

"So it's like that, interesting! Zi Xuan!"

Yue Zhong chuckled and looked at Han Zi Xuan.

She swiftly went over and rummaged the 3 corpses for their cards, handing them to Yue Zhong.

He then used his own card to absorb the points of 2 of the cards, and the number on his card now reflected '230'.

He handed the last card to Wang Li Hua, "This is for you, we want to stay over for one night. I have things to ask you!"

Wang Li Hua grabbed the card tightly and bowed profusely, "Thank you, sir!! Thank you, sir!!"

There were at the least tens of points inside the card, which would feed the 2 sisters for another 2 weeks.

With her lead, they left the dark alley.

The moment they left, 7 or 8 men that had been lying on the street charged into the alley, fighting over the corpses of the 3 Five

Ghosts Gang members.

Han Zi Xuan eyed their strange actions and asked curiously, "What are they doing?"

Wang Li Hua replied apathetically, "They're going to eat the corpses!"

Han Zi Xuan was taken aback, "What?! Eat the corpses? They're human, aren't they? Isn't this cannibalism?! This is Cloud Region, after all, the last stand of the humans! How could there be such things?!"

Since Han Zi Xuan grew up in the Storm Valley, and there might have been classes there over as well, there had never been cases of cannibalism before. She simply could not imagine how such a place would condone such events.

Wang Li Hua laughed bitterly, "This sister, you guys must be from the outside world? Cloud Region is truly the last place for humans. There's plenty of technology here that outside do not have. The upper echelon lead the lives of the rich and luxurious, whereas we weak civilians cannot eat our fill. Every day, there would be people sick and dying in the slums. In the eyes of the rich, we're just bugs. They don't care about us at all."

The words of Wang Li Hua were filled with bitterness, "Inside Blood Red City, there are 4 districts, A, B, C, and D. They are split according to, higher upper-class, ordinary upper-class, ordinary citizens, and poor citizens. The poor folk can only move around in District C and D. Most of the jobs in District A, B, and C do not require us. Thus, our earnings are meager, and many cannot even fill their stomachs. There would be deaths every day, so, in order to survive, some people would eat even corpses."

Han Zi Xuan became silent upon hearing that. She had looked forward to Cloud Region. However, based on the situation as per Wang Li Hua's words, where the poor led lives worse than dogs and pigs, she became disheartened and disappointed.

Yue Zhong looked at all those and inwardly celebrated his decision not to have directly brought the Storm Battleship into the Cloud Region.

From the lives and situation of these people, Yue Zhong could tell that those in authority were not decent. While the upper echelon got drunk on their luxury, the common people suffered, there were obvious signs that there was rot within the government in the Cloud Region.

Yue Zhong asked, "What's the background of the Five Ghosts Gang?"

When the topic came to this, Wang Li Hua's eyes flashed with fear, "They're a tyrannical gang. They have 5 leaders, known as Zhang You Ren, Zhang Xiang, Zhang Wu, Zhang Lu, Zhang Jian. Each of them possesses terrifying strength. None of us from the slums are their opponents. At the same time, they have hundreds of subordinates, lording over the people of the slums. Anyone they act against would not have a pretty fate, and it's rumored that they have the backing from the upper echelons. That's why no one dares touch them."

Yue Zhong continued, "The upper echelons eh? How can one advance in tiers?"

Wang Li Hua replied, "One must kill over 10 Dino-warriors to gain the lowest-level 'Lord' title. Killing a hundred Dino-warriors would earn the 'Baron' title. A 'Lord' is an ordinary upper-class, while a 'Baron' is a higher upper-class."

As they spoke, the party soon arrived at the house of the two sisters.

It was a simple and rundown place, with only a few simple furnitures. However, the place was kept tidy and clean, looking extremely cozy.

Wang Li Hua then went into the kitchen to prepare dinner.

Soon, the table was filled with 4 bowls of water and soup made of black bread, with only a little salt in the soup.

The moment she placed them down, Wang Ning grabbed her bowl in hunger, drinking it in one go, before staring at the other bowls with a bright look.

Wang Li Hua bowed slightly, expressing for Yue Zhong and Han Zi Xuan to dig in, "Help yourselves!"

Yue Zhong took a look and had no appetite, pushing the bowl directly in front of Wang Ning, watching her slurp it up with relish.

Han Zi Xuan also felt a sour ache as she watched Wang Ning, thus, she passed the bowl over to Wang Ning as well, watching her finish her third bowl in happiness.

Within a certain area in the D District, a lavish mansion stood over a large plot of land. 20 burly hooligans were gathered together, betting money and playing cards. This was the headquarters of the Five Ghosts Gang.

Inside a large hall, a dozen naked men were currently having an orgy with dozens other beautiful women. The moans and sounds of lust and desire filled the place.

A short and nervous man charged in as he hollered, "Boss!! Boss!! Not good!! Something happened to Yellow-hair and the rest!!"

A middle-aged man, Zhang You Ren, looked up with a frown. He had a hooked nose, his body skinny. He continued to thrust while scolding, "Gray Dog! What the hell are you shouting for?! Damn it, you wrecked the mood! What happened?!"

Gray Dog replied loudly, "They have been killed!!"

The moment he heard that, Zhang You Ren kicked the woman in his arms away, standing up with an ashen face, roaring in fury, "What?! They were killed? Which assholes are tired of living already, to kill my men?!"

Gray Dog gritted his teeth, "It's those 2 newcomers. They have no background, and acted to save the Wang sisters! They hacked Yellow-hair to death and their methods are vicious!"

The face of Zhang You Ren contorted, "Very good! Very good!! They dare kill my people, truly wishing for death!!"

The Five Ghosts Gang had ruled the slums for a dozen years already. A few upright people had tried standing up for justice but had all been turned to corpses. Their Five Ghosts Gang replied precisely on fear to control and run the slums. If they did not react to this killing of their own men, soon, their prestige would plunge and would collapse easily.

Zhang You Ren's face then turned savage as he roared, "Second! Third! Fourth and Ole' Fifth! Stop f\*\*king around!! Damn bastard, they actually want to go against our Five Ghosts Gang!"

The four others quickly got to their feet.

Under their lead, they gathered more subordinates and charged towards Wang Li Hua's home.

# Chapter 860: Wiping out the Five Ghosts Gang!

---

Over a hundred of the Five Ghosts Gang members wielded axes, hacking knives and other weapons as they charged towards the Wangs'. Along the way, any citizen that saw them quickly got out of the way. They did not dare antagonize the Five Ghosts Gang.

Soon after, the gang members gathered below the building.

The moment they reached, Zhang You Ren turned to one of his men and asked, "Are they inside?"

The man replied, "Boss, they're still inside and haven't come out once!!"

Zhang You Ren's eyes flashed with a cold light as he laughed savagely, "Set fire and burn them down!!"

A dozen other hooligans lit up the Molotov cocktails in their hands and flung them towards the dilapidated building, and flames burst to life, enveloping the old structure!

The houses on either side were made out of wood as well, as the flames got larger, they started to spread, thus both buildings started to burn as well.

6 or 7 people ran out from those wooden houses, wailing in fright and despair as they watched their houses burn.

The hundreds of members from the Five Ghosts Gang watched and roared with laughter as they gloated at the innocents. They slashed out and began to slaughter those fleeing people in an unbridled fashion, slicing them up.

Seeing the numerous innocent people fall in their own pools of blood, the members began to get excited from the bloodlust.

Zhang You Ren eyed the blaze and laughed out loud, "Hahaha! Do you see this? If you dare go against our Five Ghosts Gang, this is

your fate!!"

"Hahahaha!!!" Beside him, the rest of the hooligans also started to laugh, their expressions savage and cruel.

Amidst their laughter, 4 shadows darted out, and the flames seemed to stir with life, not daring to get near the 4 of them.

Gray Dog exclaimed, "Boss, they're out!!"

Zhang You Ren's eyes flashed with a vicious glint, "Throw the liquid!!"

8 gang members carried some buckets and poured them towards Yue Zhong and his party.

"Don't rush forward, that's acid!!"

Yue Zhong grabbed hold of Han Zi Xuan, preventing her from stepping forward. He then raised his hands to conjure up an energy shield, defending in front of them.

The clear liquid splashed onto the shield, and some landed on the ground, causing sizzling sounds, as poisonous smoke rose.

"What vicious people!!" Han Zi Xuan saw this and her face fell. If an ordinary person was splashed with that acid, they would be corroded away.

Yue Zhong eyed the hundred-members and ordered coldly, "Good timing, leave 5 alive, kill the rest!"

"Yes!"

Han Zi Xuan's eyes flashed with a killing intent, with a tap of her foot, she charged forth like a merciless jaguar. As a Type 4 Divine Warrior, the moment she unleashed all of her might, there was only a blur to be seen, and holes appeared in the chests of the Five Ghosts Gang. Their faces were written with fear and shock, unsure how they had died.

Zhang You Ren saw his subordinates being torn apart and his body started to tremble with fear, "Divine Warrior!! At least Type

3!! Damn it, this woman is at least a Type 3 Divine Warrior!!"

He quickly screamed with a pale face, "Stop!! Stop!! Don't kill anymore!! Our Five Ghosts Gang are Viscount Luo Jia He's people!! If you were to kill us, they will not let you off!!"

Zhang Xiang, Zhang Wu, Zhang Lu and Zhang Jian quickly got to Zhang You Ren's side, their bodies quaking badly. In front of Han Zi Xuan, they were like ants, not able to withstand a single strike.

Hearing his words, the Wang sisters lost color in their faces, "Viscount!"

A Viscount had prestige within the Blood Red City, if they were to be offended, then it was a disaster to the ordinary folks.

Even if Yue Zhong and his team were to wipe out this bunch of scum, there were still the city guards. Furthermore, this place was near the 20th fort, with experts aplenty within. As long as they made a move, Yue Zhong and his party were sure to be doomed. Thinking up to here, the Wang sisters felt despair.

Yue Zhong frowned, "Viscount? Interesting, too bad, you shouldn't have threatened me. Since you're the Zhang, other than you, everyone else can die! Zi Xuan, keep him alive, kill the rest!"

By this time, barely 7 seconds had passed, and almost all the subordinates had their hearts torn out and crushed, yet there was not a single drop of blood on her.

Hearing Yue Zhong's order, Han Zi Xuan's body flashed over and disappeared from her location.

The next moment, the brothers of Zhang You Ren had their hearts split open, as blood sprayed from their wounds.

Seeing his brothers die, Zhang You Ren screamed out with misery, "No!!! Xiang!! Jian!! Wu!! Lu!!!"

"Since you've seen your brothers perish, you can rest in peace!"

Yue Zhong disappeared and reappeared behind Zhang You Ren's

back, sending a Puppet Rune into his brain.

Zhang You Ren's eyes glazed over, before he passed out, the puppet rune entering his head.

Yue Zhong slapped his face once, and he was shaken away from his stupor by the pain.

Yue Zhong ordered, "Bring us to your base!"

Zhang You Ren replied with a blank look, "Yes! Master!"

Under his lead, Yue Zhong and his party walked towards the headquarters of the Five Ghosts Gang. Leaving behind a hundred corpses in the blazing flames.

Along the way, the residents of the slums eyed Yue Zhong's party with fear. Wang Ning looked at Han Zi Xuan, her gaze filled with hope and excitement. She wanted to become as strong as this woman in front of her.

One of the gang members within the headquarters saw Zhang You Ren and asked curiously, "Boss! You're back? What about 2nd Boss and the rest?"

Yue Zhong gave Han Zi Xuan an order, "Leave none alive!"

Han Zi Xuan received Yue Zhong's order and immediately charged into the headquarters, unleashing carnage within.

In a matter of minutes, the entire Five Ghosts Gang had been annihilated.

Inside the basement of the building, Yue Zhong discovered dozens of beautiful women of various ages, locked in cages. The oldest was 30+, while the youngest was only 12. These women saw the sudden appearance of Yue Zhong and their eyes were filled with fear. He released them, before letting them leave.

When they heard Yue Zhong had slaughtered the other 4 leaders, their faces were filled with fright, and quickly fled, leaving only 30 other females behind who had no homes to go to.

Yue Zhong sat down on a couch, shooting a question towards the Puppet Zhang You Ren, "What's the relationship between the Luo Jia He and yourself?"

Zhang You Ren replied, "Master! The Luo Jia He was the master of us 5 brothers. We were in charge of collecting beautiful young women to be sent for his enjoyment and pleasure."

When the dozens of beauties heard his words, their eyes were filled with hatred. They had all been captured. Many of them lost their families, and now, they finally understood it was all to satiate some private, rich bastard.

Yue Zhong continued, "How do you communicate with him?"

Zhang You Ren replied, "Every 1st day of the month, he will send someone over to collect the girls. There's another collection date coming up in 4 days. Each year, we're also given one chance to automatically contact him. We had already used that chance earlier this year. Now, even if we reach out to him, he will ignore us."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a glint, before continuing to question Zhang You Ren about other Blood Red City matters.

Although Zhang You Ren was from the slums, he was able to become the trusted aide of a Viscount. He might not be extremely familiar with every single part of Blood Red City, but he knew enough.

There were over 400,000 people in Blood Red City, the City Lord being Marquis Wang Yu Feng. There were 10,000 City Guards, each of them extremely valiant and powerful. They had no lack of Type 4 experts.

In the city, there were 6 main clans. Viscount Luo Jia He was the Clan Head of Luo Clan, one of the 6 main clans. Their Luo Clan had considerable authority and power within the city, and other than the 5 Clans, they held practically no one else in regard.

As for the slums, other than the Five Ghosts Gang, there were also over a hundred other gangs of varying sizes. Some were made up of the lowest bastards, while others were mainly residents. Some even had the backing of other upper-class citizens. There were even factions that the Five Ghosts Gang did not dare provoke.

At the same time, Yue Zhong even gained information that there was a central computer within the main manor of Blood Red City. With it, one could gain control over the entire city.

Having gained information, Yue Zhong began to make his preparations.

In the dark of the night, as the darkness blanketed the planet, District A, B, and C were still lit with lights.

Yue Zhong made use of the dark to stealth past the connection of Districts C and D, moving towards District B. Soon, the boundary of District B and C appeared before his eyes.

# Chapter 861: Rebel Army!

---

The boundary between the District C and D was different. All around it, there was a huge wall, with countless electrical nets installed. Behind those nets, there were various oval-shaped sensors around, sending out constant waves. Unless one could fly, the only way for anyone to cross would be to barge in directly or go through the tight security detail of 20 guards, as well as various checks.

In a dark alley, Yue Zhong was in his Third Order Stealth state. He swiftly assessed his surroundings, before flipping out his handheld computer.

Turning it on, Yue Zhong then ordered Bai Yi, "Gain control over the sensors here!"

"Yes!"

Bai Yi responded and as data flashed through her eyes, the computer released 6 different antennas, as countless pulses were sent out.

The moment the strange pulses were sent out, the oval sensors behind the fences turned dim slightly, before regaining their luster. However, no one could tell that they had already stopped emitting the constant waves.

Yue Zhong then leaped up into the air, easily crossing the fence of over 8 meters, before entering the District B.

The district here painted a vastly different image from Districts C and D. Here, the buildings were not all clustered together, instead, every single house was standing alone, with individual doors. Every house had its own garden, a garage and all sorts of amenities.

A number of high-rise shopping centers sat at the heart of the district, and on top of those luxurious buildings, lights were

shining brightly, illuminating the areas, giving off a pretty feel.

In comparison, District C and D were blanketed by the darkness, only a few privileged households possessing light. One was as bright as the heavens, the other, dark, damp, smelly like a cell. This was the gap between the wealthy and the poor of Blood Red City.

Yue Zhong quickly swept a gaze over the prosperous District B and continued to meld into the darkness, making his way towards District A stealthily.

About halfway through the journey, Yue Zhong suddenly came across a patrolling unit of 20 city guards, each of them dressed in black uniform, their hands wielding ray guns, and they were emitting a ferocious aura.

Other than the uniforms, these city guards were equipped with some multi-purpose helmet. They could scan for all signs of life within a 30 sqm radius.

Although Yue Zhong was in his Third Order Stealth state, sneaking past these 20 city guards without noise and alarming them was impossible.

With his expression falling slightly, he turned around and made his way into a nearby villa nimbly.

"This time, we have to succeed! We need to get those things from the hands of Wang Yu Feng!"

Yue Zhong had just entered the villa when a barely audible voice came from the villa. If it was not for his Type 5 Divine Warrior physique, he would not have heard that.

'Wang Yu Feng?"

Yue Zhong's heart raced when he heard the name. Wang Yu Feng was the city lord of Blood Red City. Yue Zhong was thus filled with curiosity towards the residents of the villa. He continued to be in his Third Order Stealth state and blended in with his

surroundings, quietly entering the compound.

Within the villa, there were all sorts of sensors and radar equipment, preventing powerful experts from sneaking in. However, since Yue Zhong had Bai Yi, those electronics were merely toys to her, allowing him easy access.

Inside a secretive room, 3 men and 2 women were having a discussion.

One man spoke, "Wang Xi, how many of our people are inside the city manor?"

A pretty woman with her hair in a single ponytail spoke with a righteous tone, "300! Currently, we have managed to get 300 people inside the manor. Wang Yu Feng that old bastard is really strict, that's why it's hard for our people to gain entry. These 300 is already the maximum limit. However, based on the intel from Si Si, a majority of the city guards have been selected for training. This is the best chance for us."

The first man turned to the muscular man beside him, "300, it's enough! The timing to act would be 9 pm sharp. Qian Cheng, we'll leave that old bastard Wang Yu Feng to you. He's a peak Type 4 Divine Warrior, you must exercise caution."

Qian Cheng revealed a savage grin, "Hehe!! Old Li, just leave it to me. I will definitely tear that old freak apart."

Old Li then bowed towards the other 4, "Everyone, this battle concerns our rebellion, the future of our Cloud Region. We can only succeed, there's no room for failure!! If we win, we can set the hope of humanity free, but if we lose, then Cloud Region will forever be at the mercy of those selfish tyrants, with the common people suffering and dying in masses. Cloud Region and the future of humanity rest on our shoulders! Everybody, give your all to the cause!"

Qian Cheng laughed savagely, "Old Li, relax, this battle, I will

definitely tear off Wang Yu Feng's head!!"

Another ordinary-looking man with a wooden expression also spoke, "Rest assured! I will do my best!"

The other woman, whose looks were ordinary also replied coldly, "En!"

"9 right? There's still one hour to go!"

Yue Zhong swept a glance at his handheld computer when he heard the time, smiling in expectation, disappearing into the dark.

District A was the residence of only the higher upper-class, and there was not much of a tight security at the boundary of A and B. The people of District B could freely enter District A, even with their differences in class, it was not too far apart like heaven-and-earth.

Yue Zhong evaded a few patrolling units, before entering District A.

District A was different from District B, the structures in A were not as many, however, each structure occupied a huge region, like an entire palace. In each manor, the defense was incredibly tight. Right at the center of the district, there was a medieval castle, it was precisely the city manor of Blood Red City.

Yue Zhong carefully maneuvered until he was in a forest about 200 m away from the castle. He retracted all aura, carefully observing the castle.

Within the 200 of the castle, there were no trees, and lights shone brightly everywhere. Without the ability to conceal oneself, any intruder would immediately be shone upon by those bright lights. There was only one door, and it was guarded by 20 city guards wearing armor similar to the Sun Battle Armor.

On the manor walls, there were many openings for weapons, as well as various sensors of various sizes, emitting strange lights from time to time.

At the same time, above the castle, there were small satellites, suspended in mid-air, keep an eye on everything with a 10 li radius.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong could fully sense the technology that once ruled over this planet, far surpassing that of Earth. Yet the slums of District D could not compare to even farmers on Earth, not experiencing the extent of the technology.

Yue Zhong maintained his position, asking softly, "Bai Yi, are you able to control that satellite in the sky?"

If he could not deal with that satellite in the sky, then it would be impossible to infiltrate the castle. At the same time, it was the eye of the weapons within the manor, allowing all sorts of weapons to be trained on Yue Zhong.

Bai Yi's eyes started to flash with data, before she replied, "Can! I can gain control over the satellite. It would take 3 minutes to break into it, however, it would alert the people inside. If I crack the system quietly, it would take 10 minutes. Please choose your option!"

Yue Zhong, "Quietly!"

"Yes!" Bai Yi's eyes began to stream with data.

Bai Yi suddenly asked, "Master, other than me, there's someone else intending to hack into the system, gaining control of the system. How should I deal with it?"

"Another group?" Yue Zhong frowned, "Are you able to gain control, then pretend to let them have control?"

"Bai Yi replied, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong immediately quipped, "Then do that."

"Yes!"

Bai Yi responded and her eyes flashed with data.

"Someone's coming!"

Ever since he evolved to the Type 5 realm, his sense had heightened, and he could hear faint footsteps approaching. He activated his Third Order Stealth, melding into the night and climbed up a tree, retracting all aura and sins of himself, blending into the environment.

A number of guards with black uniforms, multi-purpose helmets, ray guns, marched over, and the forest was soon overtaken by guards.

The Third Order Stealth was incredibly efficient, concealing Yue Zhong entirely, causing him to be just like a rock.

7 soldiers came to under the tree that Yue Zhong was on, however, they did not notice him at all.

The soldiers could sense all life forms within 30 sqm, but they were actually unable to pick up Yue Zhong.

They were nonetheless well-trained, and they got on the ground, becoming as quiet as the surroundings as well, the atmosphere slowly turning tense.

# Chapter 862: Reapers!

---

One officer glanced at his watch, before he suddenly barked, "It's time! Attack!"

At the same time, a number of soldiers carrying ray guns, charging out from the forest like leopards, storming towards the castle.

Kacha!

Following some loud cracks, the surrounding lights were all extinguished.

As darkness covered the area, it provided the soldiers with the best cover.

"What's going on?"

"What happened?"

"Keep calm!! Keep calm!! Eradicate those damn traitors!!"

"..."

The lights around the castle suddenly went dark, and the entire manor was thrown into panic and chaos. Due to the various officers being caught off-guard, they issued different orders.

From the gun-holes in the castle wall, multiple beams fired out in the dark, without any clear targets.

In the dark, such shots were mainly useless, the majority of them passing through the air and striking the trees and boulders around.

The morale of the rebel troop rose sharply, as they maintained their silence and dashed towards the castle quietly.

One of the officers shouted loudly, "Missile!! Launch the guided missiles!! Quick!! Get rid of those pests!!"

Outside the castle, a small mountain about 2km away suddenly split open, revealing a number of missile launchers. Missiles were

fired, shooting towards the entrance of the manor like meteors.

"No!!!"

The officer looked at the bombardment of shots coming for them, and his eyes flashed with despair as he screamed out.

"Get down!!"

The soldiers who were about to charge also quickly got to the ground.

Hong! Hong!!

A number of missiles slammed into the castle, causing the walls that were made out of alloy to be blasted apart, and a powerful shockwave spread out, enveloping the soldiers who were consumed by the billowing flames as well.

Before the soldiers even got to display their strength using the equipment similar to the Sun Armor, they were consumed by the flames and explosion, leaving nothing behind.

Yue Zhong watched the tall and thick wall made entirely of alloy concrete come crumbling down, his heart shocked, "What a terrifying blast! Even a Type 5 Divine Warrior would not fare better without any defense equipment. The technology of the humans on this planet is truly terrifying."

The alloy concrete was similar to the reinforced-concrete back on earth, however, the defense was more than 10 times of that on Earth.

If an electromagnetic beam blasted out on reinforced-concrete, it could easily penetrate a 5m-thick wall. However, the same beam only managed to create a 20cm hole in the alloy concrete wall.

"Charge!! Eradicate all those damn worms!!"

A military officer roared out in rage and charged towards the inner parts of the manor.

Over a hundred soldiers followed closely behind, charging

towards the manor.

The city manor occupied a large part of Red Blood City, just barely smaller than the Forbidden City of Earth. The soldiers continued to charge in their bloodlust and madness.

The 2 units clashed in a mad slaughter the moment they encountered each other.

Yue Zhong remained outside and saw the 5 leaders from the villa whose conversation he had overheard.

"Haha!! Dogshit!! Go to hell!! Go to hell!! Die!!" Qian Cheng was in a Type 4 Mutant Nuclei Battle Armor, his spear flashing out like a mad demon as he charged into the formations. The spear in his hand continued to pierce out with powerful energy blades, easily slicing up many soldiers, as fresh blood splattered everywhere. No one was a match for him.

A number of small units charged towards Qian Cheng, only to be slaughtered within a few breaths. He was like a spearhead that charged right through all obstacles, edging closer towards the manor.

As both sides were engaged in an all-out slaughter, Yue Zhong activated his Third Order Stealth, noiselessly blending into the dark. No one noticed him.

The Stealth ability was one to conceal the user and all traces of his or her presence. After reaching the Third Order stage, it was even more powerful, almost to an unbelievable extent. Yue Zhong could walk comfortably in the dark as though enveloped by it, no matter how much an ordinary person might stare, they wouldn't be able to see Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong continued to sneak through the manor, moving towards the center of the place.

Based on Bai Yi's report, the central computer sat right at the center of the manor. However, it was being protected by some

form of an energy barrier, thus, Bai Yi could not send out her long-range electromagnetic wave to gain control.

The rebel army continued to tear through the defenses one by one like slashing down tall blades of grass. Suddenly, a loud rumble sounded from afar, and 5 huge battle robots soared through the skies, heading for them. Behind their backs, there were multiple Type 3 and Type 4 nuclei, with countless runes engraved all over their frames. They even wielded electromagnetic cannons.

Old Li looked at the appearance of the 5 robots and his face fell, roaring loudly, "It's the Reapers!! Everyone, scatter!!"

When the soldiers turned their heads, their faces lost color as well, and they quickly dove for cover, while firing their weapons at the incoming Reapers.

Multiple beams that could easily pierce through RH2s fired towards those 5 Reapers.

The runes on the 5 Reapers lit up, and a powerful energy shield was conjured in front of them, blocking the assault of those beams.

Yue Zhong's eyes lit up at the sight of that, sighing in spite of himself, "Energy shield conversion technology! This is actually combined with the mech technology, this planet's technology is truly amazing!!"

With the energy shield conversion, the defense of these Reapers was even more powerful than those RH2s. Even a Mid-Grade Dino-General would not be able to tear apart such a robot with his bare hands.

If it were the RH2s, an ordinary Dino-warrior could rip one apart easily.

After the 5 Reapers managed to block the assault of those guns, their shoulders opened up, revealing multiple cannons, and a number of rockets were fired out in all directions.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As the explosions rang out without stop, the soldiers hiding behind cover were instantly obliterated by those missiles.

In a split second, the hundreds of rebel soldiers were instantly suppressed by the firepower of the Reapers.

# Chapter 863: Siege!

---

With an impregnable defense and tyrannical firepower, these 5 Reapers were almost invincible existences on the battlefield, exuding a cold, metallic killing intent.

Old Li of the rebel army roared out, "Satellite!! Control them!!"

The 5 Reapers were truly terrifying, just a single one could cause a problem for everyone present. It would take a huge price to take one down. Once they were held up here, the reinforcements that were already on the way would be able to route and eliminate them.

As Old Li shouted, the satellite in mid-air flashed, and the movements of the Reapers suddenly faltered. At the middle of their frames, their cockpits opened up, revealing 5 shocked pilots.

In order to gain a better understanding and feel of the battlefield, the 5 Reapers were assisted by the satellite. The commander only had to issue a flurry of orders, controlling the 5 Reapers to attack their enemies. At the same time, if the pilots had any strange thoughts, the Manor Lord could make use of the satellite to wrest control over the Reapers. This design had turned out to be a flaw of the Reapers.

The moment the cockpits opened up and the pilots exposed, the rebel army began to fire out, their beams tearing into the 5 pilots.

Once that was taken care of, the 5 Reapers ceased all movements, staying quietly there.

5 other soldiers quickly charged out from the rebel army, leaping into the cockpits, becoming the new pilots.

One of the officer from the manor roared out with fury, "Crush them!! We cannot let the Reapers end up in the hands of the rebels!!"

The moment those Reapers ended up in the hands of the rebels,

then their firepower would improve and become even more terrifying. The entire manor would not have much strength to resist their assault then.

The Reapers were one of the strongest technological weapons of Cloud Region. There were only about 100 of them, and they were usually used against the Dino-race that possessed stronger physique and might than humans. Manufacturing one would require a lot of money and effort. At the same time, everyone knew what these machines were capable of, upon operating the energy shields, even a Mid-Grade Dino-General would not be able to penetrate them.

The city guards rapidly opened fire, shooting their own electromagnetic laser beams towards the 5 Reapers. Before those robots operated the Energy Shields, they were likewise vulnerable to laser and electromagnetic beams.

Just as the beams were able to slam into the Reapers, a number of energy shields appeared in front of them, blocking the attacks successfully.

Following some roaring of engines, the eyes of the 5 Reaper robots flashed red, and they turned around swiftly, opening up their shoulder plates again, revealing the electromagnetic cannons within.

The next moment, multiple beams were fired out, heading straight for the city guards inside the manor.

With the help of the targeting system of the satellite in the sky, a number of city guards were penetrated by the laser beams, as they rolled around and moaned.

Under the scrutiny of the satellite, even if the city guards were to hide behind covers, they would still be slaughtered by the Reapers.

With the satellite assisting the Reapers, both parties could exhibit a terrifying killing rate. In an area of about 2sq km radius, their

error margin would be within 0.2m. Due to the sheer might of the combination of both equipment, the city manor specifically had a satellite installed.

One officer shouted out, "Radio wave shield!! Quickly, deploy the radio wave shield!!"

After he shouted his orders, a number of radar discs suddenly emerged from the city manor, emitting powerful radio waves outwards.

The powerful radio waves instantly cut off the connection between the 5 Reapers and the satellite in the sky, preventing the efficient targeting system from slaughtering their city guards wantonly.

Bai Yi suddenly spoke up with a warning, "Warning! Warning! Due to the presence of radio waves, I've temporarily lost control of the satellite. In order to regain control, we must leave the affected region."

Bai Yi was relying on her own electronic waves to infiltrate equipment. While her ability was powerful, it was likewise vulnerable sometimes. In such a huge region with interference, it was hard for her to exhibit her abilities to the fullest.

Yue Zhong's gaze fell upon the distance and muttered mildly, "Got it!"

After losing the support of the satellite, the 5 Reapers stopped all of their attacks. Their eyes flashed red and marched onward into the manor. With every step, there was a loud booming sound, full of overbearing pressure.

Various laser beams and electromagnetic beams fired out from different alleys, causing minor ripples on the energy shields generated by those Reapers.

In order to destroy these seemingly-invincible Reapers, there was one more foolish idea, which was to go all out to wear down on the

energy shield. Maintaining the energy shields required energy, if one were to forcefully attack, the shield would be depleted of its energy reserves. Once the energy was spent, they would just be 5 robots with high attacking power. Using electromagnetic beams and lasers, it would be enough to tear through their hulls.

The rebel army did not waste time, as they continued to fire their own weapons. With the help of the 5 Reapers, the rebel forces obtained the upper hand, slowly destroying the different posts of the city guards.

However, with the loss of the satellite's support, even if the 5 Reapers had a tyrannical firepower, the speed of the rebels' advance slowed down considerably. They had to sweep every single area for life signs, dominating each checkpoint by eliminating the city guards there.

From time to time, there would be a burst of beams from a pile of rubble, directly killing one or two rebel soldiers. The pile of rubble would immediately become the focus of other retaliating fire, turning into dust.

Both sides were unrelenting and merciless in their fight, causing a piling body count with each passing second.

As they continued to tear each other apart, Yue Zhong had already passed the battlefield while still in his Stealth. Under the cover of the night, he sneaked past the city guards, appearing in the center part of the manor.

At this moment, all of the troops within Blood Red City were gathered at this location, preparing to engage the rebels. They began to get in cover with their armor similar to the Sun Battle Armor.

"300, no! More than 400!!"

In the dark, Yue Zhong did a quick headcount and was shocked. There were actually over 400 warriors with enhanced equipment

within this city manor.

With the enhancement of the equipment, these soldiers could reach the Type 3 Divine Warrior stage of strength. If they were deployed out of Cloud Region, they would be a considerable faction anywhere. Instead, here, they were just ordinary city guards.

When Yue Zhong had destroyed the Sun Alliance, he had obtained a batch of equipment for his own troops. However, with his abundant experience, he could tell that his own subordinates were a far cry from these city guards.

Yue Zhong's forces were made up of mostly slaves, their battle experience still lacking. However, the forces of Blood Red City had been constantly fighting against the Dino-warriors, hence the gap between both.

The defense inside the manor was tight, Yue Zhong even saw a few generals with Type 4 Mutant Nuclei Battle Armor.

Even a Type 5 Divine Warrior would be in peril when surrounded by so many elite soldiers powered by enhanced equipment.

Yue Zhong eyed the numerous experts silently, discovering that the entrance was guarded by 20 elite soldiers. At the same time, there was an expert with a Type 4 Battle Armor. Even if Yue Zhong were to utilize Stealth, it would be hard to sneak past them. The skill did not grant him an incorporeal body after all.

Yue Zhong raised his hand, and fired out a line of silk from his ring, sticking to a rooftop within the inner parts of the mansion. He retracted it, pulling himself up onto the roof.

He then stuck his palm onto a glass window, his Devil Flame burning through it easily. With a light jump, he managed to enter a room within the inner city.

The dozens of experts within the inner city did not seem to notice Yue Zhong's silent entry into the place.

Yue Zhong took out his handheld computer again and asked Bai

Yi, "Are you able to control the security cameras and sensors here?"

Within this Blood Red City, the experts were numerous. Yue Zhong did not know just how many experts were here. Forcefully breaking in was the last resort he was reluctant to employ.

The prehistoric tech was extremely important to humans. Without them, just based on their weaker physique compared to the Flesh-Eaters, Vampires, Sea Clan, and other intelligent life forms, they would be at a huge disadvantage. Be it the humans on Earth, or the expansion of Yue Zhong's various forces, he had to obtain the tech within Cloud Region.

Bai Yi responded, "Ok! The central computer of the entire Blood Red City is about 200m underground, please follow the indicated path."

"Ok!"

Yue Zhong darted out of the room.

# Chapter 864: Tyrannical Yue Zhong!

---

Outside the room, a number of crystals light up the corridor, revealing some security cameras and sensors.

As he dashed out, the feed from the cameras and sensors painted a different story.

Bai Yi spoke, "There's a fire escape on the left in 30m."

He swept to the left, and located the stairs easily, before heading down speedily.

With Bai Yi controlling the security feed, she helped navigate Yue Zhong to avoid a number of enemies, sneaking all the way down.

Just as he was about 20m underground, Bai Yi suddenly asked, "There's an armory about 30m to the right. Do you want to check it out?"

As a Super A.I., Bai Yi had near-human thought-process and with the constant exposure to Yue Zhong, she knew his habits and interests.

He heard it and came to a stop, "An armory?"

With his Storage Ring being upgraded to the Level 10 treasure, its internal space had been expanded many times. It could easily store an armory's worth of equipment. Therefore, he was highly tempted.

"Are there any guards?"

"There're four soldiers keeping guard!"

Bai Yi swiftly displayed the feed from the entrance of the armory.

Yue Zhong took a look and noticed 4 soldiers in Type 3 Battle Armor standing guard.

Yue Zhong pondered for a moment before choosing to give it up, "Forget it! Our objective is the central computer. I'll have to forgo

these additional things for now."

Yue Zhong's target was to get the information within the central computer, there might possibly be information that he sorely needed. As for the armory, he could consider it once everything else was settled.

The defense of the underground base was incredibly tight, with numerous sensors, security cameras, laser nets, cannons, electrical fences, and even electromagnetic cannons. These were all automatic as well. If it had been any other Type 5 Divine Warrior, they would have been blasted many times. Yue Zhong could sneak past so many purely due to Bai Yi's help to get past all the defenses.

Bai Yi suddenly warned, "Warning, there are currently 10 soldiers with Type 3 Battle Armors coming this way from the left about 30m. There's no way to evade them."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed icily, and his body flickered forward, dashing towards the location, "Since we can't evade, we will eradicate them!"

In a breath's time, Yue Zhong had reached the corner, slamming into the midst of the soldiers like a hurricane. With his blade out, a number of slashes caught them by surprise.

While these 10 soldiers were experienced fighters of countless battles that had crawled through rivers of blood and mountains of corpses, against the sneak attack of a Type 5 Divine Warrior like Yue Zhong, they were unable to react at all. Their heads had rolled to the ground in sprays of blood by the time Yue Zhong flashed past them.

When he was done, he quickly removed their Type 3 Armor and Battle Spear, keeping them in his Storage Ring. They were top equipment, and he would not pass up on them.

After looting them clean, Yue Zhong continued through the tunnel.

Just as he was about to step through another gold-alloy door, a powerful sense of danger arose in his heart. He leaped up to the roof of the tunnel, his entire body billowing with his Dark Dou Qi, keeping him latched on the surface.

At the moment Yue Zhong jumped, a number of electromagnetic beams shot out from the door, blasting the area full of holes. Had Yue Zhong been through the door, he would have been turned into a sieve.

Since Yue Zhong's evolution to the Type 5 realm, his Body of Steel ability was at the Third Order stage. Even heavy caliber bullets and small cannons would not be able to pierce through his body. However, it was insufficient for him to block laser guns, ray guns, and electromagnetic beams.

A voice filled with resentment traveled up, "You've come? Damn rebel soldier. Since you're here, come on in. I do not know what methods you've employed to actually sneak in here, I'm sure you can see what's going on in here. If you don't come, I'll kill this bitch!!"

Yue Zhong flipped his hands, pulling out the handheld computer. On the display, right behind the door, there was a Reaper pointing its electromagnetic cannon at the door. Beside it, a handsome, middle-aged man wearing a Type 4 Battle Armor was grabbing a beautiful woman while speaking furiously. Nearby them, there were 9 corpses, their manner of death grotesque and horrible.

Yue Zhong eyed the scene, trying to guess the identities of those 2, "Is she a rebel spy? He's Wang Yu Feng?"

He pondered for a while, before he took out an energy conversion shield, and leaped directly into the room.

Wang Yu Feng's face was contorted in fury, as he sent a slap towards the beauty, "As expected, this bitch must be someone high up your ranks. For her, an expert like was actually willing to come here to die for her. Stinking bitch, you really screwed me over!!"

The beauty's face started to swell as she spat out a mouthful of blood, a few of her teeth sent flying.

"Save...me!"

The beauty looked towards Yue Zhong and pleaded. Her current state was extremely wretched, without a trace of her looks. No matter how pretty a woman, if struck across the face, and their face swelled, as well as having teeth knocked out and tears streaming down the face, it would not be a pretty sight.

Wang Yu Feng's eyes flashed cruelly as he laughed at Yue Zhong coldly, "Kill yourself!! If you kill yourself, I'll let her go. How about it? If you don't, I'll break her neck!!"

Yue Zhong eyed the lady coldly as well. With a tap of his foot, he shot towards Wang Yu Feng. He had nothing to do with this lady, he would not put his life on the line for some stranger.

Wang Yu Feng stared fixedly at Yue Zhong. The moment Yue Zhong moved, he barked out, "Ah Qiang, kill him!!!"

The front armor of the Reaper opened up slightly, but it was immediately closed off again. At the same time, countless alarms blared within the robot's frame, as the instruments and equipments went haywire. The pilot tried frantically to restore order, to no avail.

"Beast!!"

Wang Yu Feng's face fell, and he tossed the lady towards Yue Zhong. At the same time, his eyes flashed with a tinge of viciousness, as his Battle Spear materialized and he thrust towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong saw how ruthlessly Wang Yu Feng tossed the beauty. He did not hesitate to cast his Third Order Gravity Manipulation, as a 30-times gravitational field enveloped the area with him as the center.

The injured beauty was instantly affected, and plunged down to

the ground hard, dying instantly.

As for Wang Yu Feng, his body sunk, his every movement requiring much more energy to perform.

With a flash, Yue Zhong disappeared from his location, appearing behind Wang Yu Feng, and he sent a Type 4 Puppet Rune into the back of his head.

There was a glow of light, and Wang Yu Feng fell into a coma, the Type 4 Puppet Rune entering his brain.

"Have I become this strong?" Yue Zhong wondered in excitement and felt a sense of accomplishment at the split second defeat of Wang Yu Feng.

Wang Yu Feng was a peak-Type 4 expert, with the enhancement of his Battle Armor, he could reach the Type 5 stage, and yet, he could not take a single strike from Yue Zhong.

After defeating Wang Yu Feng in a single move, Yue Zhong looked at the Reaper, and the cockpit was released, revealing the pilot inside.

"Go to hell!! Go to hell!!"

The pilot shouted aggressively, pulling out his gun at his side, as he fired multiple shots at Yue Zhong. However, his vision blurred, Yue Zhong appearing right in front of him, sending a slap to the back of his head, together with a Puppet Rune.

Yue Zhong then proceeded to flick towards Wang Yu Feng's head with his finger wrapped in Dark Dou Qi, sending a gust of wind at him, waking him up.

Wang Yu Feng stirred and immediately bowed in respect, "Master!!"

Yue Zhong then ordered, "Bring me down!"

Wang Yu Feng responded, "Yes! Master!"

At this time, the distance to the central computer was not far,

with only a few ordinary workers as well as 4 security guards.

They did not dare get close to Wang Yu Feng, as both he and Yue Zhong went towards the central computer brazenly.

"This is the central computer of Blood Red City then?"

In the center of the huge hall, there was a huge, mechanical construct made of alloy. It was blood-red in color, and there were dozens of displays on it, as well as multiple buttons and lights.

Right in the middle of this structure, there was a Type 5 Mutant Beast nucleus, countless mysterious runes emitting out of it. Each time the nucleus glowed, it felt like the beating heart of the computer.

# Chapter 865: Situation Under Control!

---

Bai Yi spoke, "This central computer possesses some highly advanced anti-radio wave invasion technology. My waves cannot affect it, please place me closer!!"

Yue Zhong followed her instructions and set down the handheld computer right beside the metallic construct.

A number of fine gold-alloy cables stuck out from the computer and inserted themselves into the central computer.

In an instant, Bai Yi's eyes turned into flowing streams of data.

The displays of the central computer suddenly lit up, and numbers and data flowed past each of the screens. A bright flash occurred and Bai Yi's image appeared on them.

She then spoke up, "Master, I've already gained control of the central computer. After a thorough search, this system does not possess any information on any technology or anything from their history."

Yue Zhong was filled with disappointment, "Not at all?"

This time, Yue Zhong's main objective in infiltrating Blood Red City was to obtain the technology that the Cloud Region possessed. Without getting what he came for, he was truly dismayed.

Wang Yu Feng spoke, "Master, all of the technology and information of Cloud Region is stored in the Capital City that is under the charge of the master, Wei Ming Qing. All of the other subordinate cities would not have the information. However, I have a few subordinates who had worked on those prehistoric technologies before."

Yue Zhong's eyes lit up slightly, "That isn't too bad!"

Talented people who had worked on any tech were valuable to Yue Zhong. With human resources, Yue Zhong would be able to

train up a new batch of talents. However, while it was easy to talk about training new talents, in reality, it was never easy, especially for this world.

This was because this world was backward in terms of their foundations. Most of his current subordinates were illiterate. They were courageous when getting them to fight enemies. However, to get them to conduct research into technology, it would be difficult. After all, the majority of them could not even perform the simplest of arithmetic calculations.

Sun Lan Lan was at most of a high-school standard, and yet, she was already considered one of the more learned ones within Yue Zhong's subordinates. Every day, there would be increasing people learning to read under her tutelage.

Bai Yi suddenly said, "Master, the central computer not only controls all the automation and electronics within the city, it also has access to 2 armed satellites and 4 reconnaissance satellites that orbit around 20 km above the Xue Luo 20 Forts."

Yue Zhong stirred, "Armed satellites! What kind of weapons is on them? What's the effective range?"

"They have 10 mega laser cannons, an effective range of about 30 km."

Yue Zhong turned to Wang Yu Feng who was standing respectfully beside, "Wang Yu Feng, since Cloud Region has the strength to manufacture low-altitude satellites, how come you guys don't utilize those space ones?"

All around the Blood Red City manor, there were many low-altitude satellites. Although they were incredibly useful, in terms of security and energy consumption, it was definitely incomparable to those space ones. Yue Zhong did not understand why they did not fire those space armed satellites since it was entirely possible for them to do so with their technology that surpassed Earth.

Wang Yu Feng responded, "It is not that we do not want to, it's that we cannot. Those hundreds of armed satellites are the remnants of the era before the Great Devastation. They are all under the control of the Dino-people. Some of the ones that we built and sent up had been destroyed by those armed satellites. Therefore, we can only set up a few within the lower altitude to defend our Cloud Region."

Yue Zhong frowned and continued to ask, "Has your technology level all these years not reached the level of the era before the Great Devastation?"

Wang Yu Feng replied, "Incomparable. After the Dino-race defeated our human race and became the rulers of this world, most of the factories and research labs had been destroyed, with countless amounts of knowledge and technology buried along with the past. Our Cloud Region had barely managed to hold on to some and developed from there to get to where we are today. Since most of our science came from the past, we have not yet broken through."

Yue Zhong then asked, "Other than the Reapers, are there any special weapons of war within Cloud Region?"

Wang Yu Feng replied softly, "There are 36 Laser Cannon-mounted vehicles, 472 Laser Mirror Guns. Some of our City Guards are equipped with Type 5 enhancing Armor. We also have an aerial robot combat unit, as well as self-guided missiles. The strongest would be one and only Raytheon Cannon sitting within the Capital City. The range of the Raytheon Cannon is over 20 km, the firing rate is once every 4 minutes, and its area of impact is about a 1 km diameter. Even a Type 6 Mutant Beast would be killed instantly by the sheer might of the cannon. It's the strongest weapon of Cloud Region, and a remnant technology of the past era."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with delight, "So there're still other strong weapons, within Cloud Region. It truly is the last stand of humanity then."

The stronger the Cloud Region's technology was, the better it would be for his strength.

Bai Yi suddenly issued a warning, displaying an image at the same time, "Warning! Warning! The rebel army had already broken past the final city defense! The estimated time for them to reach our current position is 10 minutes!"

On the various displays, many rebel soldiers were currently making their way over. Some city guards had even joined in, as they launched their own assault inward.

Currently, many of the city guards had been forced to retreat behind cover. However, the might of the 5 Reapers were constantly unleashed, obliterating those soldiers.

"Seems like it's time for us to make a move! Let's go!"

Yue Zhong glanced at the display, taking the handheld computer up as he made his way out.

Wang Yu Feng followed tightly behind.

After Bai Yi had gained control of the Blood Red City's central computer, the entire underground fortress had become a death trap, even if the Reapers were to charge in, they would be torn apart and ripped to shreds by the various defense systems. There was no need for Yue Zhong to be worried about defense at all.

Initially, Yue Zhong had managed to infiltrate easily because of Bai Yi, gaining control over the various automated defenses. If it had been any other Type 5 Divine Warrior, they could not have done what he did.

"Go to hell!! Go to hell!"

In front of the city manor, Qian Cheng was screaming like an enraged demon, spearheading the charge in. Everywhere he went, the city guards would be torn to pieces.

Seeing the seemingly invincible enemy tearing through their

ranks, many of the city guards lost their fighting spirit, as they retreated frantically into the inner city. Some even got down on their knees and surrendered.

Humans were after all not robots, no matter how ferocious they might be, there would be a point where morale would fall and crumble. Furthermore, these city guards were facing their own kind, not the Dino-warriors. This affected their degree of willingness as well.

"Stop!"

Following a cold bark, a number of automated defenses that had been quiet all these while suddenly came to life, firing multiple beams at the rebel soldiers.

When Qian Cheng saw those beams, his face fell and he ducked to one side.

The commander of the rebels, Old Li, also shouted out with alarm, "Hidden attack!! Hidden attack!! Reapers!! You're up!!"

The hundred of rebel soldiers parted, ducking behind cover.

"Reapers!! Attack!! Why aren't you attacking?"

When he realized that the Reapers were not firing at all, Old Li turned to look, and what he saw cause cold sweat down his back. The cockpits of those Reapers were open, and the powerful mechanical hands were grabbing their own pilots, while the laser cannons were trained on the rebel soldiers.

When Old Li saw this strange scene, his heart clenched, "Satellite!! They have regained the control of the satellite!!"

It was only possible to control the Reapers from the satellites, thus ejecting the pilots and taking away their command.

Many of the rebel soldiers saw this strange scene and felt a cold shiver down their spines.

This time, the rebel army had been able to charge through the

Blood Red City manor because they had spies gaining control of the satellites, obtaining these 5 killing machines. With these machines, they had crushed the city guards and suppressed them entirely, pushing their assault further in.

Now, they had lost control of the 5 Reapers to the city again, plus the spies within the underground base were captured. The rebel army knew they had no chance of winning.

From within the inner city, a number of sensors fired out holographic beams, projecting Wang Yu Feng's image. His cold countenance glared at the rebel soldiers, saying, "Surrender!! If you surrender, I can promise to leave you all alive."

Qian Cheng spat a mouthful of saliva at the image, roaring unwillingly, "Pei! You damn coward, if you have the guts, come out here and take me on!! If you can win me, I will immediately surrender!! Sending a holographic image out, what kind of hero are you, coward?!"

Wang Yu Feng spoke indifferently, "The Xue Luo Guards are arriving soon. If you still want to resist, there's no need for me to act, they will kill you automatically. If you surrender now, you'll still have a chance!"

"Xue Luo Guards!!"

When they heard that, all the rebels lost color in their faces, their fighting spirit absolutely crushed.

The Xue Luo Guards were the most elite of soldiers of the 20 Forts, every one of the experts that had slaughtered their way through mountains of enemies and seas of blood. Each of them was at the peak-Type 3 Divine Warrior realm, equipped with Type 3 Battle Armor.

# Chapter 866: Tyrant's Orders!

---

Each one of the Xue Luo Guards was like freaks, even when not wearing their armor, they could kill Dino-warriors in combat. They were after all the most elite troops of the 20 Forts, with abundant experience. These rebel soldiers would not last long against those Xue Luo Guards. There was one distinguishable feature of the Xue Luo Guards, which were their ferociousness. Not only were they vicious towards the Dino-race, they were likewise merciless towards other humans who rebel, with almost no survivors from their hands.

If the 5 Reapers were still in the hands of the rebel army, they might still stand a chance against the Xue Luo Guards. However, once the control was turned back to the city manor, then there was almost no doubt about who was going to suffer.

All of a sudden, there was a shout of despair, "Xue Luo Guards!! The Xue Luo Guards are here!! They're surrounding us from behind!!"

The single shout caused their final ray of defense in their minds to snap, and the leader Old Li sighed once, before throwing down his spear, and shouted, "Wang Yu Feng, we surrender! Remember your promise to protect our brothers!! Otherwise, I will not let you off even when I become a ghost!"

Wang Yu Feng responded coldly, "Put down your weapons!! Raise your hands above your heads and surrender now!!"

Old Li also let out a sigh as he ordered the surrounding soldiers, "Put down your weapons!!"

The rebel soldiers exchanged looks, turning silent, before finally throwing their weapons down and hugging their heads with their hands, surrendering.

Even the ferocious Qian Cheng had thrown his Battle Spear

roughly towards the ground in an unwilling manner, his expression helpless.

Although he was brave, he was not stupid. The 5 Reapers were absolutely able to kill them all, adding on to the infamous Xue Luo Troops who could take on Mutant Beasts and the Dino-race, forcefully continuing would just spell their deaths.

A number of soldiers walked out from the manor to oversee and process the rebel soldiers.

Soon, over a hundred soldiers in Type 3 Battle Armor came roaring into the area on top of countless valiant-looking motorcycles with an overwhelming sense of bloodlust and killing intent, their laser weapons ready to fire.

These soldiers were the Xue Luo Troops, every one of them filled with bloodlust. They stared at the surrendered troops and exuded more killing intent. The moment the order was given, they would charge up and slaughter all of them.

The leader of the Xue Luo Troops stared at the soldiers kneeling, his hands gripping his Battle Spear tightly as he licked his lips.

The killing intent was so palpable that the soldiers around him felt it, and they could not help but tremble, revealing fear on their faces.

Right at this time, Wang Yu Feng walked out from the inner city, smiling towards the Xue Luo troops, "Many thanks for General Jia's timely reinforcement!"

The leader of the Xue Luo Guards was called Jia Yu, a peak-Type 4 Divine Warrior, half-a-step into the Type 5 realm. He had killed two Low-Grade Dino-Generals by himself before, and even the city lord Wang Yu Feng would have to be courteous to him.

Jia Yu swept a cold glance towards those on the ground while speaking with a killing intent, "Wang Yu Feng, do you need me to kill these fellows for you?"

Wang Yu Feng wore a smile and replied, "It's fine, there's no need for you to act. They had already submitted to me, I'll deal with them myself. Come, Captain Jia, let us have a good drink. We have troubled your brothers as well, I will get my men to take care of them."

As the manor lord, not only was personal strength important, in fact, the reason why Wang Yu Feng could become the city lord of Blood Red City was due to his interpersonal skills. He was amicable to everybody and knew how to work favors and express his goodwill.

Jia Yu nodded slightly before his gaze fell upon Yue Zhong, who stood beside Wang Yu Feng, "This person is...?"

Yue Zhong stood forward to reply in a tone that was neither servile nor overbearing, "Captain Jia! This subordinate is Yue Zhong, a personal guard of Sir City Lord!"

Jia Yu kept his eye on him, his eyes flashing with appreciation, "Wang Yu Feng, this personal guard of yours is decent. How about giving him to my Xue Luo Troops? I will use a Type 4 Battle Armor to exchange for him!"

Although Jia Yu had not discerned Yue Zhong's true strength, with his beast-like battle instinct, he could feel that Yue Zhong was dangerous, even threatening, to him. He was extremely excited, that was why he proposed the exchange. A Type 4 Battle Armor was not cheap after all, even within Blood Red City, there were not many of such suits available.

Wang Yu Feng replied with a chuckle and shook his head, "Not exchanging, Yue Zhong is the number one expert under me. Captain Jia, come, I've just received a batch of beautiful virgins, you'll like them for sure. Let us drink till we're drunk."

Jia Yu saw that Wang Yu Feng had rejected him, and his eyes flashed with regret. However, he did not insist on it, instead, following behind Wang Yu Feng. Although he was the leader of the

Xue Luo Guards, he was just merely one of the notable leaders in Blood Red City. In truth, his position and status were still below Wang Yu Feng.

When the group came into the huge hall, there were already a number of beautiful, young ladies dressed skimpily waiting respectfully.

Jia Yu swept them a gaze, before saying, "Dismiss them all, I've something to tell you!"

"You're all dismissed!" Wang Yu Feng waved his hands.

"Yes! Master!"

The dozens of beautiful ladies responded in unison and left the room, leaving only their fragrance.

Jia Yu kept his gaze on Yue Zhong while frowning.

Wang Yu Feng smiled lightly, "Captain Jia, Yue Zhong's my trusted aide, there are no problems with his loyalty."

Jia Yu then handed an imperial order to Wang Yu Feng, "That's good. Wang Yu Feng, heed this order. His Majesty has ordered you to send all the poor folks from District D to the capital."

Wang Yu Feng received it and took a look, before handing it to Yue Zhong.

Jia Yu frowned once more.

Wang Yu Feng quickly explained, "Captain Jia, Yue Zhong is also the commander of my troops."

Yue Zhong glanced at the imperial order, noting that the tone was incredibly urgent, commanding all District D residents to make their way towards the Capital City at all costs.

Yue Zhong frowned; he could sense something strange brewing from the imperial order.

Inside Cloud Region, humans ruled most of the area, however,

there were still 2/3 of the region still considered the wilderness. There were various Mutant Beasts of different degrees of danger, even including a particular territory of a Type 5 Mutant Beast.

The Capital City of Cloud Region was extremely far from Blood Red City, over 4,000 km away. In order to move over hundreds of thousands of people through that distance, it would require massive resources, and if preparations were inadequate, there would be deaths.

The technology of Cloud Region was two-pronged, but while the combat area was advanced and revolutionary, the technology used by civilians were simple, even backward.

The distance between the Blood Red City and Capital City was actually 4,000 km, and yet, there were no railroads or systems of mass transport in place.

If ordinary people were to use their own legs to travel a distance of 4,000 km, it would definitely result in numerous casualties.

Yue Zhong fell silent for a while before asking, "Captain Jia, do you have any idea why His Majesty would pass such a command?"

Jia Yu's tone turned frosty as he eyed Wang Yu Feng, "I do not know. However, as military, we serve and obey. Since His Majesty has passed such an order, we just have to follow. Wang Yu Feng, tomorrow, you had better get started on carrying out the order, do you understand?"

Jia Yu was a simple military man, only knowing to carry out orders from his superiors. He did not care how many lives could potentially be lost from such an order, and he was not clear what the consequences of such an order would be. He had never thought about it.

Yue Zhong was silent and replied, "I understand! We will carry out His Majesty's orders with immediate effect!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's response, Jia Yu's countenance turned

slightly better, "That's good to hear!"

Wang Yu Feng then laughed and pressed a button, "Since our official business has concluded, let us enjoy ourselves!! Men!!"

Not long after Wang Yu Feng gave his orders, the women came back into the hall and started performing a dance.

The serious Jia Yu also began to relax, pulling a beautiful woman into his embrace, his hands roaming everywhere. Although he was a military person, he was also hot-blooded after all. To him, playing with women was an ordinary thing.

As Jia Yu was enjoying himself and immersing in pleasure, Yue Zhong handed a small piece of paper to Wang Yu Feng.

Wang Yu Feng glanced at it, before turning the paper into ash. He then nodded to Yue Zhong, who dismissed himself noiselessly.

Within the inner city, there was a huge underground prison. Right now, the usually empty jail was packed with the rebel soldiers, who were all in low spirits.

The higher command of this rebel soldiers was gathered together in another cell, the wooden-faced male sighing gently, "This time, we're finished!!"

This cell was filled with all the important commanders of the rebel army.

Of the 5 commanders who had gathered in secret, there were only 4 left; Old Li, Qian Cheng, Wooden-faced, and Pony-tailed Beauty. The ordinary woman with extraordinary strength had died on the battlefield.

Old Li and the rest were tied up tightly with silk from a Mutant Tooth Spider. The silk was incredibly tough, to the point where even a Type 4 Divine Warrior might not be able to escape from them. At the same time, they were administered some strange concoction that sapped them of their strength. They could not muster any energy at all and were no different from ordinary

people, a far cry from their Type 4 Divine Warrior status.

In the room, there were sensors, monitors as well as laser weapons. The moment they tried anything funny, the laser weapons would fire out and blast them apart.

The laser weapons were terrifying, as even Mid-Grade Dino-Generals were torn apart by them before, not to mention ordinary humans.

Qian Cheng began to complain, "We should have gone all out! At the very least, our deaths will have some meaning. You guys insisted on surrendering!! Look what we've gotten ourselves into, our lives and deaths are in their hands. If anybody wants to kill us now, we can't even resist!"

The pony-tailed beauty barked out, "Shut up! Qian Cheng! It's not as though you weren't clear about the situation then! If we had resisted, our hundreds of brothers would have been annihilated by those fellows from the Xue Luo Guards!!"

Qian Cheng retorted, "Zheng Li Wen! If we had resisted then, true, every one of us might have died! But at least, we could kill more enemies with us. Now, we're trapped here in a cell, the enemies can kill us, but we cannot do anything to them!!"

Zheng Li Wen's face turned ugly as she raised her voice, "What did you say?!"

Old Li, who had been silent all this while, piped up, "Enough! We might not die! In fact, our chance might be coming soon!"

Yue Zhong chuckled as he came up to the cell, "That's right! Seems like you're an intelligent person. I like speaking with smart people. I'm Yue Zhong."

Old Li replied indifferently, "I'm Li Cheng Shan. This is Zheng Li Wen, that's Qian Cheng and that is Liu Qi. Since you've come here, you must have received the order from that tyrant to transport all District D residents to the Capital City, right?"

Yue Zhong replied, "That's right. What do you know, tell me everything. Depending on your answer, I might let you all live."

Li Cheng Shan suddenly asked, with difficulty, "What happened to Si Si?"

Yue Zhong responded emotionlessly, "She should be dead!"

Li Cheng Shan's face turned pale, and he seemed to age a few years, before sighing, "That tyrant is crazy. He wants to break through to the Type 6 Divine Warrior stage, so he wants to collect all the poor folk in Capital City."

Yue Zhong's face turned ugly, "Blood-sucking Bees?!"

The Blood-sucking Bees could produce Blood Honey, that was rich in life force and energy, strengthening a person's constitution and physique, helping them evolve. The Dino-race had been utilizing such a method to become strong, conquering human establishments, capturing them as livestock for the bees.

Li Cheng Shan nodded, "That's right! The tyrant is actually a genius in training and cultivation. He's only 46 this year and has already reached the Type 5 Divine Warrior realm. His obsession with breaking through had caused him to go mad. 3 months ago, 400,000 of the poor folk in the Capital City had been killed cleanly, turning into his source of nutrients in the form of Blood Honey. However, it was not enough to help his breakthrough, thus he's now issuing the commands to gather the poor folks from other cities as well!"

# Chapter 867: Cooperation!

---

Yue Zhong sucked in a breath of cold air, "400,000?! Is he crazy?"

He did not expect to come across such a sick pervert who would resort to such means in order to become stronger.

Li Cheng Shan stared at Yue Zhong and continued, "It isn't just 400,000 anymore. Before we came to Blood Red City, based on our intelligence, over 800,000 had already died at his hands. We wouldn't have gathered so many like-minded compatriots otherwise."

"800,000 humans?! Monster!!"

When Yue Zhong heard the number, he could vividly imagine the mountain of corpses sacrificed. His heart turned cold, while at the same time, his wariness increased. This was the problem of dictatorship. The moment a tyrant appeared, it would be the downfall of the entire country, because there would be almost no challenge or way to control the tyrant.

Li Cheng Shan's eyes flashed as he tried to persuade Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, you've now understood the truth of matters. Join us, let's overthrow the reign of Wei Ming Qing."

If Li Cheng Shan could persuade Yue Zhong to join their cause, then the rebel army would gain a powerful subordinate. Furthermore, the captured rebel soldiers would regain their freedom.

Yue Zhong paused before suddenly asking, "How many people are there in your organization?"

Li Cheng Shan's eyes flashed with a wary look, "When you join, I'll naturally tell you. Now, even if you kill me, I will not say."

Yue Zhong continued asking, "If I were to join your group, what position will I get?"

Li Cheng Shan replied craftily, "That depends on your contributions. If you join us and release the hundreds of soldiers here, you can gain a pretty decent position when we go out."

"Alright, you've convinced me! You may come out!"

Yue Zhong chuckled and waved his hands, Following the whir of some motors, the strands of Mutant Spider silk came undone. Some mechanical arms came out from the sides of the room, injecting the antidote to the strength suppressant in the bodies of the 4 leaders, absolving their weak state.

Qian Cheng stepped out and chuckled at Yue Zhong, "Kid, you're not too bad eh!!"

The other 3 looked at Yue Zhong warily. They were not as simple-minded as Qian Cheng. Here, it was obviously Yue Zhong's turf. He just had to give an order, and the automatic defense would fire at them, blasting them into pieces. Even a Low-Grade Dino-General would not be able to defend against laser beams and electromagnetic cannons. Their lives were still in Yue Zhong's control.

Li Cheng Shan bowed his thanks, "Many thanks!!"

Yue Zhong replied solemnly, "Don't mention it! The 20 Xue Luo Forts, I want to know, how will you deal with that? Since you guys dared attack Blood Red City, there must be some method you've come up with to deal with that defensive structure?"

The Xue Luo 20 Forts had about 10,000 troops stationed within each tower, hence the total number reached about 200,000.

Although not every single warrior of these 200,000 soldiers were seasoned veterans with hundreds of battles under their belt, they were still recognized as the elite that had experienced the most.

These soldiers were not like those jokers from the Green Region, who took up weapons and proclaimed themselves as factions. The weakest were equipped with defensive suits, multi-purpose

helmets, and ray guns for weapons.

These 200,000 soldiers stationed within the Forts were like a sleeping beast lying in wait, tearing through any enemies.

Right now, through Wang Yu Feng, Yue Zhong could command about 2,000 of the City Guards, however, compared to the 200,000 soldiers of the Xue Luo 20 Forts, it was incomparable.

At the same time, there was plenty of advanced tech within the forts. Once they retaliated, the Blood Red City forces might not be able to withstand them.

Yue Zhong might have already evolved to the Type 5 realm which was rare for humans, but against 200,000 human elites that were armed to the teeth, his chances of success were infinitely small.

Yue Zhong stared at Li Cheng Shan, a huge pressure emitting from him.

Li Cheng Shan knew that it was a critical moment. If he did not answer well, the 4 of them would likely be sealed again.

The 200,000 soldiers of the 20 Xue Luo Forts were considered one of the 2 top human forces. If they were to discard the advantage in equipment, they were the strongest force in Cloud Region. The other that could contend against them was the Capital City Guards stationed within the Capital City. Their equipment was considered the best.

"There's a general located in each Fort. In the 1st Fort, which is the strongest 1st Xue Luo Battalion, the general Zhang Yan He had already given the command not to participate in the struggle of Cloud Region. He's willing to stay within the 1st Fort to focus on defense from external enemies. In the 2nd and 3rd Forts, the 2 generals Wu Bao and Wei Wu are both Zhang Yan He's close friends, they had likewise passed the order not to get involved in the civil war. Of the remaining 17 Forts, some sympathize with our cause and understand why we're doing this. There're others who

are part of us. If we can control Blood Red City, we will only have to deal with 10,000 or 20,000 of the Fort soldiers.

"The powerful tech and equipment of the 20 Xue Luo Forts are all within their forts. On top of that, the most advanced weapons are all kept within the 1st, 2nd and 3rd Forts. Making use of the satellite in Blood Red City, as well as arming the poor folks in District D, we will be able to take on the forces that are sent to quell the rebellion!" Li Cheng Shan spoke in a grandiose manner.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, before tearing apart his lies, "Half of them are your people? I'm guessing that not even a single one of the generals are on your side. However, it's likely that some of them sympathize with you."

Currently, Li Cheng Shan was still wary against Yue Zhong, thus his words contained a few bluffs within. Yue Zhong did not expect him to be entirely honest as well. However, from his words, Yue Zhong could tell that even if there was a rebellion in Blood Red City, the forces sent to deal with it would likely not be many.

If over half of the 20 Forts soldiers were Li Cheng Shan's peoples, then taking down the entire Blood Red City would have been an easy feat. A single Hongmen banquet could simply wipe out Wang Yu Feng and the upper echelons of the city before they claimed it.

When Li Cheng Shan's lies were exposed, he did not lose his calm, instead, chuckling lightly. He would not possibly reveal all his trump cards.

Yue Zhong's voice then became extremely cold, "Li Cheng Shan, our Blood Red City can cooperate with you, and rise against Wei Ming Qing. However, your group has to bring all those who are lying in ambush within Blood Red City away. If we find out that there are still your men hiding in our Blood Red City, don't blame me for being merciless."

Li Cheng Shan's organization had cast their roots deep within Blood Red City, otherwise, they would not have chosen this city

where it was closest to the 20 Forts, thus bringing about higher risks.

Li Cheng Shan felt his heart run cold under Yue Zhong's gaze, and replied, "Yes!"

He then asked, "Yue Zhong, what about our comrades in the prison? When will you release them?"

Yue Zhong waved his hands, "Not now. When the time's right, I'll naturally release them. Men, take them to get some rest."

4 beautiful servings girls came over and brought Li Cheng Shan and the rest to the guest rooms.

Yue Zhong made his way towards Wang Yu Feng noiselessly, with his status as Wang Yu Feng's 'trusted aide', no one dared to go against his orders within Blood Red City.

Yue Zhong quickly arrived in the hall once more.

Currently, Jia Yu was already drunk, his body naked, a pretty girl in his embrace as he slept soundly on a bed.

Yue Zhong asked softly, "Has the strength-sapping poison been administered?"

Wang Yu Feng shook his head, "No! The taste is too strong, with Jia Yu's training, he would be able to tell."

The strength poison in Cloud Region was different from that of the Winged Race and both had their own pros and cons. The one from Cloud Region lasted extremely long, while the one from the Winged Race was odorless and colorless. Both had their uses depending on the situations.

Yue Zhong immediately made for Jia Yu's position when he heard that.

Suddenly, Jia Yu opened his eyes wide, without any hesitation, he sent his right fist towards Yue Zhong with an overpowering bloodlust, his killing intent billowing.

Facing the sudden attack, Yue Zhong's face changed, however, he was still careful. The moment Jia Yu had moved, he had sent his own fist enveloped with Dark Dou Qi towards Jia Yu.

When both fists met, a powerful shockwave spread out. A powerful intent that could affect souls assaulted Yue Zhong. It was incredibly vicious and powerful, if an ordinary person were to face that attack, they would have long since felt an intense fear and their fighting capabilities would have been crippled by more than 80%.

Even for someone as strong as Yue Zhong, he was affected slightly and sent stumbling back a few steps.

"I've long since noticed something strange between the 2 of you! Wang Yu Feng, are you betraying His Majesty?" Jia Yu's eyes flashed dangerously as he barked out in fury. He lowered his body, and shot towards Yue Zhong like a cannonball, emitting his bloodlust as he attempted to grab Yue Zhong.

Wang Yu Feng stared numbly at Jia Yu without moving. Without Yue Zhong's order, since he had already accomplished what he had to do, he would stand there like a puppet, with no self-will. This was the downside of the Puppet Rune. It could turn a person into a puppet, but they will lose their automatic will and self-preservation. Without Yue Zhong's instruction, any of Wang Yu Feng's trusted guards could see that there was something wrong with him.

Note: In Chinese culture, the term Hong Men Yan ("Feast at Hong Gate") is used figuratively to refer to a trap or a situation ostensibly joyous but in fact treacherous.

# Chapter 868: Sneaking in!

---

Jia Yu was an observant expert, the moment he saw Wang Yu Feng being strange, he roared out in fury, "What did you do to Wang Yu Feng?!"

"The same thing that's going to happen to you!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a cold look, as he activated his Third Order Gravity Manipulation, enveloping Jia Yu with a powerful gravitational field.

When Jia Yu was swept by that 30 times gravitational force, his entire body sunk, as though he was suddenly forced to carry over tens of thousand jins. Although it was a weight his Type 4 Divine Warrior strength could handle, his speed was affected.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a strange glint, the Dark Dou Qi on his body billowing out. He sent a powerful punch that whistled through the air, breaking the sound barrier as it smashed towards Jia Yu's face.

A look of hatred flashed past Jia Yu's face. He did not retreat, instead, choosing to advance to meet the blow. His right hand slashed out towards Yue Zhong's heart. He wanted both of them to suffer, killing Yue Zhong at the expense of suffering a lethal blow. If Yue Zhong chose to retreat, he would then unleash his own counter-attack.

The Xue Luo Guards were ferocious and cruel to their enemies and themselves. Their means were simple yet effective, perfect for taking on the Dino-warriors.

Yue Zhong's right hand slammed into Jia Yu's shoulder like Mount Tai without decreasing his speed at all. Under the enhancement of his Dark Dou Qi, his right hand exploded out with a powerful might.

With a loud crack, Jia Yu's left shoulder was shattered by that

blow. His entire body was sent soaring back dozens of meters. He slumped to the floor and spat out a mouth of fresh blood, his eyes filled with disbelief, "How is this possible?! How are you so strong?? Who are you?!"

Yue Zhong's face was impassive as he darted and appeared right in front of Jia Yu. His body suddenly split into three, all 3 Yue Zhongs attacking Jia Yu.

"Shadow Clones!"

Jia Yu's countenance turned paler, it felt like things were hopeless. However, he did not give up, instead, curling his body as he used his right hand to support himself while his legs kicked out like hurricanes at the 3 approaching Yue Zhongs.

When the powerful kicks slammed out at the 3 Yue Zhongs, they caused all of his clones to dissipate into nothing.

At that moment, Yue Zhong leaped out from behind one of them, his own leg slamming into Jia Yu's body with a vicious and powerful force.

Jia Yu had no way to react nor defend himself in time. He was sent flying like a cannonball once more, spitting out a huge mouthful of blood.

Yue Zhong then disappeared from his location, a palm slapping towards the back of Jia Yu's head, his strength knocking Jia Yu out instantly.

He then snapped his fingers and a Type 4 Puppet Rune entered Jia Yu's brain.

After Jia Yu received the Puppet Rune, Yue Zhong then sent a gust of wind towards his forehead, waking him up.

This captain of the Xue Luo Guards, a character that could cause fear and dread with the mere utter of his name, walked up to Yue Zhong and bowed respectfully, "Greetings, Master!"

Yue Zhong then asked, "How many subordinates can you recruit over? I'm referring to those that are willing to betray Wei Ming Qing's orders."

Jia Yu replied, "If it's disobeying and betraying Wei Ming Qing's orders, I can gather 15 at most. The object of loyalty and subservience of the Xue Luo Guards have always been the King, His Majesty. Many of us were trained and brought up in the capital. Even the head General Ouyang Wu Mie can be stripped of his title should His Majesty will it."

Yue Zhong then said, "Within the 20 Xue Luo Forts, how many generals are there that are wholly loyal to Wei Ming Qing?"

"Of the 20 Xue Luo Forts, Fort 1 to 5 are immovable by Wei Ming Qing. Other than them, of the remaining 15, we are unsure of the loyalties of 4 of them, while 3 others are sympathetic to the rebels' cause. On the surface, there are a total of 8 generals who are loyal to the King."

"Those that are loyal to the King are the Generals from Fort 20 to Fort 13. They're Qing Yuan, Wei Jiang, Yu Liu, Ouyang Wu Mie, Shi Yu, Pi Zhen, Huang Kun, Qu Zhong, respectively. The 1st to the 12th are Zheng Yan He, Wu Bao, Wei Wu, Diao Jin, Lu Yu, Chao Xuan Zheng, Gai Long, Yi Yi, Qin Xu, Hai Yi, Tong Bai, and Yan Long."

"Of those loyal to the King, Ouyang Wu Mie and his Xue Luo Guards are the strongest. The rest of the 7 Forts also consist of troops that undergo tough training, but their combat strength cannot compare to the Xue Luo Guards. Furthermore, their morale is not as steadfast, if things go wrong in a battle, there's a possibility of their order collapsing." Jia Yu swiftly reported.

The moment Yue Zhong thought of the Xue Luo guards who were all filled with a bloodthirsty aura and asked, "Are all Xue Luo Guards Type 3 Divine Warriors?"

Jia Yu replied, "That's right! The basic requirement to be a Xue

Luo Guard is a strength of at least Type 3 Divine Warrior. They are all experts churned and groomed by the Capital Lab."

Yue Zhong could not help but sigh when he realized the extent of the strength of the entire Cloud Region forces. Type 3 Divine Warrior. This was the level he was at himself when he just entered the Second World. Any single Xue Luo Guard could become an overlord if thrown on Earth. If they were to add on their Type 3 Battle Armors, then, they were basically unchallenged. Just the 10,000 Xue Luo Guards were enough to overthrow and become the strongest human faction within the Green Region.

"What about Ouyang Wu Mie?" Yue Zhong asked.

Jia Yu replied, "He's an expert of the initial-Type 5 Realm. 3 years ago, when he returned to the capital, he was at that strength. He has the ability to manipulate ice and snow. His combat strength is terrifying. He's also one of the 4 Type 5 experts within the 20 Forts. The other 3 are Zheng Yan He, Wu Bao, and Gai Long.

Even in a place like Cloud Region where experts were aplenty, Type 5 existences were still rare. Of the entire 200,000 troops stationed in the 20 Xue Luo Forts, there were only 4.

With a wave of his hands, Yue Zhong summoned 200 Type 3 Puppet Runes, as well as a Type 5 Mutant Beast bone marrow, passing them to Jia Yu, "I got it! Jia Yu! Go convert all of your subordinates. This is for your injuries! Drink it!"

The bone marrow was a rejuvenation item, with a powerful life force like Jia Yu's only a bottle was enough to help him recover.

Jia Yu received the 200 Type 3 Puppet Runes and bone marrow, responding with a wooden expression before dismissing himself, "Understood! Master!"

Those controlled by the Puppet Runes would become tools to complete orders. They would not be able to bootlick or express their loyalty or any other emotions like that.

Yue Zhong thought to how he was about to destroy such an elite troop and felt a tinge of regret, "Xue Luo Troops? What a pity, if only such a force belonged to me, that would be so much better!"

Early the next morning, Jia Yu brought the 100 Xue Luo Guards and rode their armed motorcycles towards the direction of the 20th Fort. No one noticed an additional strange and silent warrior.

The 20th Fort was the most important one among all 20 Forts and the last defense line of Cloud Region. The entire structure was made out of super-alloy concrete, its height reaching 300m, separating Cloud Region and the other 19 Forts.

As long as it was shut, the other 19 Forts would not be able to receive any support or logistics from Cloud Region. If the generals from the front few forts were to harbor any strange thoughts, the 20th Fort could just close, and wait out for disaster to befall the other forts. This was the most critical location, and as long as Wei Ming Qing controlled this place, he did not have to fear the other generals rebelling against him. That was why the 10,000 soldiers stationed here were the most trusted 10,000 Xue Luo Guards.

"Captain Jia Yu, please get down for inspection!"

Jia Yu had just brought the 100 in front of the Xue Luo City gates when 4 soldiers tried to stop him.

Jia Yu nodded and got off his motorcycle, walking towards the city with big strides.

The defense of the 20 Xue Luo Forts was truly tight, each and every entry put through the strictest of inspections. Even Jia Yu, a captain of considerable status, was not spared.

A thorough check was important because many humans had awaked strange abilities, some even allowing others to morph their appearances.

However, while looks might change, fingerprints, genes, and irises cannot be changed. Thus every time there was an entry into

the 20 Xue Luo Forts, there would be a thorough check.

As the soldiers went through the checks, Yue Zhong also went in fearlessly.

"Xue Luo Guard: Zhang Li! Fingerprints match, gene match, iris match, pass!"

As an electromagnetic beam swept past Yue Zhong's body, a notification of a successful check sounded.

Yue Zhong went through each check easily. This was due to the assistance of the Super A.I. Bai Yi.

The other time, Yue Zhong had gone through them when he first entered Cloud Valley. However, the other time, he followed a set route.

This time Yue Zhong transformed into a Xue Luo Guard and was able to observe the inner workings of the Xue Luo 20 Forts.

Inside the castle of the 20th Fort, other than a few tunnels allowing the Reapers and armored vehicles to be deployed, there were many bunkers and openings for firearms.

All around, there were many automatic defenses installed, consisting of laser weapons, electromagnetic as well as ray guns. If a Type 4 Divine Warrior dared to challenge the defenses today, he or she would be killed instantly.

A number of Xue Luo Guards patrolled the castle with stern expressions, not stopping for a single moment, eyeing every single person who entered with wary gazes, prepared to fire at any potential intruders.

# Chapter 869: Seen Through!

---

The hundred Xue Luo Guards that had followed Jia Yu went back to their respective residences, while Jia Yu brought Yue Zhong towards a particular camp.

Jia Yu was one of the dozens of captains within the Xue Luo Guards. Along the way, the checks were more relaxed for him, hence the journey was somewhat smoother. Soon, they came across an oval bunker made out of mechanical parts that stood over 20m tall.

There were 4 soldiers standing guard outside the bunker, each of them wearing a Type 4 Battle Armor. By their waists, curved combat blades hung and reflected light, giving them an added sense of danger and cold killing intent.

"Experts! These 4 are definitely experts!"

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed slightly when he saw them. He could tell that they were definitely top experts, their strength not far from Jia Yu. That meant that each of them was at least a Type 4 Divine Warrior as well.

In Green Region, any Type 4 expert would be a local hegemony already. However, in the Xue Luo Fort, they were merely guards. This showed the depths of the strength of the humans from Cloud Region. In terms of technology and experts, Cloud Region possessed the cream of the crop.

Even though Yue Zhong had evolved to the Type 5 realm, if he were to be exposed within the Xue Luo Fort, his life would be in danger.

One of them stepped forward to stop Jia Yu, "Captain Jia, please hold, what's the matter?"

Jia Yu spoke in a low voice, "I have a classified matter to report to General Ouyang Wu Mie, please help me notify him. This is an

informant, he has to go in as well."

The soldier pointed to a small room beside and replied, "Understood, I'll go notify him now! Captain Jia, please go over there to turn over your equipment and weapons!"

Equipment was extremely important to humans whose physiques were weaker compared to the other races of this world. If Jia Yu removed all his equipment, he was definitely not a match for any of the personal guards of Ouyang Wu Mie.

Each general had their own tight security, making it tough to assassinate them.

"I understand!" Jia Yu nodded and entered together with Yue Zhong, taking off his Type 4 Battle Armor as well as Battle Spear, before sitting beside Yue Zhong quietly while waiting.

Not long after, a soldier came over and said, "The General has summoned you! Come with me!"

Jia Yu and Yue Zhong stood up quietly to follow the soldiers.

After entering the mechanical bunker, Yue Zhong could see the various installations of automatic defenses. At the same time, there were many soldiers patrolling in Type 4 Battle Armor, no weaker than those at the gate.

"There are so many experts here, how did the Capital City groom so many?"

Yue Zhong looked at the numerous experts and felt a bad feeling. He had a hunch that the only way that the Cloud Region could push out so many Type 4 Divine Warriors was relying on some extreme means.

Humans had weaker physiques, even training with perfect cultivation techniques would not be easy to reach the Type 4 realm.

Luo Qing Qing had her Storm 8 Greats who were all talented

people. However, of the 8 of them, other than Han Zi Xuan who finally broke through in a life-and-death situation, the rest were still at the peak of the Type 3 realm. It was apparent just how hard it was to evolve into the Type 4 realm.

The appearance of more than dozens of Type 4 experts in this Xue Luo Fort caused Yue Zhong to be uneasy.

After passing by the heavy security, the 2 of them finally arrived at a grand hall under the escort of the 2 soldiers.

Within the hall, there were 8 warriors in Type 4 Battle Armor, giving off a powerful, killing intent.

With 8 Type 4 experts as personal guards, adding on their Type 4 Battle Armor, even an initial Type 5 expert would not be their match.

At the edge of the long study table in the hall, there was a middle-aged man with decent features and a huge beard, quietly reading a book. This was the leader of the Xue Luo Guards, General Ouyang Wu Mie.

Ouyang Wu Mie shot Jia Yu a sharp look as he asked, "Jia Yu, what do you have to report?"

Jia Yu responded, "Great General, things are bad. Blood Red City has been overtaken by the rebels, and they have recruited a large number of soldiers from the poor folk from District D, arming them in the process. They have spread rumors about the orders given by His Majesty, and the stupid poor folk has believed them. Thus, they're on their side."

Ouyang Wu Mie's eyes flashed coldly, as his gaze fixed upon Yue Zhong venomously, "Who is this person?"

Jia Yu pointed to Yue Zhong and said, "This is a subordinate of mine, Zhang Li, and he had infiltrated Blood Red City on his own, risking his life to obtain valuable information and bringing it out."

Yue Zhong stepped out to carry out a standard military salute,

"Your subordinate greets General!"

The corners of Ouyang Wu Mie lifted slightly, as he revealed a cold smile, and ordered, "Capture the 2 of them. If they resist, kill without mercy."

Hearing Ouyang Wu Mie's orders, the 8 experts stirred, their eyes flashing with dangerous glints. Their Battle Spears shot towards Jia Yu and Yue Zhong with incredible speed.

Yue Zhong's mind whirred, yet he could not point out how he had revealed himself. However, he was not someone to wait for death. The moment the 8 Type 4 experts moved, 2 of them getting to about 10m away from him, he immediately activated his Third Order Gravity Manipulation, sending out a gravitational field.

Enveloped suddenly by the 30-times gravity, the 2 Type 4 experts sunk, their actions slowed slightly.

Yue Zhong then activated his Third Order Shadow Steps, pushing his Dark Dou Qi. He exploded out with a powerful fist towards one of them, and at that moment, the Type 4 expert's head was directly blasted apart.

Seeing his own comrade's head blasted apart, the face of the other Type 4 Xue Luo guard fell. The Type 4 nucleus behind him glowed and the runes on his Type 4 Battle Armor started to radiate as well.

However, it was too late. When the Type 4 Battle Armor lit up, and before the energy could be driven through the body, there would be a short gap.

At that instant, Yue Zhong had already burst forward, appearing in front of the Xue Luo guard, sending a fist mercilessly towards his head, blasting it apart.

"Type 5 expert, who would have expected one to turn up here. Who are you?"

Watching Yue Zhong kill his personal guards in succession,

Ouyang Wu Mie's eyes narrowed. The 2 dead guards might not have activated their armor in time, but they were still Type 4 Divine Warriors after all. They had been through countless battles, and yet, such excellent guards were killed in an instant by Yue Zhong. It had nothing to do with them not exhibiting their strength, it was Yue Zhong's might which was on a whole other level.

After he killed the 2 Xue Luo guards, Yue Zhong shot Ouyang Wu Mie a cold look, his body flashed and he dashed towards the general.

Currently, the remaining 6 Xue Luo guards had witnessed Yue Zhong's overbearing strength. Their Type 4 Battle Armors lit up, the runes flashing and huge amounts of energy coursed through their bodies. The 6 warriors reached the Type 5 realm.

Of the 6, 1 broke away to deal with Jia Yu, while the remaining 5 went to attack Yue Zhong.

In that charge, one of the Xue Luo guards suddenly disappeared from his location, appearing beside Yue Zhong, a spear thrust out towards his heart. The ability he had employed was the rare Instant Movement ability, teleporting almost anywhere within a 20m distance. With this powerful skill, he had even killed a Low-Grade Dino-General when he was at the Type 3 Divine Warrior realm.

One other activated his ability Divine Speed, pushing his speed to the maximum. He turned into a flash that arrived in front of Yue Zhong, his spear also aiming for Yue Zhong's heart.

Yet another cast the Ground Manipulation skill, shooting 2 sharp earth spikes on either side of Yue Zhong, sealing his paths of escape.

The 4th guard slashed at Yue Zhong, as a powerful 20 times gravitational force was locked on to Yue Zhong.

The 5th Luo Xue guard wielded his spear with a dangerous glint in his eyes. Lightning bolts converged on the tip of the spear, he was responsible for dealing the killing strike.

The human physique could not compare to the Dino-race. Any of these guards would be easily killed by a single Mid-Grade Dino-General in 1-on-1 combat. In order to deal with powerful experts, they had undergone training as a team, practicing maneuvers and tactics.

Facing such an attack, Yue Zhong opted to tap his feet, soaring high into the air, evading the ones behind and in front of him.

As for the one with the lightning spear, he aimed it at Yue Zhong, and sent a burning hot flash of thunderbolt towards Yue Zhong, causing his body to split apart into multiple pieces.

# Chapter 870: Danger!

---

When they saw 'Yue Zhong' killed, the 5 Xue Luo guards relaxed slightly. Against a Type 5 Evolver, their nerves were naturally taut, if they were not careful, they could lose their lives. In such a condition, although the battle had not been long, it felt more draining than an entire war.

Ouyang Wu Mie barked out, "Watch out! He's not dead! He's still there!!"

When his words landed, a powerful fist wrapped in thick Dark Dou Qi pummeled onto the head of the Xue Luo guard with Instant Movement, blasting his head apart.

After that, Yue Zhong flashed in front of the Xue Luo guard with Divine Speed, also throwing out a powerful punch, intending to destroy his head.

Yue Zhong had released a Shadow Clone and his Third Order Stealth ability at the same time.

During the battle, everyone's attention had been attracted to Yue Zhong's clone, thus enabling him to evade their senses. It created an illusion, just like how things could disappear in magic when one was paying too much attention to the smallest detail.

While the Third Order Stealth skill seemed to be only good for assassination attempts, when combined with the Shadow Clone skill, it allowed Yue Zhong to confuse his opponents, possessing an additional trump card.

"How is he still here?! Wasn't he killed?!"

The Xue Luo guard with Divine Speed felt shocked in his heart. However, he was still a combatant with experience, not allowing his shock to cloud his movements. He released an intense killing aura, raising his spear, and thrust out towards Yue Zhong in response.

Currently, this Xue Luo guard was the furthest from his comrades and was the perfect prey. If he was allowed to flee and rejoin his 3 other comrades, things would become tougher.

With a thought, a void appeared in mid-air, and 10 sharp bone spikes shot out, clashing with the Battle Spear, slamming it to one side.

Yue Zhong's figure flickered, dodging the battle spear that was knocked askew, appearing beside him the Xue Luo guard with Divine Speed. His punch landed squarely on the head of the Xue Luo guard, instantly blasting it in a shower of blood and brain matter.

Ouyang Wu Mie's countenance finally turned ugly after witnessing Yue Zhong slaughtering 3 of his personal guards, his hands slamming onto a button, "Stop!!"

In an instant, a number of ray guns, electromagnetic cannons, and laser weapons swiveled out, pointing at Yue Zhong.

On the other hand, Jia Yu was completely overwhelmed, his body full of injuries, as though he could not hang on anymore. In terms of ability, Jia Yu was above the Type 4 Xue Luo guard, however, without his equipment, he was inferior to the fully-powered Xue Luo guard.

Looking at the appearance of the automatic weapons that swiveled out from the ceiling and walls, the remaining Xue Luo guards relaxed slightly. Having witnessed Yue Zhong's might, they had no confidence to take him on with just the 3 of them.

Yue Zhong glanced at the weapons and his lips curled slightly, "Get rid of them!!"

The weapons that had appeared suddenly obeyed Yue Zhong's words, adjusting their aim towards the remaining Xue Luo guards. Multiple shots and beams were fired towards them.

With the enhancement of their Battle Armors, these Xue Luo

guards were already at the Type 5 realm. The moment the weapons changed their aim on them, they reacted and ducked out of the way, evading the flurry of attacks.

However, with Bai Yi's ability and incredible calculations, all the weapons had been turned into a fire net, not allowing even the tiniest of space for the Xue Luo guards to escape to. They were shot down mercilessly.

Under the concentrated fire, their armor was blasted to pieces, and their bodies ripped to shreds.

Even a Type 5 Divine Warrior would not be able to defend against such focused fire without defense equipment.

A Type 5 Divine Warrior would be able to exhibit his or her prowess in a wide space. In such a narrow space, a Type 5 Divine Warrior would be helpless with such automated weapons, especially if it were under the control of Bai Yi, a Super A.I.

On the other side, the moment the automated weapons had switched targets, Ouyang Wu Mie had slapped down with his huge hands on the button beside his table.

In an instant, a blue energy shield opened up in front of him. When the beams and shots slammed into the shield, they created ripples throughout, however, they could not break through it.

Ouyang Wu Mie stayed behind the shield, eyeing Yue Zhong with a hint of admiration, as though he did not mind the loss of his 8 Xue Luo Guards, "Super A.I, you actually have such a treasure on you. Kid, hand it over and swear your loyalty and become my subordinate. I'll forgo today's matters. I can even give you riches and power, allowing you to choose ladies you want."

Yue Zhong asked, "How did you discover I was an assassin?"

Yue Zhong had passed through all the checks with Bai Yi's help, he could not understand where he had messed up, causing his assassination attempt to fail.

Ouyang Wu Mie laughed coldly, "Hmph! You think that you're safe just because you can sneak past the security systems? I know the names and faces of every single one of the 10,000 Xue Luo guards. You dare to pass off as Zhang Li in front of me, that's basically begging to be captured! Kid, don't underestimate others!!"

Ouyang Wu Mie then continued, "I've already pressed the button for reinforcements. Soon, every single expert from the fort would be gathered here. You'll have no way out by then! Quick submit, otherwise, you'll only face death!"

Yue Zhong also knew that it was a critical moment now. If the Xue Luo guards were to reach, it would be hard for him to flee. He was only one person after all, whereas the enemy had an entire elite battalion of Type 3 Divine Warriors with Type 3 Armor.

"Is that right? Break for me!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed viciously, and he summoned his Fourth Order Devil Flame, his hands wrapped in the terrifying flames as they punched out at the energy shield.

# Chapter 871: Forceful Breakout!

---

The Fourth Order Devil Flames were incredibly tyrannical. As the all-consuming flames slammed into the energy shield, they went through it, burning 2 fist-sized holes.

Ouyang Wu Mie looked on in shock, exclaiming in spite of himself, "Impossible!!"

The blue energy shield made use of the energy conversion technology. At the same time, the energy converter system within this room was equipped with 10 Type 4 Mutant Beast nuclei, allowing the shield to resist even the assaults of a Mid-Grade Dino-General for at least 20 minutes. Seeing Yue Zhong burning through it, Ouyang Wu Mie was naturally taken aback.

"The Fourth Order Devil Flames are truly terrifying!!" Yue Zhong eyed the 2 holes, his eyes filled with excitement. He had not expected his Devil Flames to go through so easily.

The moment the 2 holes appeared, Yue Zhong forced his way in, his eyes flashing with a resolute gaze and he punched out towards Ouyang Wu Mie.

Ouyang Wu Mie was an experienced combatant himself. Although he had used some other means of entering the Type 5 realm, he was truly a Type 5 warrior. Even without the Type 4 Battle Armor, his strength was terrifying.

At the moment of life-and-death, Ouyang Wu Mie met Yue Zhong's gaze with a vicious look of his own, his entire body glowing green. A powerful field of ice shards appeared out of mid-air, piercing towards Yue Zhong, as he retreated backward with a tap of his foot.

Behind him, the wall opened up to reveal a tunnel leading to goodness-knows-where.

Ouyang Wu Mie was an extremely careful person. Even if he had

plenty of experts besides him, with tight security, he had left various means of escape for himself.

The ice shards were formed from the terrifying ability of ice. If they were to strike the body, even a Mid-Grade Dino-General would suffer. However, if Yue Zhong were to dodge the strike, Ouyang Wu Mie would be able to escape through the tunnel.

Waiting within this castle, when the other experts rushed over, Yue Zhong would have to flee or be killed.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a vicious light, his body covered with a thick layer of Dark Dou Qi and blazing Devil Flames. He did not dodge nor evade, instead, he sent out punches to meet the incoming ice shards, shattering them.

The ice shards that came hailing down on Yue Zhong were melted by the Devil Flames surrounding Yue Zhong. However, a few managed to get past the defense and pierced into his body.

Currently, Yue Zhong was equipped with an under armor made out of the scales of a Type 5 Triceratops, and the ice shards that had managed to get past the flames were already melted halfway, thus, shattering into bits when they slammed into the armor. The force dissipated across his body, negated by his Third Order Body of Steel, giving him a slightly uncomfortable feeling.

"Monster!!"

Ouyang Wu Mie saw how Yue Zhong was forcefully charging through his field of ice, and his eyes flashed with shock.

The next moment, Yue Zhong arrived in front of Ouyang Wu Mie, his intimidating and imposing figure sending out a punch towards his head.

Ouyang Wu Mie could only bring up his right hand to block in front of his face.

Yue Zhong's fist was shrouded in the Dark Dou Qi, empowering his punch and causing a surge of force to burst out, slamming

Ouyang Wu Mie's fist against his own face.

Ouyang Wu Mie was sent slamming into the wall viciously, his entire nose bridge broken, blood flowing down his mouth.

The moment Yue Zhong got the upper hand, he dashed forwards and prepared to unleash a flurry of blows.

Ouyang Wu Mie's head was slightly sprained from that blow, but even so, he did not stop resisting. With a thought, he summoned out more ice shards and formed a 2m-thick ice wall in front of him.

It was an ability that he had when he reached the Type 5 stage. Its defense was incredibly thick and could surpass the energy shields.

Every special ability had their pros and cons, while ice-related abilities tend to be stronger in defense, Yue Zhong's Devil Flame was weaker in defense but stronger in offense.

Ouyang Wu Mie knew he was not Yue Zhong's match, thus he decided to drag out the time till reinforcements arrived. That would be his victory.

"Ouyang Wu Mie, are you afraid now? Today will be your death day!!"

Yue Zhong shot towards the ice block, and with a powerful roar, he activated his Third Order Art of Fear, sending a tyrannical Spiritual attack towards Ouyang Wu Mie.

"Am I going to die here today?"

Originally, even with Yue Zhong casting the Third Order Art of Fear with his Type 5 Divine Warrior constitution, it would not affect Ouyang Wu Mie too greatly. However, Ouyang Wu Mie had been bested a few times and was already feeling fear towards Yue Zhong. He was enveloped by the Art of Fear, and his fears were amplified, thus, making him vulnerable to the attack.

The moment he fell into the hallucination, he had no way of

maintaining the 2m-thick ice wall.

"Break for me!!"

Yue Zhong yelled out in anger, bringing his fists wrapped in Devil Flames down towards the block of ice.

The powerful Devil Flame blazed out, melting the huge ice instantly, and with a loud crack, it broke apart.

"No!"

Ouyang Wu Mie watched his final trump card smashed to pieces and his spirit crumbled further, allowing the Art of Fear to fully envelop his despairing mind.

With a cold gaze, Yue Zhong sent a chop towards the back of Ouyang Wu Mie's head, knocking him out.

After that, he pointed at his brain, sending a Type 5 Puppet Rune into Ouyang Wu Mie's head.

Ouyang Wu Mie then stirred awake, before saluting respectfully to Yue Zhong, "Ouyang Wu Mie greets Master!"

"Not bad! Seems like as long as I don't encounter any Mid-Grade Dino-Generals, within the Type 5 realm, I'm of pretty decent strength."

Yue Zhong looked at Ouyang Wu Mie who had been turned into a puppet and felt satisfied. In the battle against this Type 5 Divine Warrior, he had truly felt his growth and noticed that he was not weak at all compared to other Type 5 Divine Warriors.

"General!! Are you alright??"

Barely 15 seconds after Yue Zhong subdued Ouyang Wu Mie, 20 elite Xue Luo guards came charging into the hall, the leader asked with worry when he caught sight of the carnage within the room.

Ouyang Wu Mie looked at the soldiers that came in and replied, "I'm alright! Thanks to captain Jia Yu and Zhang Li, I got wind that Zhang He and 5 others had already joined the rebels and were

plotting against me. When they were exposed, they tried to kill me, but they failed. Wei Zhen, go get 8 people to replace Zhang He and his team!"

"Yes! General!"

A Xue Luo captain was swiftly dispatched to gather 7 other warriors and they came reporting to the hall.

The leader of the group frowned as he asked out of doubt, "General, there's something that doesn't add up. In order to kill Zhang He and the 5 traitors, why did you cut off the control of our Central Computer within the 20th Fort? You even called for an urgent gathering, summoning the troops here?"

In order to deal with the Super A.I that Yue Zhong possessed, Ouyang Wu Mie had actually cut off the link between the central computer and the automated weapons, while summoning all the soldiers of the 20th Fort. Those actions had caused a huge uproar among the soldiers.

The captain could not understand how Zhang He and the rest were a threat to warrant such actions.

When Ouyang Wu Mie was questioned, his face turned green and white, before suddenly roaring with rage, "Do I need you to teach me when I'm doing things, Jin Hui?! As the leader of the troops in the castle, you were actually kept in the dark about your own subordinates being traitors!! Are you still interested in your damn position?! From today onwards, you're stripped of your role! Go wait in the correctional chamber and await further orders!! When I'm done cleaning up the mess here, I'll be back to mete out your punishment!!"

"Angry from embarrassment!!"

Many of the Xue Luo guards had this thought, but they kept mum. Ouyang Wu Mie was still the man with the most authority here, even though he had to justify a killing of a Xue Luo guard, he

could send them on a suicide mission, hence, no one was willing to antagonize him.

"Yes! General!"

Jin Hui's face turned pale, not daring to say much. He quickly saluted, and took off his own equipment, before heading out to the correctional chamber.

The military treatment and hierarchy in the 20 Xue Luo Forts were incredibly tight and strict. If Jin Hui disobeyed, Ouyang Wu Mie had the option of declaring his insubordination as an excuse to have him killed.

Ouyang Wu Mie then spoke solemnly, "Luo Jun, go send men to Generals Qing Yuan, Wei Jiang, Yu Liu, Shi Yu, Pi Zhen, Huang Kun and Qu Zhong, get them to gather here in 3 days. I have things to discuss with them."

"Understood! General!" One of the Xue Luo guards replied, before heading out.

Ouyang Wu Mie waved his hands, "The rest of you, dismissed!"

They quickly went out the room, leaving Ouyang Wu Mie and the new 8 guards.

He told the 8 guards while pointing to the floor, "Wei Zhen, the 8 of you, clean this place up!"

"Yes! General!"

They then began to get to work, erasing traces of all battle.

Ouyang Wu Mie stood up and went behind the 2 of them noiselessly, suddenly chopping behind their necks, knocking them unconscious.

# Chapter 872: Striking it Rich!

---

(Note: From now on, all Battle Armors will be referred to as Battle Suits)

At the same time, Yue Zhong conjured 4 Shadow Clones, himself acting as well, as all of them struck at the back of the heads of 5 other Xue Luo guards, knocking them out.

Jia Yu also burst forth, knocking the last one out.

After knocking them unconscious, Yue Zhong sent a number of Type 4 Puppet Runes into their heads.

These 8 guards were to be Ouyang Wu Mie's personal guards, if they stuck long enough, no matter how stupid they were, they would be able to tell if something was wrong with Ouyang Wu Mie. Thus, Yue Zhong had to bring them under his control so as to keep the secret.

After dealing with the 8 of them, Yue Zhong gave Ouyang Wu Mie and order, "Bring me to the Central Computer's location, after that, take me to the armory. Bring me to the one that has the most advanced technology!"

"Yes! Master!" Ouyang Wu Mie replied with respect.

With the General leading them, Yue Zhong's party was basically unhindered throughout the 20th Fort.

He first came to the central command, making use of Bai Yi to gain control over the central computer, before heading towards the armory.

The central computer was incredibly important. Once controlled, Bai Yi could truly keep watch and oversee the situation within the fort. Otherwise, with her Super A.I. abilities, she could at most affect some of the operations, but vulnerable to interference. For example, if an interference wave was to be emitted over the area she was trying to work on, her own waves would be canceled, and

she would not be able to control anything.

"What a lavish armory!!"

Under Ouyang Wu Mie's lead, Yue Zhong came to the armory and noticed a number of equipment that he could not pry his eyes away from.

There were numerous Type 3 Battle Suits, Battle Spears, Battle Blades, Ray Guns, Electromagnetic Cannons, energy bombs, sensor landmines, and multipurpose helmets as well as other advanced techs.

Yue Zhong did a quick count and noted there were easily 2,000 of the Type 3 Battle Suits, and there were another 10 such armories within the 20th Fort itself.

If Yue Zhong were to bring everything back to Earth, he could quickly empower and raise a powerful army.

This was not yet the best that the 20th Fort had to offer, Yue Zhong suppressed the greed to take away everything, and continued towards the heavy weapons area.

"What advanced technology!!"

Coming to the area where they housed the heavy weaponry, Yue Zhong caught sight of the sci-fi-looking equipment and sucked in a breath of cold air.

There were 40 laser-mounted vehicles, double-barrel cannons, Reapers, laser-equipped motorcycles, all-purpose assault helicopters, 235mm cannon launchers, energy shields, as well as other top-grade equipment. If such equipment were to be placed on Earth, it would cause a huge uproar.

Seeing the various heavy weapons of the 20th Fort, Yue Zhong felt a cold sweat down his back. Li Cheng Shan had been too optimistic with his projections.

Even if they had successfully gain Blood Red City, as long as the

Xue Luo Fort sent out a thousand soldiers with weapons, they could easily crush the rebellion.

If Yue Zhong did not risk his life to gain control over Ouyang Wu Mie, when the Xue Luo troops really attacked Blood Red City, he could at most bring Han Zi Xuan away. There would be no chance of victory at all.

With his current Type 5 Divine Warrior strength, there would be no problems wiping out an entire infantry regiment. However, against the Xue Luo troops, with the advanced tech, he would not even be able to defeat an armed battalion.

Yue Zhong took a look at the 235mm cannon launcher and felt his heart run cold. If such a fearsome weapon were to be fired once, the area of impact would be obliterated, even a Mid-Grade Dino-General would not be spared.

Cloud Region was able to stand against the Dino-race without being wiped out, was because of such weapons, as well as their natural terrain advantage.

If it were just a comparison of physique, then even the top expert of Cloud Region would be completely dominated by the weakest Mid-Grade Dino-General.

Yue Zhong looked at the equipment that was impossible to manufacture given Earth's current technology and felt his heart itch. He was tempted to just keep everything in his storage ring. After all, he knew the advantages these equipment represented.

Yue Zhong then forced his gaze away, asking Ouyang Wu Mie, "General, does every single Fort possess such a number of weapons?"

If all 20 Forts were to really be hoarding such advanced and powerful weaponry, then the might of Cloud Region was truly terrifying.

Ouyang Wu Mie replied, "No. Our Fort contains the most

advanced and has the highest amount of equipment. This is due to our status as the King's direct subordinates. Of the 1st 19 Forts, since the 1st, 2nd and 3rd are in charge of defending against the Dino-race, the combined amount of theirs is about half of ours. The remaining Forts contain roughly 10% of ours each." He then pointed to a maintenance soldier, "The equipment of soldiers in the other forts is like that."

The maintenance soldier who was currently working on a laser motorcycle was wearing a multipurpose helmet, his body decked in a light, but sturdy, bulletproof vest. There was a small handgun at his waist, and he was focusing hard on fixing the laser motorcycle.

Evidently, even if it was Cloud Region, not everyone could wear a full suit of equipment. They were not cabbages after all, and only the elites could wear them.

Yue Zhong nodded slightly, before following Ouyang Wu Mie towards another storage room.

"Oh my goodness!! I've struck it rich!! I've struck it rich!!" The moment he entered the storage room, his eyes lit up at the sight, his excitement level easily surpassing that when he had seen the reapers.

Within the storage, there were countless boxes, Ouyang Wu Mie had already stepped up to open one, revealing rows and rows of Mutant Beasts nuclei packed neatly.

Yue Zhong already had a number of technology obtained from the God and Devil System, many of which did not require fuel or traditional energy sources. Instead, they required the nuclei.

Compared to traditional energy sources, Mutant Beast nuclei were more efficient, smaller in size, and could absorb energy to replenish themselves. As long as one did not extract more than what a nucleus was capable of, it could slowly absorb energy to its fullest amount. Of course, if a single usage exceeded its limit, it would crumble.

At the same time, it was not that nuclei had no cons. In the midst of an intense battle, there would be cases of nuclei being overdraft, thus being destroyed. Yue Zhong had fired his Electromagnetic Gun many times, resulting in the destruction of a few Type 3 and Type 4 nuclei.

Within the Cloud Region, Mutant Beast nuclei were an important source of energy. Every military had a storage facility purely to contain them.

The neat chests of nuclei were definitely above hundreds of thousands. Many were Type 2 and Type 3 nuclei, of which, there were at least 10,000 already. Just this one storage facility was more than what the Storm Valley and Winged Race had.

Ouyang Wu Mie went to the center of the room and pressed a button, causing a small booth to rise. It was covered with a silver alloy.

He then keyed in some numbers into the booth, opening it, revealing a black Type 5 Battle Suit as well as 2 Type 5 nuclei.

Ouyang Wu Mie handed them over to Yue Zhong, reporting, "Master. These are 2 Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei, our Fort's most precious resource. This is also the strongest battle suit, hope that Master likes it."

This Type 5 Battle Suit was Ouyang Wu Mie's equipment. However, due to the tight security and the powerful guards, there had never been a precedent case of an enemy making it all the way here. Ever since Ouyang Wu Mie became the general, he had placed his Battle Suit here, and not touched it. After all, it was not exactly comfortable wearing a Battle Suit all the time.

"Not bad!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a look of appreciation as he kept the items in his storage ring.

He had gotten 2 sets of Type 5 Battle Suits from the Sun Alliance,

however, they had suffered quite some damage during the battle with the Mid-Grade Dino-Generals. In fact, they were almost on the brink of breaking apart.

This Type 5 Battle Suit will allow Yue Zhong to possess an additional trump card. With his current strength, adding on to the enhancements provided by the suit, his combat strength would likely reach an unfathomable level.

After storing it, Yue Zhong did not hesitate to suck all the nuclei into his storage ring.

With enough Mutant Beast nuclei, Yue Zhong could create more Puppet Runes, and gain better control of the Xue Luo Fort.

With a flip of his hand, the Puppet Box appeared, and he inserted multiple nuclei inside, causing it to flash and generate out Puppet Runes.

Yue Zhong handed a hundred Type 4 Puppet Runes to Ouyang Wu Mie, ordering, "Go turn everyone within the inner fort into puppets. Do it secretly!"

"Yes! Master!"

# Chapter 873: Control!

---

30 young men and women came towards the 20th Xue Luo Fort under the guarded gazes of the Xue Luo guards.

Amongst them, there was the Storm Queen Luo Qing Qing. She was currently wearing tattered clothes, her face and hands were smeared with some plant sap, giving her a yellowish hue, looking like a sallow and emaciated refugee.

Beside her, there was her personal guard, Hai Xi of the Storm 8 Greats. Hai Xi was currently extremely tense, her head slightly bowed, not daring to reveal any strange signs or behavior.

Along the way, Hai Xi and the rest had finally seen how terrifying each of the 20 Forts were. The tight defense and security, combined with the numerous Type 3 Divine Warriors with Type 3 Battle Suits, as well as the advanced weaponry they did not recognize had shaken them thoroughly. In Green Region, they might be the cream of the crop, but here, they were merely ordinary experts.

When the group came to the 20th Fort, a Xue Luo guard wearing a Type 3 Battle Suit came up to them and said, "Please come with me! The General would like to see you."

"Yes!"

Luo Qing Qing and the rest did not dare to cause any problems, thus they followed the guard.

The further they got, the more uneasy they felt. Especially after arriving in the inner fort, and noticing the various Xue Luo guards who were emitting a strong bloodlust, they felt a growing sense of discomfort.

Other than Luo Qing Qing, none of them was a match for any of the guards within this place. Now that they were here, it was impossible for them to flee.

They were soon brought into the General's study.

The moment they entered the room, Hai Xi caught sight of Yue Zhong sitting leisurely in the main seat of the room, and could not help but exclaim, "AH!"

When everyone else saw him, their faces also changed.

Within this batch of people, half were Yue Zhong's people, the other half Luo Qing Qing's.

When Yue Zhong's subordinates saw him, their eyes flashed with excitement, but they maintained their silence obediently.

Luo Qing Qing's people were shocked and eyed him with surprise.

When they were escorted, they had been warned not to make any noise, thus they were all maintaining their silence while eyeing Yue Zhong.

Luo Qing Qing glanced at Yue Zhong, her eyes also filled with the same surprise and a million questions. She had seen the security for herself, and in terms of equipment or systems or protocol, their Storm Valley could not compare. She knew Yue Zhong was strong, but she was also clear that he could not have possibly invaded such a place so easily.

Not to mention Yue Zhong, even the legendary Type 6 Divine Warrior, if a single one were to charge into such a fortress alone, the various defense systems and warriors would be enough to beat him or her back.

Yue Zhong sat on the General's seat, eyeing Luo Qing Qing for a while before smiling, "Luo Qing Qing, it's been a few days, have you broken through?"

Yue Zhong might not have the ability to see through other people's strength, but his Danger Perception told him that Luo Qing Qing was now capable of threatening him.

Luo Qing Qing chuckled, "Not too long ago."

Type 5 Divine Warriors were known as peak experts in any factions. With humans physiques being weaker than other species and races, it was harder for them to cross that barrier.

Luo Qing Qing had gotten through that watershed with her own talents, and among humans, she could be considered a rare talent.

She suddenly asked, "Yue Zhong, are you already in total control of this place?"

Although they had not known each other for long, she knew Yue Zhong well enough. If he did not have the confidence, he would not have revealed himself so easily.

To think that Yue Zhong had managed to successfully infiltrate and gain control over such an important fort of the Cloud Region within such a short period of time, Luo Qing Qing could not help but in disbelief.

Yue Zhong smiled lightly, "That's right, the 20th Fort is already in my control."

With the Puppet Box, Yue Zhong was able to create a huge number of Puppet Runes. With Ouyang Wu Mie and the 8 elites as the source, they had slowly gone to make sure that the entire Xue Luo guards were his puppets.

The Treasures of Hope were considered silver-level treasures. Although there was a limitation to them, every single treasure possessed a great deal of strength.

With the Puppet Box, as long as there were enough Mutant Beast nuclei, Yue Zhong could even bring a million people as his puppets. If such a treasure were to fall into the wrong hands, then it would be a terrifying disaster.

Ever since Yue Zhong had gained the Puppet Box, it was the first time he had undertaken action on such a mass scale. This was because the Xue Luo guards were extremely loyal to the King, Wei Ming Qing, and he had no choice but to turn them all. Otherwise,

should his identity be revealed, the residents of Blood-Red City would be in peril.

Luo Qing Qing asked, "What are your plans, now that you have gathered us here?"

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed, "I need you to help me control the troops of the other Forts!"

After that, he began to outline his plan to Luo Qing Qing.

A day later, a 6m-long vehicle that looked similar to a jeep, its body gray in color, carved with mysterious runes, was traveling towards the 20th Fort. The bottom of the vehicle had a Type 3 Mutant Beast nuclei inserted.

4 soldiers wearing Type 4 Body Suits stepped out, eyeing their surroundings warily.

A burly, middle-aged man stepped out of the jeep as well, dressed in a smart, black military uniform.

One Xue Luo guard came up to him and spoke solemnly, "General Qing Yuan, please come with me!"

Qing Yuan nodded slightly and followed after the Xue Luo guard towards the inner parts of the 20th Fort.

Qing Yuan asked him casually, "This time, General Ouyang Wu Mie had summoned us, do you have any idea what's going on?"

Ouyang Wu Mie had summoned all these generals without specifying a reason, Qing Yuan was feeling extremely suspicious.

The Xue Luo guard replied, "General, this subordinate does not know!"

Since he did not get an answer, he did not pry further. He did not expect the Xue Luo guard to know anything in the first place, after all, this was just a rank-and-file soldier, he could not possibly know classified secrets.

Under the lead of the Xue Luo guard, Qing Yuan arrived at the

hall together with his 4 guards.

Inside the hall, the other generals of the other forts had already gathered, together with their guards.

Ouyang Wu Mie stepped forwards with 2 of his guards.

He smiled brightly as he approached, "Qing Yuan, you're finally here!! What took you so long?!"

Qing Yuan chuckled back, "General Ouyang Wu Mie, wasn't the meeting for 11? It's only 9 now, I'm early in fact!"

"Hahaha!!" Ouyang Wu Mie laughed and got closer, pulling the distance between them nearer.

At this moment, Ouyang Wu Mie suddenly acted, throwing a chop towards the back of Qing Yuan's head.

Qing Yuan only had the combat ability of a Type 4 Divine Warrior and had not expected his comrade Ouyang Wu Mie to act against him. Therefore, he was knocked unconscious.

"General!!"

The 4 soldiers beside him instantly shouted in alarm. As for the 2 guards beside Ouyang Wu Mie, they were Yue Zhong and Luo Qing, who burst forth and knocked out the 4 soldiers mercilessly as well.

With their statuses as Type 5 Divine Warriors, launching a sneak attack on 4 Type 4 Divine Warriors was as easy as pie.

Yue Zhong opened his palm and sent Type 4 Puppet Runes into the 5 unconscious newcomers.

Luo Qing saw the runes and looked at Yue Zhong with a complicated expression, "What a terrifying ability! You'd better only use this on the enemy! If you dare use this on my people, don't blame me for flipping out."

With such an ability to control a person's body and thoughts, anyone would be fearful after witnessing it.

Luo Qing Qing was also worried that Yue Zhong would use it on her subordinates.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Relax, I will not use this on innocent people. The way to distinguish if they're my puppets is simple. Puppets will have wooden eyes and no self-will. They're easy to recognize. Otherwise, I would not need you guys to help me already."

The Puppet Runes were terrifying, and Yue Zhong did not wish to abuse the power of this Treasure of Hope. It was a principle and line that he would not cross. However, against his enemies, he had no qualms.

Yue Zhong looked at Qing Yuan as he spoke, "The last one has been captured, let us begin!"

Luo Qing Qing nodded, "Yes!"

Soon, Qing Yuan left the 20th Fort, heading back to the 19th Fort, followed by Luo Qing Qing as well as a thousand Xue Luo Guards.

Qing Yuan immediately gave an order when he arrived back at his fort, summoning the various commanders.

Within the command center, Qing Yuan commanded, "Convey my orders, we are to hand over all defense to the Xue Luo Guards, and get everybody to prepare a day's worth of rations. We are to head towards the 20th Fort."

# Chapter 874: Gaining 8 Forts!

---

Hearing this order, all the commanders exchanged looks. Such an order was extremely strange, it was the first time in the hundreds of years that such an order was given.

One of the captains could not help but ask, "General! This subordinate would like to know the reason!"

Qing Yuan's face turned cold, "This is a secret of His Majesty. You're not qualified to know. Immediately carry out my command, execute those who resist."

"Yes!"

The faces of all the commanders paled, and they responded quickly, not daring to ask any further questions.

Although they were at the borders, many of them had relations with the Capital, and they knew about the recent developments of the King Wei Ming Qing and his insanity recently. Those that had dared disobeyed his orders had already been eradicated. If they did not want to die, they had to maintain their silence, otherwise, if they were executed by Qing Yuan, no one would feel seek justice for them.

Many of them guessed that their deployment was likely to suppress the rebellion in Blood Red City.

Regardless of what they thought, they still had to follow Qing Yuan's orders, deploying the troops of the 19th Fort, and abandoning all their weapons, taking one day's worth of rations over.

The 20th Fort had more weapons and the equipment was advanced as well. The 19th Fort knew this well, and they drooled when they thought of equipping those amazing tech.

Just as the 19th Fort troops arrived at the designated parade square, suddenly, the various bunkers around opened up to reveal

automated defenses, aiming at the soldiers from the 19th Fort.

"We're allies!! We're allies from the 19th Fort! Don't open fire!! Don't open fire!!"

Seeing the sudden appearance of the weapons as well as the Xue Luo troops holding weapons against them, the various commanders shouted out in shock and fear.

Their faces were pale and their hearts were filled with fright. They had no equipment nor weapons now. If the Xue Luo guards were to open fire, they would be slaughtered without a doubt. No one would survive.

Ouyang Wu Mie came in front of them, speaking with a strong, intimidating aura, "I am Ouyang Wu Mie! I have received intelligence that among you of the 19th Fort, there are a few commanders who had defected to the rebels. Do not resist, and accept our interrogations and checks. If there's nothing wrong, I will release you immediately. Resistance would be dealt with harshly!"

Hearing his words, most of the soldiers relaxed, if it was just an inspection, they had no fear.

One captain replied, "We're willing to be checked!!"

When he stepped out, the rest of the commanders also agreed to be investigated.

Ouyang Wu Mie then left a sentence, before turning around, "In that case, line up orderly."

The many commanders of the 19th Fort thus stepped forwards obediently, before being led by the Xue Luo guards into the cells.

In this manner, the troops of the 18th to the 13th Forts were all tricked by Yue Zhong into the 20th Fort, and thrown into jail. Just like that, the 20th Fort was filled with many captives, every single cell filled to the brim.

Yue Zhong gained 70,000 captives and 10,000 elite Xue Luo guards successfully.

He then brought Bai Yi to the 7 Forts, gaining control over their central computers.

At the same time, Yue Zhong stationed 2,000 Xue Luo guards at the 13th Fort to control the area carefully.

With them standing guard, even if the 12 other Forts were to force their way over, they could buy some time.

As for the 70,000 captives, they were not like the Xue Luo guards, who were a 100% loyal to the King, thus, Yue Zhong had no intentions of making them, all into his puppets. He just set aside 500 soldiers to oversee and stand guard over them.

In fact, with Bai Yi's help, if the 70,000 captives dared to escape, they would only be seeking death. However, just for precaution, Yue Zhong allocated 500 elites to watch them. After all, while Bai Yi might be a Super A.I., it was not impossible for someone to possess computer-related abilities.

After bringing the 7 Forts under his hands without causing a commotion, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief.

He now had 7 Forts controlled together with the 20th, as well as 10,000 elite Xue Luo guards. He even had the support of logistics from Blood Red City. It could be considered a decent footing within Cloud Region. If anyone wanted to flee, they would have to pay a painful price.

Within the 20 Forts, from time to time, troops and mercenaries would leave through the forts to hunt Mutant Beasts outside, increasing their strength and assets.

The entire body of Mutant Beasts were treasures. The blood and flesh could strengthen, the fur and hide could be made into protection, while claws and teeth could be made into weapons. Nuclei were a strong currency, therefore, there would be hunters

almost every day.

Blood Red City was near the border, and the Mutant Beasts near the city had already almost been hunted clean. That left those hiding in the swamps and lakes. Of them, there were a few Type 4 and Type 5 Mutant Beasts which most hunters were not willing to provoke.

If it were those land-based Mutant Beasts, humans could still deal with them. Even a Type 5 Mutant Beast could be brought down by weapons of humans if they did not have an innate ability.

As for those Type 5 Mutant Beasts within the swamps, even the toughest and most elite Xue Luo troops would be helpless against them. As long as the beasts remain in the water, most attacks would be ineffective. Furthermore, many of them had some form of toxin or poison, their attacks could corrode the Type 3 Battle Suits. The moment a person was splashed with the tiniest bit, he or she would be corroded to death.

The 1st, 2nd and 3rd Forts continued to defend their own turfs, not leaving easily. Therefore, there were still many Mutant Beasts in the mountains near them.

Under such circumstances, the optimal hunting grounds would be mountain range nearby the 20th Fort.

On this day, a unit of 100 people wielding a number of Mutant Beasts heads and formed an entire line. The leader of this troop was precisely Yue Zhong's subordinate, Shao Yun.

Shao Yun handed an electronic name card to one soldier at the gate, "Sir, this is our identity pass!"

The soldier took a look at Shao Yun, before placing the card in the machine to verify. He then waved his hands, "Proceed!"

"Let's go!"

Shao Yun relaxed slightly when the soldier allowed them passage.

A hundred people were swiftly making their way towards the city.

After entering the Fort, the huge alloy doors closed shut with a loud boom, sealing the entrance.

A hundred warriors wielding ray guns and electromagnetic cannons suddenly emerged from some covers, their weapons pointed at Shao Yun and the rest.

A number of defense systems were also activated, locked on Shao Yun and his men.

When Shao Yun and his men saw this, their faces changed, but they did not make any sudden movements. Those weapons and firepower were enough to slaughter the whole lot of them. As long as the other side intended to, they would be killed instantly.

A middle-aged man stepped out, his figure burly and muscular, wearing a Type 5 Body Suit. He was like a sharp sword that was unsheathed, as he walked towards Shao Yun while eyeing them menacingly.

There were 16 personal guards around that man, each of them wearing Type 4 Body Suits, eyeing the 100 mercenaries as though they were prey.

Shao Yun saluted the middle-aged man while speaking respectfully, "This General, we do not know how we might have offended you, but if we did, we apologize sincerely."

The man spoke out coldly, emitting an intimidating might, "These few days, you people have been moving into Cloud Region under the guise of mercenaries, refugees, and other factions, numbering more than 3,000 people. Especially those mercenaries, just because you have 'proper documents', you guys really think that you can saunter around so unbridled?"

"Have we been discovered?" Shao Yun muttered before he lifted his head in a neither servile nor overbearing manner, replying,

"This General, my lord does not think like that. He guessed that our movements would surely attract some attention sooner or later. May we ask if General Zheng Yan He is around? Our Lord would like us to pass a message."

The middle-aged man replied indifferently, "That is me! Speak!"

Shao Yun immediately continued, "Our Lord wants us to tell you, the 13th to 20th Forts are already under his control. We hope that both sides can coexist peacefully. After all, we are all humans, and should not engage in mutual slaughter."

When Zheng Yan He heard this, his impassive face immediately fell, as he lost his calm. He stared at Shao Yun, "Who is your lord?! Liu Yun Feng? Or Zhang Jin He?"

Due to the immoral actions of Wei Ming Qing, there were a number of rebel forces that had surfaced, especially Liu Yun Feng and Zhang Jin He, two extremely powerful factions. The moment Zheng Yan He heard that 8 Forts had fallen to someone else's hands, he immediately thought of those two.

Shao Yun replied, "Neither! Our Lord is called Yue Zhong."

# Chapter 875: Han Qiong!

---

Zheng Yan He frowned slightly; he had never heard this name before. "Yue Zhong?"

He continued, "You say that the 13th to 20th Forts are already in your grasp, how do you prove it?"

"This is easy!" Shao Yun chuckled, and pulled out a signal flare, before firing it to the sky. A bright flash soared, exploding out in the clouds with bright colors.

Soon, similar flares appeared in the skies above the 13th to the 20th Fort, exploding out, signaling a reply to Shao Yun.

Zheng Yan He eyed the 8 bright flares, falling silent for quite a while. He then looked at Shao Yun and asked gravely, "What does your lord hope that I do?"

Shao Yun rejoiced inwardly when he heard it, "If possible, our lord hopes that you can agree to join him, and fight against Wei Ming Qing. After the battle is over, he will offer a princely reward."

Zheng Yan He's mouth curled slightly in contempt, "Princely reward? If I do not agree, what does he intend to do then?"

Shao Yun's face flashed with disappointment, but he continued to respond according to Yue Zhong's instructions, "Our Lord has expected that you aren't willing to submit. He respects and admires your character and beliefs, even if you do not submit, he will not make things hard for you. He intends for the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Forts to carry on as per normal, not allowing any Dino-warriors into Cloud Region while allowing our people passage into Cloud Region."

Zheng Yan He fell silent once more. This time, he thought for a while before replying softly, "I will not join his cause. Battles between humans, our 3 Forts will definitely stay out of it. As for your people, I will allow them passage."

"You may go!"

Zheng Yan He then waved his hands, causing the defense systems and soldiers to stand down and withdraw.

"Many thanks, General! Let's go!" Shao Yun heaved a sigh of relief, wiping the perspiration off his face, before barking out his orders behind. Just now, as long as Zheng Yan He had felt like it, he could have ordered their deaths, and they would all die. This naturally caused Shao Yun to be anxious.

Under Shao Yun's orders, the soldiers who had disguised themselves to be mercenaries quickly followed behind.

Zheng Yan He watched Shao Yun and his men leave with a complicated gleam in his eyes, "Seems like Cloud Region is not going to have peace for much longer!"

With Zheng Yan He's cooperation, Yue Zhong's transfer of his troops from outside to the city became a whole lot more convenient. A large number of soldiers were deployed from the Storm Battleship before assigned to the different Forts to undergo training.

The Xue Luo guards who had been controlled became the instructors, training the soldiers without stop every day.

With the help of their training regime, the combat skills and physique of Yue Zhong's subordinates rose incredibly.

When the rest of the Generals of the other Forts saw how Zheng Yan He was allowing such a large group in, while their supplies route was being controlled by Yue Zhong, they kept silent. They had no choice but to cooperate with Yue Zhong's influx of soldiers.

On this day, as Yue Zhong was observing their training, Willianna came up to him, decked in a black military uniform. She saluted, before handing a document over to him, "Sir Yue Zhong, this is an urgent report sent by Her Majesty Luo Qing Qing."

Yue Zhong took a look and frowned. A blazing fire erupted from

his palms, turning the document into ashes.

He barked, "Han Qiong!"

Han Qiong swiftly came in, saluting him before reporting in, "Your subordinate is here!"

During this period of training, Han Qiong, this former idol, had already thoroughly transformed into a proper soldier. With large amounts of blood honey and the corpses of the Blood-sucking Bees, she had already metamorphosed into a Type 2 Divine Warrior.

Yue Zhong eyed her and said, "Take 500 Xue Luo guards, and 300 Falcon soldiers to the west. I want you to defeat the Evergreen City's troops, and safely escort the refugees into Blood Red City. There're 2,000 soldiers over there. Do you have the confidence to crush them?"

A resolute look flashed past her eyes, as she replied, "I will complete my mission!"

Yue Zhong was satisfied and said, "Go!"

Han Qiong was one of the subordinates that Yue Zhong was extremely satisfied with. She had a decent education and could accept new things with an open mind. She could understand Yue Zhong's commands and was firm and yet flexible with her own execution.

Ma Lei and Shao Yun were the warriors under Yue Zhong. They dared to rush and kill enemies, carrying out Yue Zhong's order to the end. However, they were slower in comprehension and were just brave generals.

"Yes!" Han Qiong saluted and left.

After Han Qiong left, Willianna massaged Yue Zhong's hands while speaking suggestively, "She's pretty outstanding eh? Yue Zhong, how about it? Bring her into the room and let's have a nice 'party'?"

Han Qiong, Sun Lan Lan, Lai Wei and Han Zi Xuan were the most outstanding female warriors under Yue Zhong's command.

The other commanders were raised and promoted from the slaves and warriors that Yue Zhong had groomed. While their combat strength was decent, they were lacking in many other areas. Currently, in terms of education, they were being by that big-boobed beauty Sun Lan Lan.

Yue Zhong slapped Willianna's plump bottom gently, feeling the bounciness, "Stop fooling around, our time is extremely precious right now. Go get Ma Lei for me."

Willianna pried herself away, shooting a coquettish look at him. She then arranged her clothes and left, leaving behind her fragrant scent.

Soon after, 3 troops of soldiers left the 20th Fort, leaving for the distance.

In Cloud Region, although there were no rail tracks, every city had constructed a spacious road directly to the Capital City.

Following the broad passage, the Capital could send out its numerous mechanized troops to quell any rebellion in any city.

Currently, on the road from Evergreen City to the Capital, there were any people in tattered clothes, their expressions of fear and despair as they trudged on.

On the long road, a boy suddenly shuddered and crumpled to the ground.

A soldier on an enhanced motorcycle came up, lashing out with a whip, striking the boy viciously as he cussed, "Shit! Get up! Stupid beast!!"

The boy's clothes were ripped open, as long, bloody marks appeared on his skin. He struggled in pain before he stopped moving entirely.

The soldier frowned slightly, and pointed to 2 strong men, ordering, "He's dead! The 2 of you, come over, toss him to one side!"

The 2 burly men did not dare disobey. They walked over obediently, grabbing the corpse of the boy and tossed it aside.

This little hiccup did not even cause a ripple among the people, as everyone continued forward numbly.

The refugees were all lacking nutrients, their bodies were weak. This long journey was basically hell for them. From time to time, some would fall to the ground, never to stand again.

Those who fell in the middle would be trampled to a meat pulp by the rest behind.

One soldier complained, "Damn it! This mission is damn f\*cking annoying. If not for this, this senior would be enjoying Lil' Tao Hong's ass right now at the Fragrant Pavillion."

Another soldier mocked him, "Little Tao Hong's expensive, how're you able to afford to play with her?"

The first soldier continued to boast, "But of course, this senior's big rod is enough to let her have a taste of heaven! Now, whenever she sees this senior, her eyes brighten up! You guys better learn!!"

"I won't bother talking more! This senior has seen some good stuff!!" The soldier swept a glance across the human crowd, and his eyes brightened. He charged forward, grabbing a little girl from the group and pulled her out.

When the refugees saw this, they quickly got out of the way, afraid to provoke the ire of the soldiers. Even some righteous young men fell silent when they saw the ray guns on the backs of those soldiers. On this road, even if the soldiers killed a few people, they would just be reprimanded at most. Whereas the refugees could not reclaim their lives if they died.

Another soldier came over, taking a look at the girl grabbed by

the first soldier. His eyes brightened as well, "Old Wang, you're capable eh!! Good eyes!! This chick looks pretty lithe. Damn, this senior wants a round as well! It's my turn after yours!"

The little girl in front of these 2 depraved soldiers had messy hair, her entire body covered in dirt and grime. Her clothes were tattered and her body was emitting a slightly foul stench. However, her eyes were wide and clear. At the same time, beneath the dirt, her features were exquisite, and upon close inspection, one can tell that she was a little beauty. Lastly, she looked young, but her chest was already developing well, thus, attracting the attention of those 2 sick devils.

When the little girl was dragged out, she struggled frantically like an alarmed rabbit. However, no matter how she struggled, she had no way of escaping from the clutches of Old Wang, a Type 2 Divine Warrior.

The physique of people of Cloud Region was considerably stronger than other places. Even the most ordinary of soldiers would possess a strength of at least Type 2 Divine Warrior. It was naturally impossible for a young girl to fight against such soldiers.

Old Wang cursed out, "Damn, this senior discovered her, why should I let you play with her? 2,000 credit points. Fork it out and you can have a turn!"

The other soldier stared greedily at the little girl and gritted her teeth, "Fine! 2,000 credit points it is!!"

After their short discussion, Old Wang panted, and pounced on the girl, tearing her clothes apart like it was nothing.

The little girl cried and screamed, before opening her little mouth to bite down harshly on the hand of Old Wang.

"F\*ck!!! You little bitch!! You wanna die?!" Old Wang roared out in pain and rage, sending a vicious slap across her face. The cheeks of the girl started to swell as blood flowed down her mouth.

She cried out, before twisting her head to stare at him fixedly with a glare that was eerily similar to an enraged wild wolf, her gaze filled with hatred.

Old Wang was momentarily taken aback by that stare, his hairs standing on end. He retreated 2 steps uncontrollably, before he roared out in shame, "What are you looking at?! Do you believe this senior will dig out your eyeballs!!"

Even with that loud shout, the girl continued to stare at him fixedly. Old Wang felt a chill in his heart, and he emitted a killing intent.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

"Ah!!

"Help!!"

"..."

Right at this time, there were cries and screams of shock from behind. A number of laser beams and electromagnetic shots fired from behind. The crowd began to panic and ran in different directions, causing some to fall under the stampede.

"Xue Luo guards!! They're the Xue Luo guards!! The Xue Luo guards are killing their way over!!"

"It's the Xue Luo guards!!"

"We are allies!! Why are they attacking us?"

"..."

The intense battle lasted no more than 10 minutes, forcing the thousands of soldiers back in retreat.

The soldiers of Evergreen City were far from comparable to the Xue Luo guards. Furthermore, their equipment was lacking, adding on to them not being prepared for the Xue Luo guards, they were thus easily crushed by Han Qiong. Many fled in other directions.

Old Wang watched his comrades fleeing past him, and his eyes flashed with fear. He grabbed the girl and tried to drag her towards his motorcycle, "Come with me!"

The girl was weak, no matter how hard she struggled, she could not resist.

Right at this time, an electromagnetic beam shot from a distance, directly penetrating Old Wang's head. Blood showered all over the girl.

The girl turned to look in the direction of the shot, only to see Han Qiong riding over valiantly on her own enhanced motorcycle, decked in a black Type 3 Body Suit.

When she came up to the girl, Han Qiong asked, "Are you alright?"

The little girl nodded.

Han Qiong surveyed the surroundings but did not discover any parent-figure. She sighed lightly, "Come on up!"

She had seen plenty of such cases.

The little girl scrambled up the motorcycle.

# Chapter 876: Capital City!

---

Han Qiong led 800 elite soldiers, with the Xue Luo guards in front, easily charging through the troops from Evergreen City. She deployed 200 Xue Luo guards to chase after those who were fleeing while sending another 300 to gather the scattered refugees.

Under her efforts, the refugees were gathered once more, reaching a staggering figure of hundred thousand. It was truly a difficult feat to perform.

One female warrior came up to Han Qiong and reported, "Captain Han, there's a troop about 20 li away. There're about 3,000 soldiers, and they're likely to be the reinforcements of Evergreen City.

One other commander beside Han Qiong asked out of concern, "What should we do? Captain, should we disperse?"

They numbered only 800, with 200 already sent to clean up the fleeing Evergreen troops. 300 were maintaining order, thus leaving behind another 300 that was available for combat.

Han Qiong's eyes flashed with a decisive look, "No! We cannot flee! I will take the troops to go fight it out with them. You guys stay here and maintain order!"

After the chaos and panic earlier, over 2,000 refugees had perished in the stampede, while another 8,000 were missing in the wilderness.

If panic was to break out again, the refugees would definitely be harder to control, and more people would suffer under the chaos.

When she made her decision, Han Qiong immediately kickstarted her motorcycle. She charged towards the front in her Type 3 Body Suit and Battle Spear, leading 300 Xue Luo guards as well as 2 Reapers.

The speed of the enhanced motorcycle was terrifying. The

distance of 20 li was quickly passed, soon, Han Qiong caught sight of the 3,000 troops wielding ray guns and sitting in infantry vehicles making their way over.

The enhanced motorcycles were equipped with Type 2 Mutant Beast nuclei. It was not a means of transportation that was widely available. To ordinary soldiers, infantry vehicles were more than enough for their transportation needs.

"Attack!!"

The moment Han Qiong charged forward, she controlled her enhanced motorcycle to fire out laser beams at the infantry vehicles.

The battle-hardened Xue Luo guards also pushed their own enhanced motorcycles to fire laser beams at the infantry vehicles.

Faced with the assault of laser beams, many of the armored infantry vehicles were pummeled full of holes. Many soldiers within were also punctured, leaving them gravely injured or dead.

At this moment, the disadvantage of laser weapons was exhibited. Although laser weapons had high penetrating power, they were unable to annihilate an entire infantry vehicle with a single shot.

However, this disadvantage was covered by the 2 Reapers behind. The moment they opened up their shoulder flaps, a number of guided missiles shot out.

Every shot was able to cause a huge explosion when they struck the infantry vehicles, consuming the entire vehicle as well as the soldiers within in flames.

The 2 Reapers were like moving fortresses, crushing any armored vehicles under their feet when they got too near. Many soldiers were instantly crushed to death.

"Reaper!! Those are Reapers!! How is it possible for Reapers to be here?!" Damn it!!"

"Quick!! Run!!"

"..."

When faced with the sudden assault, the entire troop simply fell apart. Their casualty rate when Han Qiong slammed into them had instantly rose to 30%. They were just an ordinary troop that had not undergone many battles. Faced with such a toll of injured soldiers, their morale plunged.

Many of them threw away their equipment and hurried to get on their vehicles. As they fled, they left behind their weapon loads as well as the vehicles carrying their equipment that they were supposed to be guarding strictly.

Han Qiong saw this and relaxed slightly. With her force of 300, she had launched a sudden attack on these 3,000 soldiers, it was impossible not to feel pressure. Had she failed, the hundreds of thousands of refugees would suffer a terrible fate.

This time, Han Qiong had managed to succeed and gain the advantage of a sneak attack was partly due to the timing of her attack. Especially the 2 Reapers, which had instantly destroyed a large number of the transport vehicles. This caused a large number of casualties on the enemy's side while crushing their morale, thus forcing them to retreat.

When Han Qiong observed carefully, she suddenly understood, "They could not have been reinforcements, they were most likely escorts for the items in these trucks."

She opened the boxes, sucking in a cold breath when she saw what was inside. Her eyes lit up with excitement.

In each of those large transport vehicles, there were Reapers. In the 30 large vehicles, there were a total of 30 Reapers.

The might of Reapers were truly shocking, yet they were incredibly hard to manufacture. The runes and alloy parts of their frame were hard to produce, furthermore, many core parts were

made out of parts of Type 5 Mutant Beasts.

In the entire Cloud Region, there might at most be a total of 5 Reapers manufactured a year. These 30 models being transported meant 6 years of Cloud Region's output already.

Han Qiong swiftly came up to one captive and asked him harshly, "Where were you guys intending to send these to?"

The captive replied obediently, "We were tasked to send them to the Capital!"

"Did any of your superiors mention that the goods were Reapers?"

"No, our superiors just told us to deliver them to the Capital."

"Do you know where they came from?"

"Not too clear."

Han Qiong gathered a few others to verify the information but did not receive much help. She gave up, instead, relaying what she had to Yue Zhong.

"There seems to be something brewing?"

When Yue Zhong heard the news, his gut feeling told him that there was something happening in the Capital. However, since he was still at the 20th Fort, he had no clue about what was happening there.

A sense of urgency overcame him, he did not know why he felt so anxious. However, he could feel it deep in his bones that if he stayed here, there might be an irreversible mistake.

"Seems like I need to take a look myself."

Yue Zhong made the decision quickly, and after relaying some orders, he quickly made his way in the direction of the capital.

The Capital was about a few thousand li away from Blood Red City. There were a few cities along the way. If the army was to be

deployed, the journey would be long and arduous.

Yue Zhong disguised himself as an Evergreen soldier, and under the pretense of carrying out orders, he rode an enhanced motorcycle along the huge road, nearing the Capital after 3 days.

"Is that the Capital? It truly seems like a marvelous existence."

Now that he was up close, he could not help but sigh at the look of the place.

In the distance, the various peaks of the Capital were touching the clouds, the numerous structures, and buildings made out of reinforced-alloy concrete.

On the city wall, the various defense systems were set up with automation, while various bunkers littered around the city wall.

A number of heavy cannons were littered all around the city wall. With his eyes sweeping across, he could tell that there were at least 3,000 of such weapons.

A single round could devastate anything within a 1 sq km. If all 3,000 of them were to fire, even a Type 6 Divine Warrior would be blasted to smithereens.

Of course, while the damage was tyrannical, it had a shortcoming as well. That was the energy consumption. Every round required the emptying of a Type 3 Mutant Beast nucleus, at the same time, there was a limitation to the firing rate, 1 round per minute. If it was forced to fire out rapidly, then it would explode. The Capital would not dare to risk such a move as well.

Other than those energy cannons, there were bright, flashy laser weapons atop the city walls.

The range of these laser weapons was about 5km, a single shot could pierce the body of a Type 5 Divine Warrior. The frightening thing was their numbers. There were at least hundreds of thousands of them.

These were just one part of the arsenal. Within the city, there was even the Raytheon Cannon that could kill even a Type 7 Divine Warrior instantly, as well as other powerful weapons.

Because of these, Wei Ming Qing dared to slaughter the refugees and make use of their blood-honey to strengthen himself.

As long as he gained the Capital, then even if a million-strong army were to attack before the nuclei of the Capital ran out, it was nearly impossible for anyone to break through such a defense.

Yue Zhong eyed the Capital and thought quietly, "In order to attack the city, it's impossible to do so from the outside. I definitely have to sneak in there."

Although he knew the only way in, he did not dare to make any rash moves.

In these few days, under his careful observation, Yue Zhong had assessed the place to be entirely sealed. People were allowed in but not out. There had not been any exits out of the Capital at all. Such a strange sight was already ringing alarm bells in his head. If he forcefully sneaked in, the moment he was caught or captured, there was no guarantee he could escape unharmed.

# Chapter 877: Phantom!

---

Currently, the entire region around the Capital City had somehow transformed into a desolate area. There were only buildings without any signs of human life.

Within the inner regions, the upper-class society resided, whereas the area outside the Capital was for the poor and homeless.

Yue Zhong walked among the ruins and would find some incomplete human corpses littered on the roadside from time to time. Such a sight gave him the chills, and he was clearer about the tyranny and cruelty of Wei Ming Qing.

"For the sake of his own strength, he had sacrificed over a million people. This person is worse than a beast!"

A strong surge of fury arose in his heart. Yue Zhong was no saint himself, having walked a tough road since the apocalypse, his personality growing more vicious and decisive. However, he would never do such a thing to strengthen himself. It was too cruel, sadistic, and cold to slaughter a million people.

In the various towns, there was a stifling atmosphere lingering. Yue Zhong continued to travel through the towns.

Right at this moment, a strong sense of danger rose up in his mind. He channeled his Dark Dou Qi, twisting his body at an impossible angle, evading towards the side.

A black dagger flashed across his chest with a trailing light, tearing through the Type 5 Mutant Beast hide Yue Zhong was wearing. Fresh blood flowed from his wound.

Had Yue Zhong's reaction been slower by just a little, he would have been killed instantly by that dagger.

Yue Zhong twisted his body once more, quickly activated his Third Order Gravity Manipulation, causing the owner of the

shadow to sink. He then sent an explosive fist towards the assailant.

At that instant, the fist went right through the black shadow, feeling as though he passed through the air. There was no sensation at all.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed and swiftly turned back to assess his surroundings. However, he did not discover anybody. The bloody wound on his chest gave him a reminder that there was a powerful and terrifying expert hidden within this barren town.

"Expert! There's an expert here!"

Yue Zhong looked all around at the dilapidated buildings, his pupils constricted. The expert could flee from his hands, which meant that he was not some riff-raff, and was likely at least a peak Type 4 Divine Warrior.

After checking his surroundings, he did not discover anybody. Proceeding into an alley carefully, he flipped his hands and took out a multi-purpose helmet.

Yue Zhong put it on and walked out. With Bai Yi's control, the helmet was able to scan for signs of life within a radius of dozen meters, sending the information to Yue Zhong. With it on, his sensing abilities became stronger.

"Nobody?"

Yue Zhong walked carefully through the town for a period of time but did not discover any signs of life. A sense of doubt arose, but he still proceeded on cautiously.

At this moment, there were the sounds of motors roaring to life from a road far in the distance. His heart pumping, Yue Zhong swiftly leaped onto the roof of a nearby house and activated his Third Order Stealth, blending into the surrounding.

Soon, a 100 enhanced motorcycles came roaring past, each of them driven by an elite soldier that had an enhanced Battle Spear

on his back. They had ray guns hanging by their waist, their Battle Suits all of the Type 3 level, and they were all wearing multi-purpose helmets. They quickly came charging right through the town.

The moment they entered the town, they quickly got off their motorcycles. Spreading out, they quickly went to occupy several locations.

A soldier in Type 4 Battle Suit turned to his comrade who was in a similar armor, asking doubtfully, "Sir Luo Hai, will Phantom truly be here? There's already nobody in this town, why would she be here?"

Luo Hai swept a glance across the village, his eyes brightening, "She will! This is where she was born, there were her friends here. At that time, when we swept through this place, there were no signs of anybody. We had already surrounded them, they could not possibly have escaped. It is obvious that there's some mechanism somewhere here, hiding the people. This is also a trap we set. For the sake of saving her kin and friends, she will risk her life to come back here. Based on the reports from the superiors, she has already reached here. Today will be the day she dies!!"

Luo Hai turned to the soldier and chuckled, "That's right! We have over a hundred brothers here, she's just merely a Type 4 assassin. As long as we discover her, she will definitely die."

Suddenly, one soldier's countenance turned pale as he screamed out, "No. 3!! No. 4!! No. 5!! No. 7!! Respond!!"

Inside the village, a black shadow flitted about, her black dagger slicing through the air, directly drawing blood across the throats of 4 soldiers.

Before the 4 soldiers could even respond, they slumped to the ground dead.

Another 8 soldiers quickly made their way over. When they saw

the corpses of their 4 comrades, one quickly pulled out his communication device, "No. 3, 4, 5 and 7 are dead!!"

The faces of Luo Hai and the other soldier turned dark. In a split second, they had 4 dead soldiers, it was practically a slap in their faces.

When the report was over, the dark phantom suddenly shot out from an alley, the black dagger in her hands easily slashing across the throats of 3 other soldiers, before she disappeared into the darkness.

12 soldiers rushed over, their faces turning ugly at the sight of the corpses of their comrades.

One soldier reported sullenly, "No. 16, 19 and 20 are dead!!"

At this time, the phantom shot out from another ally, pouncing towards the back of one soldier like a shooting star. The dagger flashed across his throat, and she continued darting through the remaining 11 soldiers.

In the span of a breath, the remaining 11 soldiers were all killed with a knife across their throats, as they slumped noiselessly to the ground.

"No. 78, 77 and 56 are dead!"

"No. 34 and 35 are dead!"

"..."

Seeing all the bad things happening, Luo Hai's expression was turning extremely bad. Within 10 minutes, he had already lost 20 men to the phantom. If things continued on like this, they would all be wiped out.

Luo Hai fell silent for a moment, before making an adjustment, "Convey my orders. Everyone is to form 20-men groups, and head to the west."

The elite soldiers quickly gathered within the town, forming 4

huge groups and they proceeded carefully towards the west.

The distance between the 4 groups was not too far apart, able to provide reinforcements or backup if necessary. As long as the phantom had no means of wiping out 20 men within a short time, they would be able to surround her.

With the 70-odd elites and their Battle Suits, even a Type 5 expert might fall at their hands.

Facing such a formation, Phantom had no way to make a move.

The impasse continued for a while, before a sudden blast of an electromagnetic beam shot out from an alley onto the body of an elite soldier, piercing through him directly.

The rest of the soldiers quickly ducked behind cover, firing at the direction of the electromagnetic beam.

The crossfire of laser beams rained upon the broken-down homes, tearing through walls, causing large holes in the structures.

As they opted for cover over the formation, Luo Hai and his troops continued westward.

While Phantom opted to fire out a few beams from different alleys in a bid to impede them, Luo Hai and his men were still able to advance.

Very quickly, the entire troop came to a short hill at the west of the town, and a few soldiers quickly stepped up to bury a few energy bombs into the ground.

Luo Hai shouted loudly, "Phantom! I know you're here in the village, just give it up! Otherwise, I'll detonate these bombs and bury everyone under here! I know your friends and kin are all hiding underneath this hill right?! Are you willing to watch them die?!"

A clear and bright voice resounded from the village, her tone

dripping with venomous hatred, "Despicable, you actually dare to use innocent people to threaten me?! Don't you feel ashamed of yourself?!"

Luo Hai's eyes flashed as he continued, "So what? Phantom, come on out. As long as you surrender, I will not hurt you nor your kin."

Phantom's clear but enraged voice resounded once more, "Impossible! Wei Ming Qing has already gone insane. So many innocent people have fallen at his hands. If I were to give up, my kin and friends will become his prey!! All you scumbags who are still serving him, have you no morality nor ethics?!"

Luo Hai barked out furiously, "Shut up!! How dare you speak about His Majesty like that?! Those who have died are trash who cannot do anything for our country. They've received our protection, and yet, aren't willing to sacrifice themselves for the country. His Majesty is just helping them realize their usefulness. His kindness and magnanimity can only be understood if you join us!"

# Chapter 878: Threat!

---

Luo Hai's face sunk as he snarled, "Phantom, if you were to submit now, I will let the people below here off. Otherwise, you can all go to hell. I'm giving you 10 seconds to consider. After 10, don't blame me for detonating the bombs! 10, 9...."

"1."

"No!!"

At that moment when Luo Hai counted down to 1, an extremely beautiful woman walked out of the town, her voluptuous figure decked in black leather, while her long hair was tied in a ponytail. Her eyes were filled with hatred.

"Fool!!"

Luo Hai watched the woman walk out and sneered quietly in his heart, before ordering, "Men! Go capture her! Remember to inject the weakening serum!"

2 soldiers walked over to Phantom, immediately injecting her with the serum, before dragging her towards Luo Hai.

She lifted her head proudly and stared daggers at Luo Hai, "I've already surrendered. Honor your words, release them!!"

Luo Hai stared at the extremely beautiful expert who was now a mere mortal, his eyes flashing with delight, "Hahaha! Fool!! Phantom, you're truly stupid. Aren't you clear about the way we do things? Let me tell you, even if you surrendered, those people will still die! They're to be sacrificed for His Majesty's evolution!!"

Phantom's eyes flashed with despair as she cursed, "Despicable!! Shameless!! You damn beast!!"

Luo Hai's gaze turned perverse as he caressed Phantom's jaw, laughing in an unbridled fashion, "Hahaha! Curse all you want, little bitch! Whatever you say!! I've long since wanted to have a

taste of you, Phantom. However, your position has been too high. This time, you're truly stupid, to betray and flee from the Capital. Otherwise, I wouldn't have had such a chance!! Now that you're stupidly giving yourself up, hahaha!! Seems like your brain has gone dumb from killing!!"

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Following some loud explosions, the small hill was blasted open, revealing a tunnel below.

A dozen soldiers quickly dug a huge hole, advancing deeper into the mountain. Soon, 200 refugees were driven out, their clothes tattered and their bodies emitting a stench. They looked at the soldiers with fear.

Luo Hai hooked Phantom's chin, his eyes flashed with excitement and lust, "Look! These are the people you were trying to protect. Phantom, you were a graceful swan high above the skies, never even looking me in the eye. My professions of love to you, you've ignored them. Do you know mad you made me feel? Do you know much I hated you?"

Phantom stared at Luo Hai, spitting out her saliva at his face, "Pei! You pervert!!"

Luo Hai reached out to wipe her saliva, while licking it in a disgusting fashion, his eyes mad with excitement, "Haha! HAha! You're still so proud, not even looking at me. Good! Good! In a while, I will f\*ck you right in front of these people you swore to protect, and let them see your slutty side!!"

After which, Luo Hai reached out and tore apart her clothes, revealing her fair skin.

There was finally fear in Phantom's eyes. When she thought her impending fate, being violated by Luo Hai, she was truly spooked, "No!! No!!"

When the other soldiers saw this, their breaths turned ragged

and their gazes fell upon her soft and fair skin, unable to tear their eyes away.

Before Phantom had betrayed the Capital, she was the trump card assassin of the palace. Her position was far above these elite soldiers, not only did she possess a strength none of them did, her looks and figure made her the goddess-like persona to many of them.

To think that this goddess would be stomped on right in front of them, their blood started to rush, and their breathing became panting.

On one side, the villagers were all filled with despair. Their only protection had been captured, and their fate was worse than death.

As everyone's eyes were on Luo Hai and Phantom, behind them, an indistinct figure appeared behind one soldier.

The figure had just brushed past the soldier, and a bloody gash appeared on his neck, as fresh blood splattered out and he slumped down noiselessly, dead.

When over 30 soldiers had fallen, some of the refugees caught sight of the corpse falling strangely. Their hearts were filled with fear and hope at the same time, "What was that?"

Yue Zhong's speed had already surpassed the sound barrier. Adding on to his Third Order Stealth ability, he could confuse people's perception, and most ordinary people could not see him.

However, these soldiers were all elite after all. When Yue Zhong killed his 40th soldier, one soldier finally discovered something wrong, and he roared, "Enemy!!!!"

He had just screamed out when his head was slashed open by Yue Zhong, and blood splattered upwards into the sky.

The cries of the soldier had attracted the attention of his comrades in an instant. They quickly channeled the power of their Type 3 Battle Suits and quickly searched for Yue Zhong's location

In response, Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps, darting through the human crowd, slicing off the heads of the soldiers one by one. No one could even withstand his strikes.

"Who are you?!"

Luo Hai's tossed Phantom to one side, while channeling his Type 4 Battle Suit's energy, and thrust out with his Battle Spear towards Yue Zhong.

The other 2 warriors beside Luo Hai also activated their Type 4 Battle Suit, their combat strength reaching the peak of the Type 4 realm, pouncing towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's body flickered, and 7 clones appeared, dashing towards 7 different directions. They attacked simultaneously, killing all 7 in an instant.

After the Shadow Clone technique was raised to the Third Order stage, Yue Zhong could split into 9 clones at one go. While the clones could not compare to Yue Zhong, they had a decent attacking might, the only weakness was that they would dissipate in a single strike.

Having dealt with the final 7 soldiers, Yue Zhong then dashed towards Luo Hai and the other 2.

# Chapter 879: Red Dragon Pill!

---

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed, his Third Order Gravity Manipulation activating. A strong gravitational force spread out and enveloped the approaching Type 4 expert.

When enveloped by the gravity force, the body of the Type 4 expert sunk slightly. Yue Zhong punched out with his fist covered in Devil Flames, and the moment the flames touched the head of the Type 4 expert, it consumed him. Amidst his miserable screams, his head was reduced to ashes.

"Expert!!"

Luo Hai watched his vice-commander killed in one second and he was filled with shock. His second-in-command was also a peak Type 4 expert, together with the enhancement of the Type 4 Battle Suit, he could even reach the initial stages of Type 5 realm. Yet, he was killed by Yue Zhong in a single strike.

The other Type 4 expert thrust out with a spear, aiming for Yue Zhong's heart like a coiling dragon.

Yue Zhong raised his blade in a profound movement, bringing it to meet the spear. His Dark Dou Qi billowed out and enabled the spear to be knocked away.

He then shot forward to the side of the Type 4 expert, smashing a single fist towards the head of the Type 4 expert.

The Type 4 expert watched the incoming fist covered with Devil Flame, his eyes flashing with despair.

"Stop!!"

Luo Hai roared out in anger, his Battle Spear and his body like one as he thrust towards Yue Zhong. If Yue Zhong insisted on killing the Type 4 expert, he would be penetrated himself as well.

Yue Zhong did not evade nor dodge, his eyes flashing with a

ferocious glint. He slapped the head of the Type 4 expert, and with a flash, the expert's head was incinerated into nothing.

With the death of that expert, Luo Hai was not devastated, instead, he rejoiced. With his spear, no matter how strong Yue Zhong was, he could not possibly dodge it.

A void appeared in mid-air, and a dozen bone spikes shot out suddenly, slamming into Luo Hai's spear.

White Bones' eyes shone with a ferocious glint as it jumped out from the void.

Ever since Yue Zhong evolved to a Type 5 Divine Warrior, his Summon Skeleton skill had also reached the Third Order. Currently, White Bones' structure was shimmering with a black, metallic luster, its bones dark and menacing. The aura it was emitting was incredibly oppressive and terrifying.

The moment it jumped out, White Bones dashed towards Luo Hai in a gust of wind, a number of sharp bone spikes sticking out of its body.

"Shit!"

Luo Hai's face fell, however, he was still an expert almost reaching the Type 5 Divine Warrior stage. In this critical moment, the Battle Spear transformed into a whirl as it slammed the bone spikes away.

White Bones' number of bone spikes was too many, some of them passing through the defense of Luo Hai. The bone spikes struck the Type 4 Battle Suit, causing a number of scars and slashes.

Luo Hai had just blocked the attack from White Bones when Yue Zhong suddenly appeared behind him, his right fist bringing the red-hot Devil Flames towards his head.

"Open!"

An imminent sense of doom overcame Luo Hai, and his eyes

flashed with fear when he suddenly roared out towards the sky.

At that instant, a shockwave spread out from Luo Hai, forcing White Bones and Yue Zhong back.

Luo Hai's bloodshot eyes fixed on Yue Zhong, as he pulled out a pill and tossed it into his mouth, "Beast!! You forced me!! Today, everyone will die here!!!"

Phantom, who was still weakened on the ground, screamed out, "Red Dragon Pill! That's the Red Dragon Pill!! Kill him quick!! Otherwise, he's going to turn into a monster!!"

White Bones waved its hands and sent out a number of bone spikes towards Luo Hai.

Yue Zhong's figure darted as he pounced towards Luo Hai from behind. He did not have the habit of waiting for his enemy to power up.

After Luo Hai swallowed the Red Dragon Pill, his face contorted as his eyes turned red. The veins bulged out from his face, and his entire body seemed to be covered in a red hue. His body grew to 3m at one go, the claws on his hands extending. He looked truly like a monstrous freak.

The Type 4 Battle Suit could adjust automatically to suit the user's size. After Luo Hai's body underwent changes, the armor also became enlarged.

After the transformation, Luo Hair's eyes flashed and with a tap of his foot, his entire figure disappeared from his location. He reappeared in front of White Bones, kicking out viciously at White Bones.

With a loud crack, White Bones' chest caved in and shattered, as its entire frame was sent soaring towards the distance. A large number of bones that were even tougher than the hulls of armor fell to the ground.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed as he made a swift assessment, "Strong!

His speed surpasses even a Mid-Grade Dino-General!!"

After sending White Bones flying with a single hit, Luo Hai let out a roar. His legs went taut and charged towards Yue Zhong, leaving 7 or 8 afterimages.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed. He activated the Third Order Gravity Manipulation, and a powerful gravitational force weighed down on Luo Hai.

Enveloped by the gravitational force, Luo Hai's body sunk slightly. He readjusted himself and continued towards Yue Zhong with intense speed.

Yue Zhong slapped out, activating his Devil Flame, as a powerful flame dragon shot towards Luo Hai.

Luo Hai's body twisted continuously, evading the attack of the Devil Flames. He suddenly appeared in front of Yue Zhong and kicked out viciously.

Yue Zhong raised his left shoulder to defend against the vicious attack from Luo Hai.

Luo Hai's monstrous strength immediately exploded out, sending Yue Zhong towards the distance like a cannonball.

"What terrifying strength!"

Yue Zhong was still in mid-air, and felt his entire left shoulder hurting as though it was about to fracture. If it had been before his evolution to the Type 5 stage, he would definitely have suffered broken bones.

After Yue Zhong was sent flying, Luo Hai's eyes gleamed with incomparable ferocity. He tapped his foot and disappeared from his location, appearing behind where Yue Zhong was about to land and slashed out at his chest.

Yue Zhong was still in mid-air and had no choice but to twist his body at an impossible angle to dodge the hit.

Luo Hai's claws managed to tear apart Yue Zhong's Type 5 Mutant Beast hide, piercing into his skin.

"I got you!! Go to hell!!"

Yue Zhong grabbed hold of Luo Hai's right claw, his eyes flashing viciously. Channeling the Devil Flame, a powerful blaze threatening to consume Luo Hai.

Luo Hai was likewise vicious as well. He saw the flames and with a decisive look, he slashed down at his own right arm, before kicking Yue Zhong viciously, sending him soaring once more.

Facing the continuous blows, Yue Zhong spat out a mouthful of blood, feeling like his organs were displaced.

On the other side, Luo Hai was still covered in the Devil Flames that could incinerate even a Type 5 Divine Warrior. It was spreading all over his body, causing a smoking smell.

Luo Hai roared out once more like a wild beast, a large Radiance of Life bursting out from him, forcefully dissipating the Devil Flames.

After relying on the Radiance of Life to extinguish the flames, Luo Hai's hair turned white, dropping from his head. His face started to be covered in wrinkles, looking as though he aged suddenly.

The Red Dragon Pill could turn Luo Hai into a killing machine, but at the same time, it depleted him of his vitality and life force. Since the Radiance of Life was an ability that invoked the innate life force, he had not much time left to live.

Luo Hai had barely managed to extinguish the Devil Flames when suddenly, 10 sharp bone spikes pierced him from behind. They began twisting mercilessly, tearing his body to shreds as his innards splattered everywhere.

A short distance away, White Bones came over, its bone spikes already retracted into its body.

Seeing Luo Hai dead, all the refugees of the town heaved a sigh of relief. They walked over to surround Phantom, staring at White Bones and Yue Zhong with fear.

"The Third Order Regeneration is simply overpowered! My body's regeneration is on par with a Type 3 Mutant Beast already!!"

As Yue Zhong landed, he surveyed his body and was pleasantly surprised to discover the deep gash across his chest already healing and closing up. Based on the healing speed, it was likely that he would be as good as new in 20 minutes. The only downside was that the faster the recovery, the hungrier he got.

Feeling his strength, Yue Zhong pondered, "Seems like my body is becoming stronger. If I can evolve to the peak of the Type 5 realm, maybe Mid-Grade Dino-Generals might not be my match anymore."

Yue Zhong's God and Devil Imprint was the best tool that helped him absorb pure Life Force, helping him to evolve further. Along the way, he had broken through the various bottlenecks of humans, reaching greater heights each time.

After checking himself, Yue Zhong came up to Phantom and asked, "Phantom, you're someone who escaped from the Capital right?"

Since he had reached the Type 5 realm, Yue Zhong's sense had become more acute. He had heard the exchange between Phantom and Luo Hai earlier, and it was the reason why he decided to save her.

She looked at him warily, "That's right! Who are you?"

Yue Zhong pulled out the antidote to the weakening serum, and replied indifferently, "I'm Yue Zhong, one of the leaders of the rebels. I want to know information on the Capital. This is the antidote. If you're willing to speak, it's yours."

# Chapter 880: Phantom Chase!

---

Phantom was silent for a while, "Fine! I'll tell you!"

Yue Zhong tossed out the serum, handing it to her.

She took a sniff, ascertaining the contents before downing it. She then lifted her head and asked, "What would you like to know?"

Yue Zhong swept a glance across the refugees, before saying, "Everything! I want to know all that you know about the Capital!"

Phantom sighed, as she dived into the story, "The King has already been possessed by his own demons during his cultivation..."

When the King Wei Ming Qing had gathered the millions of refugees and killed them, using their blood to turn into the blood honey, it had rocked the entire capital.

Some of the wiser, as well as more ethical officials, spoke up to reprimand his actions. In the end, they were sentenced to be sacrificed to the Blood-sucking Bees as well, while their offsprings were banished to be slaves, handed out to Wei Ming Qing's subordinates.

When they saw that, no one else dared to question him anymore. Instead, they all took up an obedient pose, while behind the scenes, they began to act against him.

After all, within the millions of refugees, many of the upper-class clans had representatives within them. They could gain many resources from taking advantage of them.

With a million refugees killed, many upper-class clans lost their benefits. At the same time, Wei Ming Qing's depraved actions lost him many supporters. Everyone was in fear, afraid that they would be next on his chopping board.

Not too long ago, many of the upper clans were still allowed to

leave the Capital. At that time, many of them left the place with various excuses just to get out of this bloodstained city.

Wei Ming Qing discovered that many had fled and became furious. He passed the order to close the city gates, other than those from the military under his orders, no one could get out.

After the order was given, the Capital was sealed. The residents had no way of leaving freely. However, it caused more chaos within, and rumors started to float about. They were mostly about Wei Ming Qing intending to slaughter everyone in the city, helping him to breakthrough to the Type 6 realm.

When those rumors surfaced, the investigative officers and army had to step forward and apprehend those responsible for spreading. They were thrown and fed to the Blood-sucking Bees. Every day, there would be more deaths, more panic, and fear.

Some of the clans tried to resist Wei Ming Qing's tyranny, however, the moment they acted, the overwhelming counterattack from Wei Ming Qing's forces would crush them, preventing any waves.

The strongest military force in the Capital was the Capital guards, and they were under Wei Ming Qing's control. It was his strongest move and tool to slaughter millions of refugees.

At the same time, the city gates were sealed shut, bringing despair to everyone within, as they slowly awaited for their own deaths.

The firepower of the city gates was truly overwhelming, with powerful scanning abilities as well. With those systems in place, even a Type 6 Divine Warrior would not be able to escape undetected.

Yue Zhong asked curiously, "Then how did you come out?"

Phantom replied slowly, "I borrowed the excuse of joining a mission. The moment I left the Capital, I did not go back since."

Yue Zhong frowned when he heard that. Based on Phantom's words, there was no chance to enter the Capital.

He then thought, "Unless I disguise myself as a refugee?"

Blending into the refugees to enter the Capital was one of Yue Zhong's plans. However, the plan was unreliable at best. Should anyone discover his identity, his fate would be sealed.

Phantom looked at him and asked, "You want to go in?"

"That's right!"

Phantom looked at him and said, "The general of the Capital guards is called Wei Shou. He's extremely loyal to the King. However, there are still the north, south, east and west troops, each of them led by the scions of the upper clans. Their authority is not that small either. It's just that ever since Wei Ming Qing passed the order to seal the gates, there had been some divide between them. There's bound to be some infighting in time."

Yue Zhong shook his head, "Time? That's what I lack the most right now."

After reaching the Type 5 stage, Yue Zhong could feel that he was caught in a giant whirlpool. If he was not careful, the situation would cause him to fall as well.

Right at this time, 6 middle-aged men and women stepped out from the midst of the refugees, asking, "Phantom, what's our next move?"

Phantom frowned and began to ponder. She was an expert assassin, having killed even a Type 5 expert before. However, she was used to operating alone and had no experience in leading groups. That was why she was at a loss.

As Yue Zhong was wrapped in his thoughts, the watch-like communication device on his right wrist vibrated. He opened it up, and the display revealed Han Qiong's face.

She spoke, "Leader, our soldiers have already scouted Evergreen City, Greatwood City, and Yong City. Their troops are non-existent. I suggest that we deploy our troops to take down these 3 cities and bring them under us. It can train our troops to get used to battles."

Yue Zhong nodded in appreciation, "Does our current manpower support the proposed battle?"

Han Qiong was a rare subordinate who could plan and execute. Since Yue Zhong had been creating miracles along the way, many of his subordinates had begun to rely on his orders. Once he left, they would be slightly uncomfortable and resort to maintaining things.

Yet, Han Qiong dared to propose and take risks, even without Yue Zhong around, she possessed an advancing attitude and was a talent hard to come by.

Han Qiong replied, "Yes, there're a hundred Xue Luo guards, the original city guards as well as the trained troops recruited from the refugees to maintain guard in Blood Red City. Evergreen City is weak, as long as 300 Xue Luo guards and 500 soldiers and 5 Reapers were to be deployed, it would definitely fall into our hands. As for Greatwood City and Yong City, I will gather troops and take them down one by one. The 3 cities have decent resources and light industrial capabilities. If we can gain them, it would be beneficial to us."

Yue Zhong nodded in satisfaction, "Alright, proceed!"

In reality, Yue Zhong had 10,000 Xue Luo elites. If he was in Blood Red City, he would have swept the surrounding cities, bringing them under his control. However, due to the sense of unease he felt, he had come to the Capital. At the very least, he had to obtain the human technology from the Capital.

Han Qiong replied confidently, "Yes!"

The environment can shape a person. Having lived the military life since arriving at this world, Han Qiong had become more outstanding as a military person.

Phantom looked at Yue Zhong and Han Qiong in a discussion and hesitated for a while. When they were done, she came up to him and said, "You're really just one of the leaders of the rebel troops in the northwest area?"

Yue Zhong glanced at her and replied, "That's right!"

She then asked carefully, "Is your faction very strong?"

He laughed gently, "8 of the Xue Luo Forts are already in my hands. Blood Red City is also my territory now. Evergreen City, Greatwood City, and Yong City will become my areas soon. There are no factions in the northwest that can match up to me."

Phantom sighed in relief, "Yue Zhong, I would like to bring my people to depend on your faction, is that alright?"

She was a powerful expert, but she lacked commanding qualities. Her head would hurt when she thought about the food and clothes for these people. If they could join a larger faction, her friends and kin could live better lives.

Yue Zhong replied, "Can! I need your help though, come with me to infiltrate the Capital."

Phantom's power was strong and was familiar with the Capital. If he could enlist her help, Yue Zhong's infiltration would be easier by a huge margin.

Phantom's face fell as she stammered, "No! The defense is too strong in the Capital. Even refugees would be scanned many times to confirm their identities. It's impossible! I want to send my people towards the northwest."

"You don't have to worry about your people." Yue Zhong waved his hands and 2 Reapers, 4 large transport vehicles and 2 large trucks appeared in front of everybody.

Seeing the sudden appearance of this armored unit, all the villagers were shocked.

Phantom stared and asked out of curiosity, "How did you do that?!"

Phantom had seen plenty of high-tech stuff in the Capital, but she had not seen such an amazing ability before.

Yue Zhong barked at the 2 Reapers, "No. 1, No. 2, bow!"

The eyes of the 2 Reapers flashed, as they bowed.

Yue Zhong turned to look at Phantom, "They will be in charge of escorting your townsmen, is this fine now? In terms of terrain battle and protection, their strength is a lot better than yours!"

Phantom was strong, but her strength was in assassination. In a frontal combat, she was not Yue Zhong's match, nor a Reaper's.

Yue Zhong made a motion, and the 2 automatic trucks opened up, revealing a spacious living quarters. "They will be more comfortable in the vehicles than walking. I've also prepared some food for them. As long as you agree, they can reach Blood Red City in comfort and safety."

Phantom gritted her teeth, "What if I don't agree?"

Yue Zhong stared at Phantom and his gaze swept across the various refugees, his voice turning incredibly cold, "It's incredibly important to me that I enter the Capital."

Phantom's heart turned cold. She could tell Yue Zhong was a ruthless character to get to where he was. If she did not oblige, the villagers would become a bargaining chip for him.

Thus, she replied with gritted teeth, "Fine! I promise to go to the Capital with you. You must ensure their safety!!"

Yue Zhong nodded, "Of course!"

Soon after, the fleet moved off, escorted by the 2 Reapers.

The fleet was controlled by Bai Yi, even if they met enemies they could not handle, Bai Yi could control them to evade. It was more efficient than relying on Phantom herself.

"Let's go!"

Eyeing the leaving fleet, Phantom then followed closely behind Yue Zhong.

Back at Blood Red City, Han Qiong had gained Yue Zhong's approval, thus she swiftly sent out Shao Yun to attack Evergreen City. At the same time, she deployed 3,000 Xue Luo guards and 1,500 ordinary soldiers towards Greatwood City.

Shao Yun and his troops rode enhanced motorcycles, accompanied by 4 235mm cannons launcher, 10 Reapers, as they appeared in Evergreen City.

Shao Yun sat in front, his eyes filled with delight as he observed his troops, "Finally! I have become a commander and can also command a troop! This feels good!!! My decision to follow Yue Zhong was right! Had I stayed at Shao Village, I might have become food for Mutant Beasts already."

One vice-commander came up to Shao Yun and asked, "Commander, we've already reached Evergreen City. What's our next move?"

Shao Yun was slightly flustered as he ordered, "First, use the cannons to blast down the city walls. After that, send the 1st Battalion in!"

Shao Yun was not of military background nor did he have any prior experience. Such an order was given after a long thought process on how best to convey his orders clearly.

"Yes!"

With that, the 4 235mm cannons fired out at the city walls.  
Hong!! Hong! Hong!

Under Bai Yi's precise aim, the 4 235mm cannons punched holes into the city wall. Following the loud rumble of destruction, there were 4 large holes.

The main purpose of each city wall was to prevent Mutant Hordes from coming, instead of other humans. Other than the 20 Xue Luo forts, the Capital was implemented energy shield technology of the various city walls.

"Charge!!

After the 4 rounds, the cannon launchers stopped firing, and the troops containing a mix of Xue Luo guards and ordinary soldiers charged forwards under the protection of 5 Reapers.

# Chapter 881: Strange Movements from the Tyrannosaurus Kingdom!

---

"We surrender!! Stop attacking!! We surrender!!"

The 1st Battalion had just rushed into the broken wall when they discovered a person raising the white flag.

Behind the envoy, the various commanders and soldiers of Evergreen City stared in fear at the soldiers who had charged in.

The envoy approached the commander of the 1st Battalion and explained, "There's no need to fight! The City Lord has already fled, we're all surrendering!!"

Evergreen City's forces were thus taken down easily like this. Although there was recruitment over the years, many of their morale was low, and their equipment subpar. Thus, they had no way to muster any fighting will.

When the City Lord had discovered Shao Yun's Reapers as well as the other energy-based weapons, he immediately packed up all his assets and brought a hundred members of his guard to flee with him.

Without a leader, the rest of the people had no desire to swear loyalty to Wei Ming Qing, thus, they submitted.

Shao Yun cursed upon hearing this, "Fled! Damn bastard, I was still looking forward to a good fight!"

However, he still brought his troops in to began taking over.

On the other side, Han Qiong led 4,500 soldiers as they neared Greatwood City.

Greatwood City's defenses put up more of a resistance when compared to Evergreen. However, under the assault of the 20 heavy cannon launchers and 20 Reapers, they were easily crushed.

After they defeated the resistance from Greatwood, Han Qiong swiftly took over and began delegating jobs.

Roughly 5,000 km away from the 20 Forts, it was the location of the Tyrannosaurus Kingdom, the lifelong enemy of Cloud Region.

The Dino-warriors within this Kingdom followed the evolution line of the Tyrannosaurus, giving them fearsome close combat abilities.

A single weak Tyranno-warrior had a half-step Type 4 strength, when enraged, they could kill even a Mid-Grade Dino-General from the Stegosaurus Kingdom.

At the same time, the experts in the Tyrannosaurus Kingdom were rampant. There were already 7 experts with the Type 6 Strength, whereas the Stegosaurus Kingdom only had one.

Yet, while the Tyranno-warriors dominated in power, they had a weakness, which was their numbers were low. In the entire kingdom, there were at most 300,000 citizens. The other was that they loved slaughter, and seldom captured enemies. Thus far, the total number of slaves was at most about 600,000. Compared to the hundreds of thousands of soldiers from the Stegosaurus Kingdom, they were very much weaker.

Because their numbers were low, each time they attacked the 20 Forts, they had no choice but to retreat the moment their losses hit a certain threshold. In order to take down all 20 Forts, it would take their entire kingdom, but even so, they had no sure victory.

The converse was similar for the humans of Cloud Region, should they wander too far, they would be killed by the elites of the Tyrannosaurus Kingdom.

The Reapers had truly astonishing combat power, but in a one-on-one, a Type 6 Tyrannosaurus Dino-warrior would destroy a Reaper in 5 seconds.

At the same time, the night was not as favorable to humans. Even

with the multi-purpose helmets, human warriors could not compare to what they could do in the day.

Originally, there were little humans in the Tyrannosaurus Kingdom, be it in their vast expanse of forests or plains. Currently, there were the Stegosaurus Dino-warriors with bone plates all over their bodies, the Pterosaur Dino-warriors with wings, the large Diplodocus Dino-warriors, the small but speedy Velociraptor Dino-warriors and various Dino-warriors all gathered at the Tyrannosaurus Kingdom.

Other than them, there were also the various branches and vassal races. Among them, there were even some Winged Race people.

Shailene and her Winged Race was not the only Winged people around. On this huge planet that was the Third World, there were other Winged Race people as well.

There were many storage warehouses that were being built, and huge amounts of food, dried fruits, dried vegetables and other resources were being transported in.

The entire Tyrannosaurus Kingdom was turned into a huge army camp. Every day, there would be a large number of dino-warriors and their vassals rushing over, adding on to the entire force.

Inside the center of the Kingdom, there was a huge palace, and a throne sat in the middle of the room. The throne was inserted with a single Type 6 Nucleus, 10 Type 5 Nuclei, and countless runes were engraved on it.

On the 2 sides of the throne, there were many Type 6 Divine Warrior-level High-Grade Dino-Generals. The total number reaching over a hundred. Each one of them was their own Kings and lords of their factions or countries.

However, they were sitting quietly right now, not daring to make any noise. This was because seated on the throne right now was the ruler of the Third World, who had been behind the scenes all

this while, the Tyrannosaurus Emperor, a peak Type 7 Divine Warrior.

Unless more than  $\frac{2}{3}$  of the High-Grade Dino-Generals worked together to attack the Emperor, any one of them would easily die in a single strike.

Other than the immense power, this Tyrannosaurus Emperor was one out of three surviving ancestors from the previous Great War, a person held in high regard.

A female Dino-warrior with a voluptuous body and decent looks stepped forward, her body covered in green scales. She had a huge tail, and her claws were sharp. She reported, "Your Majesty, we are currently at 30% of our intended army size, it would take another 6 months for the rest of the forces to arrive."

The movement of the army was a huge undertaking. Even if the speed of the Dino-Warriors were faster than humans, on this huge planet, it was not a simple thing to do.

It was an impressive matter for the current force that had gathered here with haste, reaching 30% of their total force.

From the shadow of the seat, an imposing voice rang out, "Ku Bao Xi, based on the past few times that we have clashed with the 20 Forts, do you think our current force is enough to contend against them?"

The female Tyranno-warrior had a glint in her eyes as she gave her suggestion, "Your Majesty, based on our current force, it is enough to storm the 20 Forts. However, we will have to pay a heavy price. We could choose to wait for the rest of our army while sending the vassal forces first to wear down their strength. If all our forces are gathered, not only would it be easy to destroy the 20 Forts, we can take down the Capital in one shot, and gain the entire Cloud Region, eliminating the last stand for the humans."

Eradicating the last stand of the humans had always been the

wish of the Tyrannosaurus Kingdom. They had once broken through the 1st Fort, however, in that battle, one Tyrannosaurus King had been bombed to death with an energy bomb buried, his body blown up to bits.

In the hundreds of years, this sort of battles had been going on constantly, and the Tyrannosaurus Kingdom had not managed to wipe out the humans in the Cloud Region.

The cold voice filled with killing intent sounded out once more, "No! Convey my orders, we must take down the 20 Forts, at all cost, within the shortest possible amount of time, and I want everyone in there killed! If there's anyone with a gold imprint on him, capture him and bring him to me!! If he's alive, I want to see him. If he's dead, I want his corpse. Whoever dares to hide him from me, I will eradicate their entire clan, is that clear?"

"Yes!!"

All the High-Grade Dino-Generals present felt a chill as they replied.

After the threat, came the incentive, "Whoever brings the person with the gold imprint to me intact, I will gift them with an entire kingdom. Capturing him alive, I would do my best to push the person to the Type 7 realm."

When the High-Grade Dino-Generals heard that, their eyes lit up and their hearts were filled with excitement, "We're willing to die for Your Majesty!!"

A Type 7 Divine Warrior was at the peak of power in this Third World. Other than the 3 ancestors, no one else had reached the Type 7 Divine Warrior.

It got harder to breakthrough each new realm the higher one went. A Type 3 Tyranno-Warrior might be able to defeat a Type 4 Stego-Warrior. However, it was hard for a Type 4 Tyranno-Warrior to defeat a Type 5 Stego-Warrior. A Type 5 Tyranno-

Warrior would simply be killed in a second by a Type 6 Stego-Warrior.

Other than the huge divides in realm, a Type 7 Divine Warrior was likely to live over a thousand years.

The Dino-Warriors were strong in combat, but their vitality was lacking. An ordinary Dino-Warrior could live for at most 80 years. The Low-Grade Dino-Generals could live up to 150 years or so, while High-Grade Dino-Generals would live up to 300. The Type 7 Dino-Emperor level beings were able to live till 1500.

After the previous Great War, the number of experts was reduced drastically. Other than the 3 Type 7 Dino-Emperors, everyone else had perished. To think that they would be able to become a Type 7 existence, many of the High-Grade Dino-Generals became excited and were filled with a strong motivation. They were raring to go and destroy the 20 Forts and kill the humans within, capturing the person with the gold imprint and presenting him to the Tyrannosaurus Emperor.

Ku Bao Xi was feeling elated, but at the same time, there was a sense of doubt, "Gold imprint, is there a secret to it? Why is His Majesty insisting to capture such a person?"

Under the orders of the Tyrannosaurus Emperor, the entire Tyrannosaur Kingdom moved out in droves, marching towards the direction of the 20 Forts.

# Chapter 882: Sneaking into the Capital!

---

Wei Ming Qing was an emperor of Cloud Region, sitting high on his throne with absolute authority. Many city lords were his trusted aides who carried out his orders as well. Although sending many refugees to him would cause their deaths, for their own lives and future, they ignored the pleas of the common people.

Every 2 or 3 days, there would be batches of refugees entering the Capital with wide-eyes, their clothes tattered.

On this day, another long line of refugees that stretched for miles appeared outside the Capital.

Phantom had the ability to cross spaces in a flash, while Yue Zhong had the Third Order Stealth. They quickly and noiselessly mixed in with the refugees.

In order to facilitate the processing of these refugees, the city guards were not particularly tight on security, thus, they did not notice 2 more in the midst.

When they came to the city entrance and saw the numerous holes of guns, many refugees began to tremble, their eyes filled with fear.

The might of the Capital's city walls were enough to cause despair in most ordinary people.

Any refugees entering the city would be checked and processed, thus, each batch was limited to a thousand people.

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong eyed the refugees entering the city and tugged slightly at Phantom's arms.

Phantom's body trembled slightly, eyeing the Capital with fear in her eyes. She gritted her teeth and walked forward.

Since a thousand people were entering each time, the guards at

the city gates had no time to assess and try to recognize anyone out of the ordinary.

As Yue Zhong and Phantom entered the city gate, they came to a wide field.

There were small radars and countless other sensors littered all around the field.

"Take out your identity cards within 10 seconds! Otherwise, the consequences will be dire!"

The moment they entered the area, a mechanical voice resounded.

One by one, the refugees took out their cards and held them in their hands.

Yue Zhong and Phantom also took out their own cards. However, Phantom was grabbing on to hers tightly, her back filled with perspiration. If there was an issue with her scan, only death awaited.

One refugee lost his cool suddenly, shouting, "My card!! My card disappeared!! Where's my card?!"

"O!"

At that time, the countdown disappeared, and a flash shout from the sensors and scanners, onto the various name cards.

When the beams scanned across those that did not have any cards, the mechanical voice sounded out, "Those with no cards, will be treated the same as spies. Direct elimination!"

2 laser beams shot out from a laser weapon at one side, blasting the head of the refugee who had screamed out just now, turning him into a headless corpse.

"No!! No!!! Give me a card!! Give me a card!!" Another one who had lost his card was pale, as he screamed out and pounced on the nearby people.

A laser beam also fired at that refugee, turning him into countless meat parts, as fresh blood splattered everywhere.

Many of them had lost their own cards along the journey. As the lasers swept out, those who were lacking their name cards were instantly obliterated.

Phantom watched those pitiful refugees being killed with a pale expression, her body trembling.

The field was installed with multiple laser lights, radar, poison mist, and even poisonous liquid to deal with enemies. It even had a few energy bombs.

If they were trapped here, the energy bombs buried here could explode out and blast a Type 6 Divine Warrior to smithereens. Phantom was barely touching the Type 5 realm, and her ability was more for assassination. If any of the defense mechanisms were to be engaged, she would die instantly.

A number of refugees were turned into corpses under the attack of the laser beams.

When the rest of the refugees saw this, they began to scatter in fear like startled birds.

A number of lights continued to scan everyone else, each time the lights swept past Phantom, she would tremble and grab Yue Zhong's hand tightly.

"The scan is over! There's nothing out of the ordinary!"

Following the mechanical voice, the sealed alloy gates opened up, and a number of armed military soldiers rushed in.

The leading commander came in and barked, "A bunch of trash, f\*cking get out here. Line up orderly, otherwise, this senior is going to execute all of you."

Under his barking orders, the refugees began to snake out in a long line, maintaining order. No one dared to step out or cut the

line.

Seeing this, Phantom heaved a sigh of relief, having gone through this stage, it felt better.

Outside the field, there was a large transport vehicle waiting. The 1,000-odd refugees were herded up the vehicle like sheep. Yue Zhong and Phantom also entered the vehicle.

Peng!

After the doors were closed, the truck began to roll towards the inner part of the city.

Inside the truck, there was a sour smell, all the refugees were soaked in sweat due to the long journey. Without the chance to clean themselves, they were naturally smelly.

One middle-aged man, whose clothes were tattered, his face sallow and his frame skeletal spoke up suddenly, "Where will be sent to?"

Another middle-aged man who looked like a butcher spoke up, "This is the Capital. Since we've been sent here, we're likely being sent to the surrounding refugee camps. Maybe there is an outbreak of sickness, and they are lacking workers. That's why they brought us here?"

The hygiene and sanitary conditions of the refugees and poor were bad. There would be outbreaks of diseases everywhere once in a while. At those times, there would be refugees shipped in from other areas.

Sitting at a corner, another slightly fearful middle-aged man spoke up with a pale expression, "We're all going to die!! We're all going to die!! I know this!! We're all going to die."

The butcher-like male roared out, "Damn it, if you want to die, just die! Saying such inauspicious things, do you want a beating?!!

The cowardly middle-aged man shut up, his body trembling as

his eyes darted about.

Within the vehicle, the rest of the refugees felt a sense of unease. Many of them curled up, not willing to speak. Some began to sob quietly, while others who were the family members of those killed in the field, became upset when they remembered the scene.

The burly man suddenly greeted Yue Zhong, "Hey brother, how do I address you? My name is Wu Heng."

Within that tense and gloomy atmosphere, only Yue Zhong was still calm, his arms around Phantom. This had attracted Wu Heng's attention.

Yue Zhong replied curtly, "Yue Zhong."

Wu Heng continued to ask, "Yue Zhong, what do you think? Where will they send us to?"

Yue Zhong responded in an indifferent manner, "We'll know when we get there."

Wu Heng felt as though he struck a nail, his eyes flashing with fury. He wanted to act out, but thinking about the fierce Capital guards, he dared not make any move. Suppressing his anger, he put on a fake smile before turning to speak to others.

The huge truck traveled for an indeterminate time before it suddenly stopped. The doors opened, and the Capital guards were standing outside. One commander barked out, "Scram the hell out!"

Faced with that angry shout, everyone quickly scrambled out.

Yue Zhong immediately surveyed his surroundings the moment he stepped out.

By now, they were within a huge camp or jail, as there were tall walls of about 20 m surrounding the entire place. On top of the walls, there were electric fences, and the entire place was rigged with surveillance equipment and motion sensors.

The only way out was a huge, thick wall, installed with automatic weapons.

The soldiers were all dressed in anti-bullet vests, wielding ray guns, and equipped with multi-purpose helmets. They patrolled while shooting cold looks at the survivors.

Inside the huge camp, there were many large white domes, they were likely where the refugees were sent to stay.

One commander pointed to one of the domes and said, "All you trash better listen up. From today onwards, this is where you will be staying. You are not allowed out. No one is to kill anyone or give us trouble, otherwise, we'll smash your head in!! Damaging any equipment will also warrant death!!"

After that, they were herded into the white dome.

Yue Zhong discovered that the interior of the dome was packed with people. He estimated that there were about 500 of them inside the place. At the same time, the men, women, old and young were all herded together with no clear separation.

At one corner, a few men were gathered together. 8 pairs of couples were engaging in lewd acts, their intense and passionate moans resounding throughout the place, but no one bothered about them.

After he had taken in the environment, he grabbed Phantom's hand and went towards the dozens of men gathered together.

# Chapter 883: Choice!

---

When Yue Zhong came up to them, he barked out, "Scram!"

"What the f\*ck, he just told us to scram!"

"Fool! Are you looking to die?"

"..."

The men looked at Yue Zhong as though he was a clown.

One blond-hair, blue-eyed man stood up, shooting Yue Zhong a glance, before spitting a glob of saliva on the floor. He pointed to it and declared coldly, "Lick it up, otherwise, I'll break your legs. Here, as long as no one dies, the guards won't give a f\*ck."

"Lick it clean!!"

"..."

They surrounded him, their eyes filled with excitement. In this sealed up dome, toying with women and humiliating other men were their pastimes.

The majority of the people sat coolly and ignored whatever was going on. They were filled with dread towards their own future, and could not care about others.

"Fool!"

Yue Zhong shot forwards, sending a fist towards the face of the blond man. He broke the poor bloke's nose, before grabbing him and tossing him to one wall.

"Go! Attack!!"

The rest roared out in anger and charged at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong flitted right into their midst, employing his various close combat skills. With his physique, he took them out easily and temporarily disabled their fighting capabilities.

Seeing how ruthless he was, the couples engaged in their romp

quickly squealed and darted to one side.

Yue Zhong then pulled Phantom to the corner, shooting daggers towards his left and right. He activated a mild form of Art of Fear and sent it out, filling the nearby refugees with dread. No one dared approach, and the entire space was left private for Yue Zhong and Phantom.

He then tugged her as they sat down, before he spoke softly, "From this camp, are you able to get me to the capital?"

The Capital was split into the outer city and inner city. The outer city had tall and thick walls, with a powerful defense. The inner city was a further layer within, only allowing those higher clans and the King himself to reside.

Phantom buried her head in Yue Zhong's chest as she replied, "There're surveillance and listening devices here!"

Yue Zhong bent down towards her fair neck and spoke, "No need to worry, I've already controlled the electronics here."

Phantom felt a slight tingling, and her face flushed red, giving her an increased allure, "Ok! As long as we can get out from this camp, I can bring you to the inner city. However, the experts within the inner city are aplenty, and the defense is tight. Furthermore, security is a lot heavier, and we might not be able to sneak it as easily."

Yue Zhong replied, "No problem! Let me handle the rest."

As they were discussing the details, the doors of the dome suddenly slammed wide open. Soldiers stepped in, as a commander barked out, "All you trash, get the hell out here!!"

With such a shout, those refugees who had just entered had no choice but to step out from the building.

The refugees walked out and were led to a large enclosed area.

Yue Zhong surveyed his surroundings, before suddenly frowning.

He discovered that there were a number of mech fighters, each about 8m-tall, made out of alloy and installed with various electromagnetic cannons.

Inside Cloud Region, there were 2 types of mech fighters. One was the Reaper, made with a large amount of resources and advanced technology. The other was the ordinary mech fighters, similar to the RH2 from the Second World.

Due to the requirements of the Reapers, many camps chose to manufacture the ordinary Mech Fighters. However, they were more common in the 20 Forts as well as the Capital, compared to other places.

When the refugees were herded towards the enclosed area, they saw the surrounding mech fighters and felt a growing sense of unease.

As for the soldiers, they hurried out of the place and closed the door shut.

"No one is to leave the field, anyone who does so will be executed on the spot!!"

A bright announcement rang out within the area. When they heard this, the refugees did not dare move. After all, every one of those soldiers was cold-hearted killers.

"Damn it, don't tell me?"

Yue Zhong stood there and when he looked once more at the huge crowd of people, he felt his scalp go numb.

At almost the next instant, his premonition came true, as a loud buzzing sound drew closer to them.

"Blood-sucking Bees!! F\*cking beasts!! What should I do?!" Yue Zhong saw the clouds of bees and his heart plunged.

To Yue Zhong, a Type 5 Divine Warrior, these bees were of no threat. He could easily make use of any of his techniques to

prevent them from nearing.

However, these tens of thousands of refugees would fall prey to them, becoming corpses.

Although Yue Zhong was vicious and harsh in his methods, to imagine the tens of thousands of people dying in front of him, even someone with a cold heart like him would falter. They were fellow humans after all, not some livestock.

"Blood-sucking Bees!! Those are Blood-sucking Bees! Quick escape!!"

"We're over!! Those are Blood-sucking Bees!!"

"..."

Amidst the tens of thousands of people, some of them with good vision had already caught sight of the cloud of bugs. Their countenance was pale, as they tried to flee.

Hearing the term 'Blood-sucking Bees', everyone was thrown into a panic, as they scattered around, stampeding over one another.

"What do I do? Do I save them?"

The thoughts continued to swirl around his head, his expression alternating between green and white. With his ability, if he gave it his all, he could save many of them. However, it would reveal his position in the Capital, and he would be forced to reveal some trump cards.

As he was hesitating, he suddenly caught sight of a small boy being pushed to the ground. Behind him, 7 or 8 people were rushing forward in a frenzy, stampeding towards the boy without concern for his safety.

With a flash, Yue Zhong quickly grabbed the small boy into his arms.

The boy opened his eyes wide, thanking Yue Zhong profusely, "Thank you, Uncle!!"

Yue Zhong saw the innocent and untainted look of the small boy, and his heart was softened. He gave up on his initial plan, "Forget it! If I don't have the ability then that's too bad. Now that I have the strength, I will save them!!"

Phantom came to Yue Zhong and said, "The bees are here!! Yue Zhong, let's escape quick!!"

Yue Zhong replied, "No! Our objective has changed. I want to control this jail! And save these people as much as possible!"

Phantom had a look of disbelief, "Are you crazy?!"

Even though Yue Zhong was a Type 5 Divine Warrior, facing a swarm of Blood-Seeking Bees, he would be hard-pressed to protect himself. In order to wipe out the whole swarm, it would not be enough with him alone.

Furthermore, the defenses of the camp were extremely tight. The army was not something an ordinary Type 5 Divine Warrior could handle.

The most important thing was that Phantom did not expect Yue Zhong to be someone who would throw away his own life for a bunch of strangers.

"I'm not crazy! I just still have some humanity in me left!"

Yue Zhong sighed, and with a flip of his hand, the handheld computer appeared in his hands. He opened it and commanded, "Control all the computers inside this facility."

Bai Yi's eyes flashed with data, "It would take another 3 minutes for all the equipment to be under my control."

Yue Zhong pointed towards those 40 mech fighters and asked, "What about those robots?"

Bai Yi replied, "5 seconds!"

Yue Zhong ordered swiftly, "Control them immediately!! Order them to break into one of the domes, and get the refugees in!"

"Understood!" Bai Yi's eyes immediately flashed with data.

After 5 seconds, the eyes of the mech fighters all lit up, as they swiftly charged towards the domes and punched them wide open.

Seeing the holes, the refugees went crazy and charged towards them, fighting among themselves to get ahead.

"What's happening?! What's going on?! How come the mechs are acting on their own?! Is there something wrong with the central computer?!"

Inside the prison command center, the prison head Wei Tian watched the scene unfold and roared out in shock and fury.

The 40 mech fighters were directly under the control of the central computer, on auto-pilot. With such strange movements, it was obvious that the central computer was the problem.

One officer came up to Wei Tian and reported, "Prison Head! The technician has arrived. They discovered a Super A.I. breaking into our central computer. The strange movements of the mech fighters are due to the Super A.I.!!"

# Chapter 884: The 4 Great Clans!

---

Wei Tian's face fell as he gave an order, "Immediately cut the power supply to all the automatic units!! Shut down the central computer!! Go cut the supply to the Reapers as well!!"

"Understood!" The soldier quickly left when he received that order.

Although there was no Super A.I. like Bai Yi within Cloud Region, their ancestors had come across experts who had similar abilities, thus, they knew ways to counter it.

Wei Tian and the rest had never encountered a Super A.I. before, however, now that they have met one, they did not lose their calm.

Wei Tian's eyes flashed with a cold look as he pointed at the large domes, "Convey my orders, go destroy those storehouses!!"

A number of electromagnetic beams fired onto the domes, causing large holes.

Yue Zhong saw the electromagnetic beams and cursed out loud, "Beasts!!"

In the skies, the swarm of Blood-sucking Bees swooped down, making their way for the people below.

"Save me!! Save me!!"

One man ran frantically, as the cloud of bees enveloped him. He was soon covered in a layer of black, moving bees, as he screamed out in terror.

Many other refugees were also enveloped in the multiple swarms of bees, as they screamed out and struggled on the ground.

After mere seconds, they stopped thrashing, while the bees flew off, leaving behind emaciated and dried up corpses.

The black cloud was like a plague, everywhere they went, there would be screams and deaths.

Yue Zhong stood with the rest of the refugees, pretending to be helpless as well. He might be a Type 5 Divine Warrior, but faced with a million bees, he could only try to preserve himself.

"Save me!! Ah!!!"

One woman in tattered clothes ran towards Yue Zhong. She had run just a few steps when the cloud of bees swarmed over her, sending her to the ground. She struggled for a while before her twitching stopped.

"F\*ck!! Wei Ming Qing, wardens, you bastards!!"

Yue Zhong looked at the corpse of the woman who had fallen barely 20m away from me. His fury had reached a peak.

When Yue Zhong heard that over millions of people had been sacrificed by Wei Ming Qing to be sources of nutrients for the Blood Honey just for his own personal benefit, he had been furious. However, right now, he was witnessing these helpless refugees die in front of him. This hell-like scene was truly crossing his line.

Yue Zhong did not claim to be a saint, he had killed over thousands of captives in his rage before. However, those were enemies. Such a merciless sacrifice of countless refugees was worse than a beast.

"Come with me!!"

Yue Zhong looked at the chaos and grabbed the small boy beside him. He wrapped himself in Devil Flames, while keeping the boy safe, and ran towards the center of the concentration camp.

Phantom continued to follow beside Yue Zhong.

A large number of bees shot towards Yue Zhong, however, they were burnt by his immolation, turning into crisp ashes that fell beside him.

The boy whose eyes were exceptionally clear looked at Yue

Zhong, his eyes flashing with admiration and respect. It was the first time he saw someone so god-like.

Wei Tian was currently inside a sentry tower. He saw Yue Zhong rushing towards them and ordered loudly, "That guy in flames!! He's a Divine Warrior! At least Type 3!! Attack him!! Kill him!!"

The shutdown of the central computer meant that most of the defenses in the prison were not working. Automatic weapons, sensors, radars, targeting systems were all obsolete. The soldiers could only rely on their naked eyes.

Even so, most of the 400 human soldiers in the prison were not affected. With their Type 3 Battle Suits, ray guns, and even Electromagnetic Cannons at their posts, they began firing at Yue Zhong and Phantom.

A number of lasers and electromagnetic beams shot at Yue Zhong.

Having lost the guidance of the central computer, the accuracy of the human soldiers suffered. They were unable to hit a 100% accuracy within 300m. However, the rain of firepower still proved to be a threat to Yue Zhong.

With a flip of his hand, Yue Zhong pulled out an energy converter shield, his body flickering consistently like a specter as he dodged the various beams. When he could not fully evade one or two shots, the shield could deflect it.

After 5 seconds, he appeared near the fort of the jail. He flipped his hand and pulled out an energy bomb, throwing it into the castle.

"No!!"

When the dozens of soldiers guarding the fort saw the bomb, their eyes flashed with despair as they screamed out in terror.

Hong!

Following a loud boom, the intense explosion rocked the building, directly blasting 3 of the soldiers to death.

On the other side, Phantom darted around, throwing multiple bombs into the castle, blowing up the various soldiers.

Yue Zhong had gained 8 of the 20 Forts, thus he had come across a huge amount of resources. He could basically afford to splurge on the energy bombs.

Wei Tian, who had been hiding and observing, turned white upon seeing the destruction. He turned to his subordinates and hollered, "Go notify His Majesty and request for reinforcements!! The enemies are 2 Type 5 Divine Warriors!! If His Majesty does not send aid, the 1st Prison is going to be destroyed!! Hurry!!"

"Yes! Warden!"

The officer rushed out quickly, speaking to his own subordinate. Soon after, 12 warriors leaped onto their enhanced motorcycles and roared towards the direction of the Capital.

"Drag the time out! Before the reinforcements come, we need to impede those 2 assholes. If they break into the city, they will incite a rebellion among those not of good intent." After Wei Tian gave his order, he walked towards the deeper recesses of the jail.

Wei Tian was just a Type 4 expert, and upon wearing the Type 4 Battle Suit, under the enhancements, he could technically be at Level 5. However, as he relied on an external source of power, he was still far from comparison against a proper Type 5 Divine Warrior. If he was not careful, he could easily be killed. He was not willing to die here.

When that officer led his dozen subordinates about 1km away from the prison, they fired out a signal flare into the sky.

As the bright light flashed, it soared over a hundred meters before it exploded in a bright, red light, following by an intense rumble.

Inside the capital, 20,000 city guards were eyeing the 12 flares in the sky, their eyes narrowing, "The 1st Prison is under attack!! Those bastards actually dare attack out 1st Prison, they must be tired of living."

Wei Ye's face suddenly fell as he barked, "Not good! If the 1st Prison did not use the central computer to send a message, this must mean that the enemy has a powerful A.I.!! Not good, we definitely cannot let them succeed!! Otherwise, half of our city will definitely fall!! Li Jing!! Come over!!"

One burly, bear-like general came over, wearing a Type 5 Battle Suit as he saluted, "Commander!!"

Wei Tian barked, "Bring 2,000 city guards with you immediately and make for the 1st Prison. You must take out the enemies there without any mercy!!"

Li Jing replied respectfully and left, "Yes!"

Soon after, a 2,000-strong unit of city guards, each of them wearing Battle Suits and armed to the teeth charged out of the city, heading for the direction of the 1st Prison.

Inside the Capital, there were many other eyes that had caught sight of the flare.

Inside a luxurious villa, where surveillance and sensing equipment was scarce, there were 4 middle-aged man and 30 burly bodyguards standing and eyeing the distance.

The 4 middle-aged men who were seated were the clan heads of the 4 strongest clans within the capital, beneath only the Emperor.

The Head of the Dou Family, Dou Meng, frowned slightly as he spoke, "That's the distress signal from the 1st Prison! Why would they fire it? How come they didn't use the central computer to signal for help? Would Wei Tian make such a foolish mistake?"

Zhao Sheng, the Head of the Zhao Family tried to assess, "Wei Tian is one of the most talented people of the Wei Family. He

would definitely not have made such a mistake. If I'm not mistaken, he's likely pushed to the edge already. The people assaulting the prison is likely someone who has a Super. A.I. or some form of ability to control the machines and equipment inside. Other than that, they most likely have a Type 5 expert as well."

Lu Yi, the Head of the Lu Family, had a glint in his eyes, "A.I., or an ability to control equipment?! Isn't that what we sorely lack right now? What should we do?"

The Head of the Chen Family, Chen Mu, spoke slowly, "Go despatch some experts to welcome him. He must be invited here, otherwise, our plan would have to be shelved back again. Our time is running out. That lunatic Wei Ming Qing is already insane. If he acts against us, we will all die without a burial ground."

# Chapter 885: Helpless!

---

Chen Mu finished speaking, and everyone fell silent. Wei Ming Qing had slaughtered over a million people without so much of an excuse. Such a vicious and tyrannical person had thoroughly frightened everyone within the city.

Furthermore, he had eradicated those clans which opposed his position without mercy. Although this had shocked the rest of the clans, causing them not to speak up out of fear, in secret, many of them were filled with fear and hatred. They were unsure if they would be the next ones to be targeted.

The undercurrents of a coup de grace was already brewing within the capital. If it wasn't for the mighty forces under Wei Ming Qing's command, there would have been a rebellion long ago.

Dou Meng continued solemnly, "Let's go rescue him! We must pull the person into our side. If we can control him, our success of taking down the inner city will increase by 30%!"

The remaining 3 Clan Heads exchanged looks, their eyes flashing with resolution as they nodded in agreement.

After the 4 Clan Heads made their decision, a small unit of 30 experts ran out towards the direction of the 1st Prison.

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!! I surrender!!"

"..."

Inside the 1st Prison, a number of wardens had raised their hands in surrender, eyeing Yue Zhong and Phantom with fear as they walked out obediently.

They were all human after all, and were fearful of death. When Yue Zhong and Phantom killed over half the wardens in the 1st Prison, it had crushed their morale instantly.

Yue Zhong brought a gun coldly towards the head of one warden

and spoke icily, "Where's the central computer?"

The warden hesitated for a moment. The location of the central computer was classified, if he revealed it, it would mean his betrayal towards Wei Ming Qing.

A single electromagnetic beam directly pierced his head, causing white and red matter to ooze out from the hole.

Seeing such a cruel scene, the little boy who had been standing quietly by Yue Zhong's left trembled a little. His face turned pale, yet he did not throw up.

The refugees had come from afar, and due to the numerous deaths along the way, the little boy was already numb.

After killing the warden, Yue Zhong pointed his Electromagnetic Gun towards another warden and barked, "Location!"

The warden was so frightened that he wet his pants, as he cried out immediately, "Go along this tunnel, in another 50m, then go downwards for another 30m, you will see the central computer. Don't kill me!! Please don't kill me!"

"Better hope that you spoke the truth, otherwise, only death will await."

Yue Zhong eyed the warden coldly, before leaving the boy and White Bones behind. He then darted forwards, heading towards the central computer.

Only by controlling the central computer of this prison, Yue Zhong could then gain control over all the weapons and equipment here.

"Retreat!!" Just as he was about to enter the basement, he felt a sense of danger arise, and he barked out loudly in alarm while stepping back explosively.

Phantom was shocked as she activated her ability and flashed, disappearing from her location.

Hong!

With a loud bang, the entire entrance of the basement exploded, sending a powerful shockwave that billowed towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's speed of retreat was quick, and he was able to get out of the epicenter. However, there were a few pieces of shrapnel that shot towards him. In response, he slapped out with his hands, knocking them away.

After the dust settled, Yue Zhong's expression turned ugly when he discovered the rubble blocking the entrance. With his current abilities, it would take too much time to clear the debris.

Yue Zhong eyed the tunnel and frowned slightly, "Seems like there are some intelligent people."

Hong! Hong!!

Right at this time, there was an earthshaking explosion somewhere in the 1st Prison. The powerful blast traveled outwards, blowing many things away, shaking the entire place.

Yue Zhong was also caught in the tremors, his balance affected.

Bai Yi appeared on the handheld display, reporting, "Master, the backup energy generator of this prison has been blown up. If the enemy had cut off the power, then the entire prison is in a state of no power. There's no point in controlling the central computer then!"

This vicious move of Wei Tian had thwarted Yue Zhong's plans to control the 1st Prison with Bai Yi.

Peng!!

Yue Zhong slammed his fist furiously into a nearby wall, destroying totally. He was currently infuriated. Without the chance to control the 1st Prison, then he could not make use of the facility to rescue the refugees.

The millions of Blood-seeking Bees would soon suck the refugees

dry.

He forcefully suppressed his raging fury and ran towards the armory.

Without the 1st Prison, he would still sweep the armory clean.

Inside the 1st Prison, there were 2 Reapers, both their computer systems already destroyed. They were basically junk metal.

Yue Zhong swept a glance across the area and decided to keep both the Reapers in his Storage Ring.

"That's... That's a heavy assault helicopter!!"

Yue Zhong had just left the armory when he saw a number of assault helicopters flying over. The total number was over a hundred, blotting out the skies.

"No good! Are they going to kill everyone here?" Yue Zhong eyed the helicopters and felt a growing sense of unease.

Yue Zhong rushed back to the room where they kept the captives and threw a watch to Phantom, "Phantom, bring the kid and go hide. Quickly leave this place. Those bastards have deployed huge numbers of assault helicopters. They're likely planning to level this whole place."

Phantom's face turned pale as she asked, "What about you?"

"I'll try my best to impede them, and buy you time to flee. Don't waste any more time, go now!"

Yue Zhong left immediately after speaking, disappearing from the place like a specter.

"Don't go!! Bring us along!!"

"Please, save us!! Take us with you!!"

"..."

When the captives heard that a hundred assault helicopters were coming, their faces fell, and they began to beg.

"Shut up, when those poor refugees were being sent here, you bastards did not even give them a chance. This is your retribution."

Phantom shot them a cold look, before taking the boy as she ran out quickly. In a few breaths, she disappeared, leaving behind the wardens with looks of despair.

Yue Zhong shot out like a bullet, coming to a small hill near the 1st Prison. With a flip of his hand, he pulled out an Electromagnetic Sniper Cannon.

He then laid down on the ground, before asking Bai Yi, "Bai Yi, are you able to gain control over them?"

If Bai Yi could wrest control over all 100-odd assault helicopters, then Yue Zhong's military might would gain another huge boost once again.

Bai Yi dashed his dreams, "Impossible! The enemy has already destroyed the computer systems and switched to manual! I have no way of establishing control."

"Guess we have to rely on ourselves!" Yue Zhong then aimed his Electromagnetic Sniper Cannon at the skies. After locking on to a target, he fired once.

The electromagnetic beam flashed out, slamming into the rotor engine, directly destroying it.

The moment the engine was lost, the helicopter lost control and began to wobble in the skies. When it descended to the ground, it exploded out with a loud bang. The region around it was consumed in flames; there were obviously terrifying energy bombs being transported on board.

Taking out one helicopter with a single shot, Yue Zhong attracted the attention of the other helicopters as though he had struck a beehive, as 30 of them immediately changed directions towards him.

Multiple electromagnetic beams began firing at Yue Zhong.

Since they disabled their central computers, the accuracy of the soldiers all suffered. However, with their superior firepower, it was enough to suppress Yue Zhong, forcing him to evade constantly.

The remaining 69 heavy assault helicopters continued towards the direction of the prison.

In a camp of the 1st Prison, one wall suddenly exploded, as the butcher-like Wu Heng walked out in tattered clothes, his eyes bloodshot.

A large number of Blood-sucking Bees flew towards Wu Heng, however, the moment they got close, they would be enveloped by a mysterious force. Their bodies were then crushed by that unseen force, as the juices got squeezed out.

Wu Heng laughed out madly, "Hahahaha!! I have awakened as a Type 5 Divine Warrior!! I'm invincible!! Haha!! The world is my oyster now!!!"

His arrogant and unbridled tone had shaken Phantom who was fleeing. As she fled, she turned around to glance at Wu Heng, her eyes flashing with shock, "Type 5 Divine Warrior?! How did he awaken as one?"

During the journey to the prison, Phantom had assessed Wu Heng and did not discover anything off about him. Seeing him suddenly become a Type 5 Divine Warrior, her heart was full of shock.

Even so, she continued to flee frantically. She was very clear about the destructive might the heavy assault helicopters were bringing. Even a Type 5 Divine Warrior would not be able to survive that kind of blast zone.

Amidst Wu Heng's maniacal laughter, the fleet of heavy assault helicopters arrived above the 1st Prison.

# Chapter 886: The Destruction of 1st Prison!

---

The moment they entered the airspace above the 1st Prison, the heavy assault helicopters began to unload all their energy bombs.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Amidst the shattering explosions, the entire prison was bombarded by countless energy bombs. Everything inside was consumed, and the remaining hundred wardens inside died with despair and regret in their eyes, their bodies blasted to smithereens.

Wu Heng watched the massive building crumble to the ground, his expression pale. Without any further antics, he turned around to flee.

Although he had awakened as a Type 5 Divine Warrior, he did not think he could single-handedly crush the 20m-tall fortress.

As he fled, there were still many Blood-sucking Bees chasing after him in a huge cloud. It allowed the helicopters to locate their target.

Over 30 heavy assault helicopters turned towards him and flew after him.

A number of electromagnetic beams shot down like rain, firing towards Wu Heng.

Wu Heng might have awakened as a Type 5 Divine Warrior, but his combat experience was severely lacking. The Air Manipulation ability he had evolved was unable to reach its maximum potential.

With the dense beams of electromagnetic beams, one slammed into his right shoulder, blasting it off instantly.

A cloud of Blood-seeking Bees immediately swarmed over, sucking the entire right arm dry.

Wu Heng tumbled twice on the ground before he got on his knees

and kowtowed, pleading loudly, "It hurts!! No!! Please don't kill me!! Please!! I'm willing to serve you guys with all my life, spare me please!!"

In response, Wu Heng was showered with a multitude of laser beams, directly shredding him apart.

At the same time, they flew over and let off a number of energy bombs.

The moment the energy bombs landed, they exploded out with immense force, consuming everything around, including Wu Heng's corpse.

The orders of the pilots were to eradicate all life of the 1st Prison, they would definitely not allow someone like Wu Heng to survive.

The powerful explosion caused a single shrapnel to shoot forward, penetrating the body of the boy beside Phantom.

"Ah!"

The boy screamed out, as he crumpled to the floor.

Phantom was shocked, and she hurried to carry him up. Placing her fingers on his nose, she discovered that he was still breathing, and she heaved a sigh of relief. She started to utilize her ability to flash through space, quickly escaping from the area.

With her Flash Teleportation ability which was an incredibly useful escape technique, even if she were to face a Type 6 Divine Warrior, as long as it was not a frontal confrontation, she would be able to flee.

Having lost the help of the central computers, the heavy assault helicopters could not operate at their maximum efficiency. They did not discover the fleeing Phantom, instead, continuing to focus on the destruction of 1st Prison as per orders.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Without anyone to stop them, the entire 1st Prison was turned

into a burning land, as explosions rocked the place over and over again, blasting the various structures into smithereens.

After a round of baptism through fire, the heavy assault helicopters in the air released one more volley of napalm fire.

The blazing flames came to life, covering the entire place quickly, not leaving behind any chance for survival.

Bai Yi's face suddenly appeared on the handheld device, "The 1st Prison has been thoroughly annihilated, based on calculations, everyone within has died."

Yue Zhong had set up a few surveillance equipment within the prison, they were Bai Yi's eyes, thus she could see clearly the image of 1st Prison's destruction.

As he hid in a forest, he thought quietly, "Seems like it's time for me to evacuate!"

In the process of evading the pursuit of the earlier 30 assault helicopters, Yue Zhong had destroyed 4, however, he was still forced to flee.

If he continued, then there would definitely be experts that followed after. No matter how strong Yue Zhong was, he was not a match for an entire army of experts right now.

"Ah! Those are... troops!! Are they serious?! In order to catch me, they actually sent so many people?!" Yue Zhong was lying in the forest when he discovered over thousands of soldiers in Battle Suits marching towards his direction.

"What a pity, with such a force, you want to capture me?! Not possible!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and he activated his Third Order Stealth. His entire body blended into the surroundings, all traces of his aura disappearing. He then proceeded to sneak out.

5 soldiers wearing Type 3 Battle Suits were currently searching

their front carefully. They were clear that they were dealing with a Type 5 expert, and they were not a match for him. As long as they fought hard to survive and hold off the enemy, their friends would arrive with backup to eradicate the enemy.

Atop a tree, Yue Zhong eyed the nearing 5 soldiers, and leaped lightly, landing on another tree.

As he passed by above the heads of those 5 soldiers, they did not notice anything at all, still warily surveying their surroundings. With their acute senses, the rustling of grass and leaves would not escape their notice, but Yue Zhong managed to get past them with his Third Order Stealth.

As he passed through the various teams, he finally arrived the border of the forest.

At the edge of the forest, Yue Zhong noticed a small squad of 30 men, all of them in Type 4 Battle Suits, wearing helmets, lying prone on the ground.

One of them asked softly, "Captain, the enemy has deployed 2,000 men to search the mountain, how can we find the target before them?"

Hearing this voice, Yue Zhong was preparing to leave, but he stayed behind a huge rock to eavesdrop.

Another male replied, "The Clan Lord had not expected that mad dog Wei Ming Qing to respond so fast. They actually sent a hundred Desolator Fighters over to eradicate the entire 1st Prison. Not only that, he even sent 2,000 men to search the mountain. This is not a force we can contend with. We wait a while more, then we search. If it's not possible, we will retreat immediately. We cannot waste our brothers' lives here."

The captain then ordered solemnly, "Everyone, spread out. Search a hundred meters further. If there are no signs, we will retreat immediately. Those man-eating city guards will reach our

location soon."

Without a sound, Yue Zhong suddenly appeared, his right hand grabbing the captain before he leaped back with his Electromagnetic Gun placed against the captain's head, "No need to search anymore. I think I'm the guy you're looking for. Speak, who are you people?"

"Captain!!"

Seeing Yue Zhong suddenly capturing their captain, the remaining 29 soldiers were all taken aback as they hurried to whisk out their guns.

"Stop! Don't move!" The captain was able to readjust his emotions, getting over the initial shock of being caught by Yue Zhong, and quickly barking orders at his subordinates in a low tone.

Scolded by their captain, the soldiers all lowered their weapons, eyeing Yue Zhong warily.

The captain spoke without fear, "How do you do, little brother. My name is Zhong Bu, may I ask your name?"

Yue Zhong replied impassively, "I'm Yue Zhong. I had broken into the 1st Prison, and am being pursued now."

Zhong Bu waved his hand, and a soldier quickly came forward to pass a handheld computer to Yue Zhong, "So it's little brother Yue Zhong. If I didn't guess wrong, you are someone who has a Super A.I. or you have an ability to manipulate computers and equipment. We hope that you can prove it if so, you will become a very valued friend of ours, and we can work together to overthrow Wei Ming Qing."

Yue Zhong received it and pondered a while, before pointing at the device, "Crack it, Bai Yi!"

Bai Yi's image appeared on the device within seconds, "Yes! Master, I've already done so."

"Amazing!!"

Seeing this miraculous scene, all the soldiers had looks of surprise and excitement, yet they did not dare shout out loud, only growling through their throats like wolves.

With the appearance of a Super A.I., there was hope for these soldiers.

Wei Ming Qing had controlled Cloud Region for years. With the control of the powerful central computer, no one had been able to resist his rule. All opposition had been entirely suppressed.

Only with Yue Zhong and his Super A.I., there was a chance Wei Ming Qing's central computer could be cracked. If Yue Zhong did succeed in bringing the central computer of the Capital into his hands, he would possess  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the entire Cloud Region's force.

Even if Wei Ming Qing employed all sorts of methods to defend against the Super A.I. it would whittle away at his resources.

Zhong Bu then spoke respectfully, "Sir Yue Zhong, we don't mean any offense. Please come with us, we assure you that you will receive the most fitting of service and hosting."

In response, Yue Zhong asked, "Who are you people?"

Zhong Bu's eyes flashed with difficulty, "Sir Yue Zhong, we cannot say. I can only tell you that we are opposing Wei Ming Qing. When you see the Clan Heads, you will naturally know who we are. Please come with us."

Yue Zhong thought for a moment, before agreeing, "Fine!"

# Chapter 887: Deployment!

---

Deep in the forest, Phantom looked at the unconscious kid and frowned with worry. She did not like having a burden during missions.

White Bones stood quietly by the side, its dark eyes flashing with demonic fire.

Suddenly, the tall grass rattled beside her. Phantom's pupils narrowed, as she fixed her gaze over at the direction. A dagger appeared in her hands, and she was ready to pounce.

Yue Zhong walked out from the grass, eyeing the kid, "What's wrong with him?"

Phantom replied simply, "He's in a coma and running a fever!"

At this time, a dozen other experts walked out from the grass.

The moment Zhong Bu came out, and caught sight of Phantom, he stared right at her as he exclaimed, "You're Phantom!! Assassin Phantom!!"

Hearing Phantom's name, everyone inside Zhong Bu's unit faltered, their expressions full of fear and caution.

Assassin Phantom was one of the sharpest 'daggers' in Wei Ming Qing's hands. She had killed many experts who had opposed Wei Ming Qing before. Even a Type 5 expert of the rebels had been killed at her hands. She was a legend among the assassins.

Phantom looked at them coldly, not saying anything. This was her character. Other than those she cared about, she held nothing else in her eyes. To other people, she was just an aloof beauty.

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong took a look at the kid and left.

White Bones took the kid into its arms and followed beside Yue Zhong.

Phantom disappeared into the night. She was not used to being in a crowd, there was no sense of comfort. Compared to men, she trusted her dagger more.

Zhong Bu saw Phantom following Yue Zhong's instructions and was impressed, his valuation of Yue Zhong becoming higher, "He could even subjugate the Queen of Assassins. This Yue Zhong is not simple!"

One soldier was licking his lips when he saw Phantom earlier, his eyes shining with lust, "So that was the Queen of the assassin world, Phantom? Truly beautiful!"

"Let's go!"

With Zhong Bu's command, all the soldiers quickly left.

Since the 4 large Clans had invited Yue Zhong, the moment they left the forest, they came to a clearing where a number of vehicles were long since prepared for them.

The moment they came to a villa, a beautiful woman with long, black hair, a voluptuous body, and exquisite looks, came out to greet them. She was dressed in a white silk dress and her smile was radiant, "Sir Yue Zhong, I'm Cai Wei, please come with me!"

Yue Zhong followed silently behind, as they came to a living hall.

Inside the hall, there was a young man who was incredibly handsome. When he saw Yue Zhong and the rest, his expression immediately became professional as he welcomed them, "How do you do, Yue Zhong. Welcome! I'm Zhang Huan, the leader of the largest Republican Rebel Group here in the city."

Yue Zhong frowned, his mouth twitching as he shot a sarcastic look, "Republican group? I have not heard of any such organizations within the Capital. If you guys aren't sincere, then forget about it. Hiding the head while sending the tail, I'm not interested in cooperating with such riff-raff."

After that, Yue Zhong directly turned around to leave.

Zhang Hui's face turned pale as he called out, "Wait!! Mr. Yue Zhong, please stay behind, we can discuss this!! We can discuss this!!"

The 20 bodyguards who looked skill stood in front of the door and shuffled to block his way.

Yue Zhong eyed those 20 bodyguards, his gaze turning incredibly cold. A strong killing intent emitted from him as he declared, "Are you all seeking death?"

The 20 bodyguards were thoroughly spooked by that oppressive killing intent, and their expressions flashed with fear. However, they gritted their teeth and remained where they were.

Yue Zhong kept his gaze level, as he spoke icily, "Fine, since you're looking to die, let me send you on your way!"

At his current realm, killing 20 Type 3 Divine Warriors was an easy feat.

A wizened voice resounded from the side, as 4 middle-aged men stepped out, "Stop, Yue Zhong. We're sincere in working with you to eradicate Wei Ming Qing."

Yue Zhong turned to them and spoke with an impassive face, "You finally decided to come out? 4 great Clan Lords?"

He had known from Phantom's report about the power division and the factions within the Capital. A faction that could extract him noiselessly from the 1st Prison was definitely only the work of the 4 largest clans.

The rest of the factions could not pull out 30 Type 4 experts just to escort Yue Zhong.

Dou Meng reached out with an extended hand, intending to shake his hand, "Hello, Yue Zhong. I'm Dou Meng of the Dou Clan. These are Zhao Sheng from the Zhao Clan, Lu Yi from the Lu Clan, and Chen Mu from the Chen Clan. This matter is grave, do forgive us as it concerns the life and death of our clan. We had to be

cautious. We seek your pardon for the behavior earlier."

Yue Zhong went to sit on the sofa and shot them a look, "I can understand, but I truly hope that it's a cooperation we're talking about. I don't have the habit of being someone else's pawn."

He did not intend to flip out with the 4 leaders, however, by dealing with this obvious puppet Zhang Huan, his position of negotiation would be lower. He did not intend to be a tool nor cannon fodder for these people.

Dou Meng wore an amiable smile, "Of course. Yue Zhong, I want to know if you have a Super A.I or the ability to manipulate electronic systems?"

"Shouldn't Zhong Bu have already reported this information to you guys?"

Dou Meng kept his gaze fixed on Yue Zhong, his pupils constricting slightly, "I hope to hear it directly from your mouth."

The other 3 Clan Leaders also stared at him, their gazes expectant. His answer concerned the success of their stratagem to attack the inner city.

Yue Zhong did not hesitate to reply, "Super A.I."

Wei Ming Qing's power was too large, Yue Zhong had to work together with others with their gathered strength in order to defeat him.

With just him and Phantom, even if they were 2 Type 5 Divine Warriors, with the help of a Super A.I., if there were no accidents, they still would not be able to reach Wei Ming Qing's side.

As the Emperor of Cloud Region, he had plenty of Type 5 experts beside him. There were at least 20 of them. Individually, they could not possibly be dealt with alone by Yue Zhong, much less an entire group of them.

The eyes of the 4 Clan Lords flickered with joy, "That's great!"

Dou Meng continued solemnly, "Yue Zhong, we hope that you can make use of your Super A.I. to block the technological aspects of Wei Ming Qing's forces."

With the help of a Super A.I., they could gain control of the systems, and while Bai Yi's clones might not be as powerful as herself, they could still affect the central computer in Wei Ming Qing's hands.

Yue Zhong agreed, "Not a problem! As long as you guys provide enough computers."

Suddenly, a servant came running into the hall with a panicked expression, "Lord! There's an army heading towards our villa right now, there're over 200 of them, and they're likely the City Guards!"

Hearing this, the faces of the 4 Clan Lords fell, "City Guards!! What the hell are they doing here? Are they already intending to act against us?!"

In the past, any time the City Guards were deployed, it signaled a massacre. At each location where the City Guards were dispatched to in the past, there would be bloodshed.

Zhong Bu's expression was unsightly, almost tumbling to the ground as he ran into the room, shouting, "Clan Lord!! Clan Lord!! Things are bad!! The Black Fox unit has sent a report, saying that Wei Ming Qing is already acting against us!"

Black Fox was the intel unit that the 4 Great Clans paid a huge price to infiltrate the City Guards, sending crucial reports at the most crucial times.

Dou Meng's face fell, "Damn it! He's already making a move just because of suspicions?! This bastard is truly unscrupulous!"

In the past, Wei Ming Qing had given some consideration to the 4 Great Clans and did not try anything funny with them. However, he actually deployed his cards today, obviously intending to wipe them out without even talking about evidence of any traitorous

behavior.

Such an act might incur the ire of the residents in the capital. However, at this point, the madman could not care less about anything, that showed how much caution he had thrown to the wind.

Chen Mu's eyes flashed with anxiety, "What happens now?"

Dou Meng declared, "Seems like we need to bring forward our plan!!"

The other 3 Leaders also nodded.

Dou Meng immediately gave an order to the 4 intelligence soldiers beside him, "Convey the command, Operation Kill-King is in effect!!"

"Yes!"

The 4 intelligence soldiers quickly retreated, and worked on transmitting the order.

Dou Meng then spoke to Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, please come with me, we have already prepared the computers for you. You just have to create clones of your A.I. within the network."

Against the impending attack of the 200 city guards, Dou Meng seemed to not mind them.

Yue Zhong also knew the severity of the matter and quickly followed Dou Meng into a secret room.

Dou Meng pressed a button, revealing a long tunnel in front of them.

The party quickly ran in.

# Chapter 888: Guided Energy Missile!

---

After venturing about hundreds of meter underground, Yue Zhong finally came across a room that had multiple handheld computers set up, with 20 humanoid robots standing guard as well.

The 20 humanoid robots were special assistants sought by Dou Meng especially for Bai Yi. With these robot assistants, it would be easier for Bai Yi to get things done.

Yue Zhong pulled out his handheld tablet and ordered, "Bai Yi, create some clones in these computers!"

"Yes!"

Her eyes began to flash with numbers, and the computers in the lab soon shone, and Bai Yi's image appeared on all of them.

After 5 seconds, the data disappeared from Bai Yi's eyes, as she reported, "Master, I've uploaded copies of myself into the computers."

Dou Meng was flabbergasted, asking in shock, "Just like that?"

The time that had passed was barely 5 seconds since Yue Zhong entered. Dou Meng was still expecting Yue Zhong to key in some things and perform some incredible feats with the handheld computer, after all, there were over 10,000 computers over here.

One of the Bai Yis inside a handheld tablet spoke up, "That's right! I'm already in."

Dou Meng looked at the computer and exclaimed in excitement, "This is great!! Finally, with these clones, we can stand up to Wei Ming Qing!"

Outside, the 200 City Guards that were decked in Type 4 Battle Suits and riding enhanced motorcycles appeared at the villa where the 4 Clan Heads had gathered.

This unit was the elite of the elite within the city guards,

specially meant to massacre those large clans with a deep root in the city. Even if the clan had a Type 5 expert, they would be helpless against this unit.

The leader of the troop was an expert wearing a Type 5 Body Suit, and he pointed at the villa, barking, "Kill!! Leave nothing alive!!"

The eyes of the 200 City Guards flashed with an intense bloodlust, as they leaped out their vehicles excitedly, charging into the compound like wolves. It was like they could already see the countless people dying at their hands.

The moment the City Guards moved, the entire villa shuddered, as countless automatic weapons appeared and began firing madly at those soldiers.

Faced with that intense firepower, over 40 City Guards were immediately turned into sieves.

The rest of the 160 were able to maintain their reaction and quickly ducked behind cover the moment the defenses got to work.

"Hmph! The 4 Great Clans really are planning to rebel, to think they actually killed our men. This time, I must level all of them to the ground!!"

The Type 5 City Guard snorted and raised his Battle Spear, thrusting out at some of the defenses, completely obliterating them.

At the same time, he wielded a large energy shield, blocking the multiple beams that fired at him.

Right at this moment, a small hill about 3km away from the villa suddenly split open, as a number of missiles fired out from it, shooting towards the entrance of the villa.

The Type 5 City Guard saw the incoming guided missiles and his expression finally fell as he barked out frantically, "Guided Energy Missiles!! Damn it!! How come they have such weapons?! Retreat now!!"

When the City Guards heard the name of those missiles, their countenances turned pale, and they began to retreat with all their might, dispersing in all directions.

The moment those missiles landed on the ground, they blew up explosively, and the resulting blast shot outwards, leveling the surrounding area.

As the dust settled, many holes of about 6 or 7 meters deep were revealed. All around them, there were corpses in Type 4 Battle Suits, as well as some Type 4 Nuclei.

Those nuclei were truly hardy, the only way to destroy them was to suck them dry of their power.

The terrifying energy storm consumed the lives of over a hundred Type 4 City Guards in mere seconds, leaving the Type 5 City Guard leader and 30 others who were frightened out of their wits.

The bottom-line of the 4 Great Clans of the Capital had finally been forced out under Wei Ming Qing's madness.

The tyrant had not acted against them for so long because he did not know precisely just how much might they were hiding from him.

Initially, there were 5 families controlling the Cloud Region, with the Wei Clan being the strongest and largest, and thus, recommended for the Emperor's position. However, the rest were not to be taken lightly.

In these hundreds of years, Wei Ming Qing was the only Emperor who had dared act against the 4 Great Clans.

One of them asked the Type 5 leader, "General, what do we do?"

The leader had regained his senses and made a judgment call, "Retreat! The 4 Great Clans have rebelled, and we are not their match. The most important thing now is to report to Leader Wei Ye."

Upon giving the order, the remaining City Guards swiftly fled towards the inner city.

The hill also stopped firing the guided missile.

The strength of those missiles was too great, able to wipe out even a Type 5 Divine Warrior. However, they were weapons of war, suitable for dealing damage over a wide area. Against a single Type 5 Divine Warrior, it was like using a cannon on a mosquito, not worth the expenditure.

On top of the Capital's outer city walls, a burly man in black military uniform surveyed the region sternly. This was precisely the great general in charge of city defense, Wei Shou, and he was currently looking out at the city with worry.

The 4 corners were the 4 Great Clans, and the people within, from the common soldiers to the officers had been scouted over to their sides since long ago. Although Wei Shou was a general in name, he had no means of truly activating the 4 city guards in those areas.

One commander came up to him, "General!"

"How was it?"

The officer replied, "General Dou De, General Chen Yun, General Lu He and General Zhao Tan are delaying and refusing to come."

Wei Shou's face turned ugly as he cursed, "Damn bastards, do they hold the Emperor in their eyes?! Do they value the country at all?!"

# Chapter 889: Intense Battle!

---

All of a sudden, the 4 corners of the outer city suddenly split open, as a number of guided energy missiles shot out, firing towards the center.

Hong!! Hong!! Hong!!

Following the loud explosions, multiple areas of the city blew up, as powerful shockwaves rocked outwards. Many defenses crumbled, and over thousands of elite soldiers were crushed under the falling debris. The entire outer city felt the intense tremors.

In the aftermath, Wei Shou was hiding in one corner and he roared out furiously, "What the hell is going on? Why wasn't there any warning? What did we get those on sentry duty for?!"

One military officer came up to Wei Shou and reported in a pathetic state, "General, the sentry and guard personnel did not receive any notification from the central computer. They suspect that the central computer has either been destroyed or compromised. What should we do now?"

Wei Shou shot up in anger, charging towards the command center, "Retaliate!! Convey my order, we retaliate with all we got, and we must eradicate these bastard rebels!!"

The officer suddenly shouted out with a panicked expression, "General! Watch out!!"

In the skies, 2 guided Energy Missiles descended from the skies, directly exploding right in front of Wei Shou. The resulting blast enveloped him.

The rebels of the 4 Great Clans did not know that the General in charge of city defense had been blown to death by them. They continued to fire out multiple guided Energy Missiles.

The intelligence of the 4 Great Clans was extremely advanced. They knew clearly what the city guards were capable of, and they

had high-tech equipment. If attacked by them, they would not be able to resist.

"Damn it!! They're rebelling!! They've betrayed the Emperor!!"

"Where's the General?! Where's the General?! Why isn't he giving any orders?!"

"Attack!! Fight back!!"

"..."

Having lost Wei Shou's command, the city guards were thrown into a panic, not knowing whether to defend or to attack.

A troop of a thousand soldiers went to attack the west, while another attacked the north. There were many other units who were at a loss, running about like headless flies.

Under the constant barrage of the guided Energy Missiles, the outer city was being demolished, as debris flew in all directions.

The imposing city wall, which had seemed invincible and impossible to be destroyed, finally came crumbling down, the massive effort and resources gone down the drain.

There were many experts within the city guards. At this critical moment, a number of Reapers, heavy assault helicopters, as well as enhanced motorcycles came roaring out. The elite experts began to clash with the rebel forces with bloodshot eyes and bloodlust.

Soon, as both sides clashed, the casualty toll was rising. The best warriors of the human race were not killed in combat against other races, but due to in-fighting, it was truly a huge pity.

"Wei Ming Qing wants to kill all of us to help himself breakthrough to the Type 7 realm! Everyone, stand up against him, and wipe out this demon! Otherwise, we will just be fodder for him."

"Wei Ming Qing is no longer a human, he's a freak now!! Let's revolt!"

"The 4 Great Clans have begun to rise against Wei Ming Qing's tyranny! Outside the capital, we have over 2 million allies! We will definitely win this battle!! Everyone!! Join us and eradicate Wei Ming Qing!! Or else, we'll only face death in this godforsaken land!!"

"..."

The various pawns planted in the Capital began to act. Those various upper clansmen who had trembled and stayed silent under Wei Ming Qing's tyranny began to respond as well, leading their own clan to join the uprising.

Wei Ming Qing relied on slaughter to maintain his rule, especially massacring those that oppose him without any constraint. This has already caused alarm and fear in the rest of the clans. They were long since upset with his rule, they were just afraid of voicing it out. Now that the 4 Great Clans had taken the lead, their pent-up feelings exploded out.

As the mob grew, those police and moles that belongs to Wei Ming Qing were dragged out and killed. Those who were loyal to him were quickly captured and forced to make a choice: defect or be killed.

The elite city guards were forced to retreat within the inner city.

The rebel troops of the 4 Great Clans did not immediately launch an attack on the inner city, instead, they swept through the entire outer city, ensuring no loose ends were left and that the city was thoroughly in their control. After that, they began to deploy the various troops to the battlefield between the city guards and rebels.

The 4 Great Clans were clear about the might of the City Guards. They were truly the most outstanding elites with advanced equipment, resources, and training. Other than the Xue Luo guards, no one could be a match for them. Furthermore, they had retreated into the inner city and were defending it, preventing the

rebel troops from invading.

While the 4 Great Clans could take down those in the outer city, it was because that was their turf, and they had many pawns set up everywhere. Each pawn that was activated could cause the death of a unit.

They had to leave the tough City Guards for the last. Once they have taken out the outer city troops and regathered all their forces, it would then be possible to launch an all-out attack and assault the inner city.

As both parties were at a standstill, numerous guide Energy Missiles fell upon the inner city like rain.

The various radar-like devices within the inner city got activated, firing out beams that formed a huge energy shield above them. When the guided missiles struck the shield, they exploded and caused ripples.

There were guided Energy Missiles within the capital as well. The next moment, one could see the ground within the inner city splitting apart, as multiple missiles were fired in response, shooting out of the region.

"They've fired!! Fools! Go to hell!!"

The officers of the 4 Great Clans watched the retaliating firing of missiles with cold, sarcastic looks.

When the missiles passed the energy shield, they suddenly turned around and slammed into the shield, causing more damage to it, and whittling down the energy.

At the same time, the rebel troops within the city began to attack the energy shield, firing their weapons at it, causing ripples and wearing it down.

The energy shield of the inner city was truly hardy, but the energy consumption was likewise astounding. The more powerful the attack, its energy spent would be larger. As long as the

threshold was met, the entire shield would collapse. However, before it crumbled, the inner city was still as protected and solid as a rock.

The head of the inner City Guards, Wei Meng, looked out into the distance, his expression steely. He was silent for a long while, before speaking slowly, "Jin Sheng!"

A subordinate wearing a Type 5 Battle Suit stepped forward, "Your subordinate reports!"

Wei Meng stared at him and spoke, "Go take 5,000 City Guards to attack the rebel. They have a Super A.I. with them. The firepower support I can provide is very little. Do you have the confidence to crush them?"

Jin Sheng's tone was filled with pride as he replied, "Your subordinate promises to finish this task!"

Wei Meng waved his hand, "Set off!"

"Yes!"

Suddenly, the city gates opened, and 5,000 City Guards wearing Battle Suits charged out under the lead of their various commanders, swiftly attacking the rebel troops of the 4 Great Clans.

Without any preparation, the rebel troops were only able to fire off two volleys before the 5,000 City Guards sliced through them like knives.

In this battle, the disparity in strength between both parties was highlighted. Many of the rebels were easily slaughtered in the clash.

The intense battle went on for not long, and the rebel forces on the frontlines were forced back. The 5,000 City Guards continued to slaughter their way throughout the crowd, and the situation fell into a deadlock.

Wei Meng looked at how easily the rebels were being killed with a condescending look, "Hmph! Bunch of riffraff! Even if you have a Super A.I., you can't beat our City Guards!"

On the battlefield, Jin Sheng was like a rampaging tiger. He charged everywhere, the battle spear in his hands would pierce out and kill the rebel soldiers like it was nothing. He would laugh maniacally, his visage frightening and evil.

Right at this time, there were sounds of whirring from the distance, as a dozen assault helicopters flew over.

The moment they appeared, electromagnetic beams were fired down mercilessly.

Under the shower of firepower, many City Guards were pierced through.

In order to dodge those electromagnetic beams, the City Guards had no choice but to duck behind cover. However, it was not enough, as the missiles fired were enough to blast their cover and the soldiers to smithereens.

Wei Meng looked at the sudden appearance of the assault helicopters and lost control, slamming his fist into the wall, leaving a deep imprint, "Beasts!!"

If it were not for the Super A.I., the Capital could easily make use of their targeting missiles to take down these assault helicopters.

Being unable to utilize those automatic targeting missiles meant that no matter how much the Capital was firing laser beams, they were unable to hit them accurately.

# Chapter 890: Sneaking into the Heart of the Imperial Capital!

---

With the 10 assault helicopters in the air joining the fray, the tides of the battle changed once again. Many City Guards were injured, and they did not dare continue their unbridled assault.

Under those circumstances, the rebels managed to find their footing and began to regroup and counterattack.

Soon, a hundred heavy assault helicopters also flew out from the capital, flying towards those from the rebel side.

It was just that when the Capital's helicopters had just joined the fray, 40 Reapers that had been lying in wait suddenly appeared. Under Bai Yi's control, they began to fire electromagnetic cannons and heat-seeking missiles towards the skies.

Bombarded by that volley of fire and flashes, 30 heavy assault helicopters were instantly decimated, turned into ash, as the resulting explosions swept outwards.

The Reapers were truly efficient killing machines. Adding Bai Yi's control, the assault helicopters in the air turned into shrapnel and debris, without even the chance to exhibit their prowess.

Wei Meng looked at the destroyed heavy assault helicopters and his countenance turned ugly, "Is this the power of a Super A.I.? Truly fearsome!!"

The Super A.I. would not be particularly effective against the Dino-race since they were a backward and barbaric society. However, in Cloud Region, where humans relied on technology, as long as there were enough outlets, Bai Yi could unleash a terrifying strength.

Jin Sheng watched his comrades being shot down by those beams and his face fell. He roared out in frenzy, "Retreat!! Retreat now!!"

The assault of the 40 Reapers was too ferocious, easily slaughtering the City Guards, who tried to put up a resistance but crumbled in the end. The remaining soldiers quickly retreated back towards the inner city under Jin Sheng's lead.

No one noticed that as the City Guards were retreating, a certain figure wearing the City Guard uniform had joined them noiselessly.

Upon entering their midst, Yue Zhong mingled and retreated back as one of those injured.

Since the rebel troops had beaten the 5,000 City Guards back, they began to unleash a ferocious assault on the energy shield, hitting it until the shape looked less uniform.

Wei Meng's focus was on the rebel troops and did not pay too much attention to this defeated and injured troops.

Within the medic tent, there were many injured City Guards. The smell of blood was strong, and many of the soldiers were moaning and groaning.

Under Yue Zhong's careful observation, there were over a hundred people within the medic tent, and 2 soldiers standing guard outside.

With a thought, a void appeared in mid-air. White Bones leaped out and 20 sharp bone spikes shot out to slice out at the various injured personnel. Within seconds, the hundred-odd casualties were put down, ending their misery.

After dealing with those casualties, Yue Zhong's figure flashed and darted out the door. His palms slammed into the heads of the 2 City Guards, crushing them into their bodies.

He then activated his Third Order Stealth, noiselessly traversing through the camp. His target was the central computer of the Capital.

As long as he could obtain the information from the Capital's

central computer, Yue Zhong's mission on the Third World would be complete. Without it, even killing Wei Ming Qing would not be a satisfactory end.

He passed through the various parts of the city. Many people were hiding within their own residences, eyeing the shield that was being broken down with fear. The moment the shield crumbled, hell would await the citizens of the inner city.

There was nobody along the way, thus, he was able to infiltrate the most lavish-looking building within the city.

The layout of the center was different from other places, as there were many elite soldiers standing guard, keeping an alert lookout for their surroundings. Even Yue Zhong would not be able to sneak in without a problem.

"No distractions eh? Let me create one for you guys!!"

He observed the surroundings carefully, and with a thought, a Reaper appeared out of nowhere.

The moment the Reaper appeared, it began to unleash carnage, as countless laser and electromagnetic beams were fired out like rain, aiming for the clueless City Guards.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

With the explosions, many of the City Guards were blown to bits by the intense firepower.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!"

Sounds of alarm rang throughout the Capital, as elites poured out from everywhere, launching attacks on the Reaper.

Initially, a single Reaper would be nothing to this inner city that was installed with countless automated defenses. Just a single weapon would be able to reduce this Reaper into a pile of scrap. However, in order to defend against the Super A.I., all automated equipment had been stopped. The elite experts had no choice but

to act, attacking the Reaper.

Since there was a deployment, there would be flaws in their formations and movements.

Yue Zhong took the opportunity when the attention of the city defenses was focused on the Reaper to quietly sneak into the crowd, entering the city center.

"Which general are you under?"

Barely moments after Yue Zhong sneaked into the Imperial Capital, a Type 5 Battle Suit-wearing expert came over, flanked by 4 subordinates, as he barked out at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong began to exclaim in urgency and panic, "Sir! I have something to report to the superiors!! I discovered that our General is a pawn of the 4 Great Clans. He's chasing after me!!"

The Type 5 expert frowned and got closer as he barked loudly, "What?! Calm down!! Who's your General?! With me around, he would not be able to hurt you."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with fear as he stared past the expert and pointed, "He's there!! He's right behind you!!"

The heart of the Type 5 expert turned cold and he promptly turned around, only to discover nothing.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly as he smacked down viciously on the back of his head.

Caught defenseless, the Type 5 expert fainted.

"Commander!!"

Seeing their own general being knocked out by Yue Zhong, the 4 soldiers exclaimed out in shock.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed again, as he sent out his Third Order Art of Fear, and an intense Spiritual wave slammed into the 4 soldiers.

Although the Third Order Art of Fear was insufficient to scare

those 4 Type 4 experts to death, it was enough to cause them to falter.

In that instant, the 4 Type 4 experts regained their consciousness, only to discover Yue Zhong had disappeared. Behind them, 4 of his clones smacked out at their heads, knocking them out.

Relying on sneak attacks to take down this 5 experts, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief and sent out a Type 5 Puppet Rune, and 4 Type 4 Puppet Runes into the brains of these 5 experts.

If he did not manage to deal with this 5 in the shortest possible time, he would likely be swarmed by other enemies. The best case scenario would be for him to flee then.

After Yue Zhong shook them awake, the Type 5 expert, called Niu Qing, saluted him respectfully, "Niu Qing greets Master!!"

Yue Zhong ordered, "Bring me to where the central computer is."  
"Yes!"

Niu Qing replied and led Yue Zhong together with the 4 subordinates deeper into the palace.

Along the way, Yue Zhong caught sight of many beautiful women, they were the palace maids. Currently, they were all having expressions of fear and uncertainty, some even sobbing.

Once the palace was broken into, their fates would be extremely miserable.

"Niu Qing, why are you here?"

After a hundred meters in, another Type 5 expert wearing a Type 5 Battle Suit appeared in front of Niu Qing and questioned him.

Niu Qing barked out, "Zhang Hua, I'm under the orders of his Lordship Wei He to bring men and guard the central computer. Stand aside! If anything were to happen, you will not be able to bear the consequences!!"

Zhang Hua frowned and immediately opened a path. However, he grumbled, "Isn't it time to provide reinforcements outside? How come we still have to defend the central computer? Truly a useless silk pants who cannot see the big picture."

Wei He was Wei Ming Qing's blood brother, however, he only knew to play and enjoy life, a silk pants who was infamous. However, he was truly loyal to the Emperor, thus he was given some authority to command troops.

While Zhang Hua cursed Wei He for his stupidity, military orders were absolute, hence he did not dare impede Niu Qing.

Along the way, Yue Zhong finally saw for himself how big the inner city was. They had come across a total of 19 Type 5 experts. When those experts heard Niu Qing's excuse, they all allowed him passage. Military orders had to be obeyed, thus they did not dare to stop them for too long.

After passing countless alleys and walking over 2km underground, they finally came to an area which was where the central computer was kept.

Only to see a huge pillar that stood in the middle, covered in countless runes and blood vessel-like tubes. There were 5 Type 5 Nuclei inserted in the huge pillar, carved with mysterious engravings. This was the central computer that controlled everything in the Capital.

Without Bai Yi's existence, this central computer could control countless equipment and weapons, quelling all uprising with ease.

# Chapter 891: Earth Manipulation!

---

Yue Zhong then issued a command to Bai Yi, "Immediately retrieve all information from the central computer."

"Yes!"

Bai Yi responded and her golden wires stretched out from the handheld tablet, inserting into the central computer.

As the wires entered the central computer, bright alarms blared out all over the city.

"Type-1 Alarm!! What's wrong with the central computer?"

2 Type 5 experts at the entrance of the imperial city whirled around, eyeing the tunnel behind them with shock. In front of them, the Reaper had already been obliterated under their efforts.

The Reapers could display a strength that was superior to Type 5 Divine Warriors. However, when facing 2 Type 5 experts together, it still ended up as scrap metal.

As Yue Zhong heard the alarms, his brows furrowed, "What's going on?"

Bai Yi swiftly replied, "There was a security feature installed in the central computer. Everyone within the city has heard it, and the nearest Type 5 Divine Warriors have begun to act. According to my estimations, they will reach our location in roughly 3 minutes and 20 seconds. The rest of the Type 5 experts are also making their way over."

Yue Zhong gave an order, "Immediately cut off the tunnel access, and activate all automatic defenses to target those Type 5 experts."

"All automatic weapons had been disconnected, there's no way of controlling them."

Since Yue Zhong's trump card Bai Yi had been discovered, the enemy had made the necessary adjustments to counter him.

It was because of this that Yue Zhong was not willing to reveal his Super A.I. secret back at the 1st Prison.

Yue Zhong's gaze narrowed, and he made a decision, "In that case, impede them as much as possible, and retrieve all information as fast as you can. Use the central computer to destroy the defense protocols and systems."

"Yes!"

Receiving Yue Zhong's order, Bai Yi quickly proceeded to carry it out.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

At that instant, a number of alloy doors suddenly slammed down in the tunnels, blocking the Type 5 experts from advancing.

"Break for me!"

A Type 5 expert saw the door that slammed in front of him and bellowed in rage. The Battle Spear in his hands gathered energy, and slammed into the door, piercing it directly.

A number of Type 5 experts brought their subordinates and rushed in, as though crazed, expending their strength without any care for their own bodies.

The central computer was important to the Capital, without it, their defense systems would crumble right before their eyes.

Hong!! Hong!!

Countless missiles slammed into the energy shield covering the inner city, causing it to deform as ripples spread out more violently.

It was because of this energy shield that the forces outside the city were helpless, unable to push in.

All of a sudden, the energy shield shuddered slightly and disappeared.

Wei Ye was shocked when he saw the energy shield disappear, as he lost his cool and shouted, "What's going on?! Why did the energy shield disappear? Our resources are still plenty!! Why?!"

Despair flashed across the eyes of the various City Guards.

The next moment, the guided Energy Missiles slammed into the city wall, blasting various parts, causing many City Guards to die in the resulting explosions.

The damage of the guided Energy Missiles was truly terrifying. Having experienced it, many City Guards fled for cover.

Without the protection of the energy barrier, without the support of the central computer, the situation of the inner city became extremely bleak. Many guided Energy Missiles fell upon the inner city, blasting out many large holes, killing numerous City Guards along with the destruction of the buildings.

After firing over a hundred rounds of missiles, the 4 Great Clans stopped firing and began sending the troops in.

Every single missile would require 5 Type 3 Mutant Beast nuclei, as well as the materials and human resources, to manufacture. Even the 4 Great Clans did not have so many in reserves. They had to store some to deal with unforeseen circumstances.

The City Guards might be truly exceptional in their abilities, however, hiding within the inner city, and suffering blows after blows, their advanced technology disabled, in the end, they had become disadvantaged.

Under the cover of the Reapers and heavy assault helicopters, the rebels continued to surge in, advancing further in.

However, inside the Capital, there were many other powerful experts. They clashed with the rebel troops, slaughtering the rebels as best as they could.

There were even some City Guards that charged through the ranks of the rebel soldiers, causing carnage and mayhem.

However, without the heavy weaponry and support of the automatic defense systems, no matter how outstanding they were, they would be bombarded by the rain of firepower. Within seconds, they were turned to sieves.

At the center of the Imperial Palace, a Type 5 expert had appeared in the tunnel nearest to the central computer, together with his 4 subordinates.

"Retreat!!"

The moment Type 5 expert appeared in the tunnel, his pupils narrowed and he hollered. He could see a Reaper stationed at the entrance.

The concentrated beams of laser and electromagnetic beams fell upon the Type 5 expert and his 4 subordinates.

Faced with the barrage of firepower, the 4 Type 4 experts did not manage to evade in time and were instantly shredded into pieces. 2 of them died instantly, while the other 2 fell, before being finished by the other shots.

At the other end of the tunnel, the Reaper stood there like an invincible entity.

The Type 5 expert roared out in fury, "Damn it, who the hell are you?!"

In that narrow tunnel, the Type 5 expert would not be able to pass through without getting injured. If he was not careful, he could end up like his subordinates.

Yue Zhong glanced at Bai Yi, still engrossed in her task in retrieving the information, and replied indifferently, "I'm Yue Zhong. Who are you?!"

In response, the Type 5 expert barked out, "Yue Zhong, I'm Wang Jiang He, the Vice-Commander of the Emperor Guards. I do not know how you got in here. However, you have no way out! There are also another 20 Type 5 experts rushing here now!! Once our

men are here, even if you have wings, it'll be hard for you to leave!! If you surrender to us now, not only will we forgo all that has happened, we can even promise you riches!! It's not a problem to become royalty as well!!"

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "I know, there are many experts. All the better, let me gift you guys a present."

Wang Jiang He had a very bad feeling as he asked, "What gift?"

Yue Zhong ignored him and looked towards Bai Yi.

The last streams of data flashed out of Bai Yi's eyes, as she spoke up, "Download complete. All the information has been retrieved."

"Good! Time for us to go."

Yue Zhong chuckled, and pulled out a Level 3 Skill Book, Earth Manipulation, as he tapped it on himself. With a bright flash, a new bronze rune appeared in his sea of knowledge.

Yue Zhong had come a long way back on Earth. He had plenty of skill books with him. He had a number of the Earth Manipulation skill book, it was just that he had never used them, hence he kept them in his storage.

The moment the rune took form, a huge amount of life force surged into the rune, transforming it, causing more engravings to appear.

"Congratulations on learning the Earth Manipulation skill."

"Congratulations, your Earth Manipulation has been raised to the Second Order."

A number of notifications rang out. With the life force he absorbed from killing experts, the new skill had instantly reached the Second Order stage.

Yue Zhong leaped up once, jumping on top of the huge pillar. He then sent a powerful fist smashing into the glass, destroying it. He then retrieved the 5 Type 5 Nuclei and kept them in his storage

ring.

After taking them, he pulled out his Electromagnetic Cannon and fired twice into the ceiling, blasting 2 large holes. He then jumped lightly, grabbing onto one of them with his arm. Pushing the Earth Manipulation ability, the earth split apart, revealing a huge tunnel.

He flipped and twirled into the crack, continuously pushing the ability to split the earth to create a tunnel for himself. The puppet Niu Qing also followed behind, as they both disappeared quickly.

Hong!

Following a loud explosion, the Reaper that Yue Zhong left behind was finally destroyed by 5 Type 5 experts working together. They hurried into the hall.

"Shit! We were late, he escaped!!"

Seeing the large fissure, Wang Jiang He and the other 4 had ugly expressions.

"Not good! Evacuate!!"

His gaze fell upon the numerous remote-controlled Energy Bombs and he cried out.

# Chapter 892: Invincible Wei Ming Qing!

---

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The various remote-controlled bombs planted in the hall went off, consuming the 5 Type 5 experts.

The high-tech, sci-fi pillar that was the central computer was also obliterated in an instant.

Some distance away from the Imperial Palace, the ground suddenly split apart. Yue Zhong jumped out from within, his complexion pale as he gasped for breath.

Casting the Earth Manipulation ability constantly had taken a toll on his Spirit and Stamina, causing him to be in an exhausted state.

As he breathed hard, he thought to himself, "Thankfully I've become a Type 5 expert. Otherwise, I would have been buried within the earth. This time, it was truly risky. It was not as easy to traverse underground as I thought."

There was a limit to a person's strength, even a Type 5 Warrior was not omnipotent.

After recovering, Yue Zhong dashed into a small and dark alley, eyeing the main part of the Imperial Palace, "Heh! That was just an appetizer. The real present is about to be delivered!"

At the same time, the missile pads of the 4 Great Clans opened, firing multiple guided Energy Missiles, shooting for the center of the city.

Hong! Hong!

Without the energy shield to defend, the numerous missiles slammed into the city center, causing a devastating effect.

The beautiful city center was blasted into pieces under the multiple explosions, buildings crumbling everywhere.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief.

There had been over 20 Type 5 experts within. Each of them was wearing a Type 5 Battle Suits and were monstrous existences. If they took part in the battle, they would be able to slaughter thousands with ease. If they could all be wiped out with the energy missiles, that would be the best.

Wei Ming Qing's brother Wei He was too stupid, keeping the 20-odd Type 5 experts within the palace to ensure his safety. It was a waste of their abilities.

These Type 5 experts were the best blades, not shields. Offense was their forte. If they had to defend, their flesh bodies could not possibly withstand the effects and damage of the missiles.

"Wei Ming Qing is dead!! Surrender and be spared!!"

"Wei Ming Qing is dead!! Surrender and be spared!!"

"..."

Seeing the city center turn to dust, the rebels began to holler as they charged at the City Guards.

"Surrender!! I surrender!!"

"..."

Seeing the City center being destroyed, many of the City Guard lost their nerves, their countenances pale. Many of them abandoned their weapons and surrendered immediately. Without an object of idolization, they did not know what else to fight for.

"Your Majesty!!"

"Long live Your Majesty!!"

"..."

Many other City Guards lost all rationality and with despair in their eyes, they charged forth in a suicidal fashion, battling till they died.

The tides of the battle were surging in the favor of the rebels.

At this time, from a lake about 3km behind the city center, a large water pillar shot towards the skies. A powerful expert emerged from the water, his hair floating about, as his body emitted a powerful bloodlust. His features were extraordinary, his countenance overbearing.

This middle-aged man took a look at the scenario in front of him, with a flash, he appeared on top of a building in the center of the battlefield in barely 5 seconds. He looked down with an aloof and disdainful gaze, declaring coldly, "This Seat is here. You commoners dare to rebel, aren't you afraid that This Seat will eradicate all 9 generations of your families?"

This person, who was covered in thick bloodlust, was the Emperor of Cloud Region, Wei Ming Qing.

"Is that a Type 6 Divine Warrior?" Yue Zhong hid in a corner, quietly assessing the Emperor of Cloud Region. His heart beat faster with alarm, as a strong sense of danger arose in his heart. He could tell that if he were to face this Wei Ming Qing in combat, he would likely be killed in an instant.

"Your Majesty!!"

"It's His Majesty!!"

"His Majesty lives!!! Kill all traitors!!"

"..."

Wei Ming Qing's words were filled with an authority, resounding throughout the area, causing everyone to hear his voice.

When he appeared, the devastated City Guards instantly regained their morale, as they launched a swift counterattack.

The rebels saw Wei Ming Qing and their eyes were filled with fear, their fighting spirit sinking.

Wei Ming Qing had ruled Cloud Region for over 20 years, his rule

struck deep in everyone's hearts. If it was not for this period of his insanity, in the past 20 years, he would still be referred to as a great emperor. Facing this emperor, many of the rebels were shaken.

One Type 4 expert barked out in a clear voice, "Wei Ming Qing, you've fallen to the dark side, killing innocents. Millions of people have died because of you! Today shall be the day you die!!"

"What a joke! The entire Cloud Region is mine! You are all my subjects! If this Seat wants anyone to die, that person has to die. Those million refugees were just lowly peasants, exchanging their lives for this Seat's progress is an honor for them! You ants, you dare to revolt?! This seat will eradicate all 9 generations of your families. Before that, all you traitors will be dealt with right now!!"

Wei Ming Qing's eyes flashed with a vicious light as he barked out in anger. In a flash, his entire body was covered in a thick fog of blood and he charged right into the midst of the rebels.

The moment he entered their ranks, the rebels were swept up in the blood mist, twisting and shrieking as they were sucked dry.

The thick blood mist covered a region of over 100m, with his speed of Mach-2, in a single pounce, there was a trail of human corpses.

The Type 4 expert eyed the incoming blood mist, his body glowing brightly. He thrust out with his Battle Spear viciously, as a beam of energy shot into the blood mist.

However, it was to no avail, as the blood mist continued to spread towards the expert, enveloping him.

In a breath, the blood mist continued forward, while leaving behind a corpse with a look of despair on his face.

The rebel forces continued to fire out lasers and electromagnetic beams at the blood mist. However, all they did was to pass through the mist, not doing anything to it.

Each time the mist swept past the rebel troops, more soldiers would be sucked dry of their blood.

"Flee!!"

"Help!!"

"Save me!!"

"..."

Seeing such a desolate scene, the originally low morale of the rebel forces crumbled. Many of the soldiers abandoned their equipment and were fleeing in all directions, escaping from the terrifying blood mist.

Yue Zhong looked at the blood mist, his heart full of shock, "What the hell?! Is this the might of a Type 6 expert? This is too sick!!"

Even someone as strong as Yue Zhong would have to evade when faced with over hundreds of thousands of rebel soldiers. He could also rely on assassination tactics to deal with individual soldiers. It was impossible to do what Wei Ming Qing was doing, clearing over 30,000 single-handedly.

Right as the rebels were breaking down, a number of Reapers appeared, their flaps opening, and they fired numerous targeting missiles at the blood mist.

"Reapers!! Right on time!! Let's see how this Seat takes care of you!! Hahahaha!!"

From within the mist, Wei Ming Qing's maniacal laughter rang out. The countless drops of blood shot towards the missiles, directly slamming into them and causing them to explode.

As the blood mist surged forward, it enveloped the Reapers.

With a bright flash, all the Reapers channeled out an energy shield to defend against the blood mist.

Wei Ming Qing appeared from inside the mist, sending his fists

pummeling the shields.

His fists were like sledgehammers, slamming into the shield, causing it to deform. It almost collapsed immediately.

However, the shield managed to hold on, after all, the technology wouldn't be so weak as to allow a Type 6 Divine Warrior to destroy it in one hit.

Earlier, the Reaper that Yue Zhong had sent to delay the Type 5 experts had been destroyed only after they fought with all their might. Before the energy shield collapsed, they had no means of destroying it.

"Truly the strongest weapon of war in our Cloud Region, even this Seat cannot break it easily! However, this Seat is invincible! With my strength, break for me!!"

Wei Ming Qing roared out with laughter, sending one more punch, and the blood around his congealed into a sharp sword that pierced through the shield.

Under the relentless assault, the shield finally shattered, and the Reaper was sliced into multiple parts.

"Hahaha!! This Seat is invincible! Those who oppose me shall die!!"

Wei Ming Qing laughed like a demon, continuing to obliterate the Reapers as he passed by them. With each fist of his, the blood would surround him and destroy the shield, before cutting them up into scrap metal.

Yue Zhong saw the rate of destruction Wei Ming Qing was causing, his heart running cold, "Peak-Type 6! This monster should be at the peak of the Type 6 realm if I'm not wrong!!"

# Chapter 893: Massacre!

---

Each time the blood mist killed an enemy, it seemed to grow slightly more. It was a terrifying sight.

Many of the rebel soldiers were turned into emaciated corpses, at the same time, the Reapers that they held hope in were being desecrated by Wei Ming Qing. This caused them to collapse totally.

The rebel forces had been able to invade the inner city because of the Reapers. The moment those Reapers were destroyed, the soldiers had no fighting spirit left.

In the skies, the other trump card of the rebel forces were the heavy assault helicopters. They started to drop energy missiles at the blood mist.

Those powerful missiles could blast a Type 6 expert to pieces, this was one of the measures that Cloud Region used to kill the High-Grade Dino-Generals.

The missiles had just been fired, when the blood mist below suddenly burst out, turning into blood drops that defied gravity, shooting towards the incoming missiles.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The missiles that could obliterate an entire building detonated, while the blood mist withdrew and shrank back.

"Assault helicopters? Hmph! You think that just because you're in the air, this Seat will not be able to do anything? Go to hell!!"

From the blood mist, there was a powerful rumble. The massive blood mist shrank and condensed in itself, before suddenly shooting multiple blood arrows upwards, piercing towards one of the helicopters.

Shatter!

The blood arrows pierced the cockpit and penetrated the head of

the pilot as he stared in despair and shock.

The next moment, a larger blood arrow shot out from the body of the pilot, who had already turned into a dried corpse, as he slumped in his seat.

Having lost the pilot, the assault helicopter wobbled before descending towards the ground. In a loud explosion and fiery blaze, the helicopter blew up and consumed hundreds of rebels.

After destroying one assault helicopter, the blood mist continued to sweep towards the other helicopters, repeating the pattern of piercing the pilots and sucking them dry. The assault helicopters would then crash.

Across the entire battlefield, only the assault helicopters with the guided Energy Missiles could pose a threat to the blood demon-like Wei Ming Qing.

As the various helicopters were being destroyed, the rest quickly raised their altitude, ascending higher into the skies.

At a distance, inside a command center, as the commanders looked at how Wei Ming Qing was rampaging across the battlefield, everyone's faces were ugly.

A middle-aged man in a suit stared at the demon-like Wei Ming Qing, his eyes narrowing, "We have to stop him!! If he continues to rampage, we will all die here!"

This middle-aged man in a suit was called Dou Hua, one of the elite clansmen of the Dou Clan. He was also one of the leading generals of the rebellion.

Dou Hua commanded the private forces of the Dou Clan, before the rebellion, he had just pretended to be an unimportant manager of a small company. Due to the sudden events, he did not have time to change, directly joining the fray.

Zhang Qiu Yan, a beautiful and sultry woman beside him, had a narrowed gaze as well, "That's right, he's insane!! If he were to

turn the tides, all of us would die!"

Although many of the upper echelons of the city had joined in the rebellion, there were others who still stood by Wei Ming Qing, while some chose to sit on the fence and wait to see what would happen.

The moment the assault on the inner city failed, Wei Ming Qing would be able to banish every single party involved in the rebellion to hell.

Although Wei Ming Qing had turned extremely cruel, he had governed for many years. Many subjects were still loyal to him, many city lords at his beck and call. If he were to gain the upper hand, it would be nigh-impossible for the rebels to turn the tides back.

"Seems like it's only us to stop him. Let's go!"

One muscular expert in a Type 5 Battle Suit spoke out before he charged out towards Wei Ming Qing's position valiantly.

8 other Type 5 experts exchanged looks and followed right after.

Right now, facing the strange and terrifying blood mist, there were no weapons of war that could stand up to that. The only way was to rely on those Type 5 experts who could utilize the Type 5 Battle Suits.

Ordinary people were basically like ants in front of Wei Ming Qing's blood mist, the moment they were enveloped in it, they would lose their lives.

The leader of the group of Type 5 experts appeared in front of Wei Ming Qing in a few breaths. With a wave of his hand, a powerful freezing energy emitted out from his hands, freezing the drops of blood.

As the frost met the blood, part of the blood mist turned to huge chunks of ice and fell to the ground.

The seemingly endless blood mist began to shrink at a rate visible to the naked eye.

"Zhao Chun, it's you! Truly the one known as the top Ice user. Impressive! However, in front of this Seat, you're just a slightly stronger ant. This seat is the true invincible existence of this world. I have already broken through to the Type 6 Divine Warrior realm, soon to reach the Type 7 that no one in history has ever reached before. At that time, this world would be a toy in my hand. Why oppose me? How dare you guys oppose me??"

Following a bellow of rage, Wei Ming Qing reformed and stepped out of the blood mist. His eyes were bloodshot, his entire body covered in the blood that seemed to have a life of its own. He truly looked like a demon, emitting an overbearing and terrifying aura.

At that instant, Wei Ming Qing seemed to broke through the air, passing by the freezing field. He appeared right in front of Zhao Chun, his right hand like a claw. It was wrapped in a thick, bloody aura that aimed for Zhao Chun's head.

That claw was simple, yet its might reached an unimaginable level. Zhao Chun could only stare wide-eyed at the incoming claw, unable to react!

Zhao Chun could smell the heavy blood scent that could cause a person to vomit.

At that moment, another expert wielding a Battle Spear came thrusting her spear at an extremely quick speed towards Wei Ming Qing.

If Wei Ming Qing forcefully continued to attack Zhao Chun, he would be pierced by that spear.

"Fool!! This Seat is invincible!! Those who oppose me will die!!"

Wei Ming Qing glanced at the incoming spear and bellowed in rage. He suddenly disappeared from his location, bringing a strong bloody scent with him as he appeared beside that small-sized

expert. He transformed into a huge blood mist and surrounded that expert.

The face of the small expert fell, as she retreated explosively.

However, the huge blood mist continued to swirl towards her, directly enveloping her.

"Chen Qing!!!"

Seeing this, another Type 5 expert that had just arrived let out a heart-wrenching scream, the Type 5 Nuclei on his back glowing brightly. The strength of the Type 5 Mutant nuclei instantly pushed his power to the max, causing him to take a half-step into the Type 6 realm. With that strength, his feet lit up and he turned into a beam of light that charged right for the blood mist.

Just then, the small figure shot out from within the blood mist, blasting towards the almost-Type 6 expert.

The expert faltered and grabbed the small figure with care, exclaiming in worry, "Qing'er, are you alright?!"

The petite figure trembled slightly before suddenly exploding. A sharp blood arrow shot out, slicing the near-Type 6 expert into multiple parts.

Witnessing this gory scene, the remaining 7 Type 5 experts felt a chill in their hearts. The strength of Wei Ming Qing was seriously too overpowered. In just a breath, he had killed 2 Type 5 Divine Warriors in succession. If he were to continue on like this, they would all likely turn into corpses.

One of the Type 5 Divine Warriors turned pale, his entire body trembling. He shouted as he turned and fled.

Not everyone was able to face death with courage. Many would crumble under the pressure.

"Wei Ming Qing, you bastard, die!!"

A Type 5 expert channeled his Type 5 Nuclei, pushing his power

to its limits. He then roared in fury and fired a bright-yellow flame dragon towards the blood mist.

Due to the blood mist occupying a large area, the flame dragon managed to burn parts of the blood mist.

"Bastard!! You dare to act against this Seat, go to hell!"

A loud bellow of rage resounded from within the blood mist. There was a surge of a bloody scent as the mist swarmed towards the Type 5 expert.

In response, the Type 5 expert fired out countless flames in a frenzy, burning huge amounts of blood.

Under the burning flames, the blood mist was getting reduced. If this Type 5 expert was given enough time, it was likely that he could incinerate all of the blood mist.

Suddenly, a figure shot out from within the mist, grabbing the head of the Type 5 expert and wrenched with strength. The entire head and the connecting spine was dragged out and torn from the body, fresh blood splattering everywhere. Another Type 5 expert had died.

# Chapter 894: Killing Wei Ming Qing!

---

At that moment when the flame-attribute Type 5 expert was killed, another Type 5 expert had a cold glint in his eyes. He waved his hands, and sent a powerful tornado out, forcefully separating Wei Ming Qing and the blood mist that seemed to possess a life of its own.

Wei Ming Qing was able to make use of his Type 6 strength to trample over thousands, as well as his invincibility, was partly due to the blood mist.

If it was not for the blood mist covering Wei Ming Qing's true location, and deflecting countless attacks, even if he was a peak-Type 6 expert, he could not possibly rampage through without some injuries.

Zhao Chun continued to activate his own ability, freezing large chunks of the blood mist into blocks. As long as the blood mist could be separated and sealed, then his combat power would be limited.

2 other close-combat specialist charged forth with their Battle Spears thrusting out. There was a terrifying energy collected at the tip blasting towards them.

Another one had the ability to manipulate gravity. His eyes turned bloodshot as he channeled it, enveloping Wei Ming Qing, causing his body to sink.

"Scram!!"

Wei Ming Qing glanced at the 2 Type 5 experts with the Battle Spears and sent out his palms enveloped with the bloody radiance towards them.

The 2 Type 5 experts thrust out, the powerful spears blasting through the bloody hands, slamming into Wei Ming Qing.

Wei Ming Qing's face turned steely, as the blood mist gathered

around him, turning into a shield.

The 2 energy thrust slammed into the shield, easily piercing it. They penetrated through his body, revealing 2 bone-deep wounds.

However, at that moment, the blood mist suddenly flashed past them and chopped off their heads.

"Audacious!!! What guts to actually harm this Seat!! This Seat will slaughter all 9 generations of your family!! 10 even!!"

Wei Ming Qing let out a roar like an enraged beast. The wounds he suffered were healing at an incredible speed. All of a sudden, dozens of blood arrows shot out from his body, piercing towards the remaining 3 Type 5 Divine Warriors.

Zhao Chun's face fell. He swiftly channeled his energy, as an unbelievable cold energy emitted out from him, causing even his skins to be covered with icicles.

The sharp blood arrows pierced through the icicles, giving the ice a bloody, red hue.

The Type 5 Gravity Manipulation user, as well as the Wind Controller, were not as fortunate, their bodies instantly pierced by the dozens of blood arrows. Instantly, they were riddled with holes as their bodies were sucked dry of all blood.

The moment Wei Ming Qing got the upper hand, he laughed out loud maniacally, "Haha!! This Seat is invincible!! The world belongs to this Seat!! I will wipe out all your traitors!! Wipe out all your families and lineage!! Hahahaha!!"

As he was roaring with laughter, Yue Zhong appeared right in front of him like a flash of lightning, wearing his Type 5 Battle Suit.

Wei Ming Qing was a devil that was going to breakthrough to the Type 7 realm, and one who had killed too many innocents, Yue Zhong would not let him live.

Wei Ming Qing glanced at Yue Zhong and snorted coldly, "Peasant, die!!"

He and his blood mist had been separated by the Wind Controller earlier, and both lunged towards Yue Zhong. As long as Yue Zhong was caught in the blood mist, he would be sucked dry.

Right at this time, a bright red Devil Flame encased Yue Zhong. The moment the blood mist got too close, it was incinerated into nothing.

"You have some ability, but in front of this Seat, you're just a small ant!"

Wei Ming Qing glared coldly at Yue Zhong while pointed out with his palm. 10 bright red beams that could pierce even the armor of Type 5 Battle Suits shot out, slamming into Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had disappeared from his location in a split second.

"Illusion? Where's the main body?"

Wei Ming Qing looked at the scattered clone of Yue Zhong, an uneasy feeling creeping up his heart. He chose to back away quickly. His speed was simply amazing, to the point where some Dino Warriors know that they were not a match for him. That's no way to maintain the struggle.

As long as he could create some Wei Ming Qing could rejoin with his blood mist, and they could deal with Yue Zhong easier.

The moment Wei Ming Qing moved, he suddenly sank, as though his back just gained an additional ten thousand jin.

Yue Zhong appeared mysteriously behind Wei Ming Qing, thrusting out a spear viciously.

Wei Ming Qing's eyes finally had some hint of panic. He waved his huge hands, slapping the Battle Spear away. The might of the Type 6 Divine Warrior exploded out.

At that moment, Yue Zhong let go of the spear.

Wei Ming Qing's full force slammed into the spear, knocking it over thousands of meters.

Yue Zhong put all his weight into the collision, slamming into Wei Ming Qing like a thunderbolt. His Strength exploded out, forcing the Type 6 Divine Warrior to be knocked flying.

When Yue Zhong crashed into Wei Ming Qing, the insane Emperor felt his inner organs tremble, and he almost threw up. Although he was a Type 6 Divine Warrior, in terms of physique, he was inferior to Yue Zhong who had the Third Order Body of Steel. After all, humans were one of the weaker intelligent species.

"This fellow is weak in close combat!"

The moment Yue Zhong determined that fact, he shot forward and his entire right fist was covered in Devil Flames, punching towards Wei Ming Qing. He wanted to take down this peak-Type 6 Divine Warrior in the shortest possible time. Otherwise, once Wei Ming Qing managed to put some distance between them, he would suffer the consequences.

As the Emperor of Cloud Region, Wei Ming Qing seldom needed to act personally in the past. Although he was strong, his close combat skills were weak. He was basically incomparable with Yue Zhong who had countless experience.

Yue Zhong's right fist slammed into Wei Ming Qing's stomach, and the powerful force coupled with the Devil Flames blasted out, enveloping his entire body.

"Ah!!!"

Under the intense burning of the Devil Flame, Wei Ming Qing screamed out in agony. A thick blood mist suddenly came out from his body, trying to extinguish the Devil Flames.

Yue Zhong's Devil Flame was at the Fourth Order stage, there was nothing it could not burn. The moment it lit, even a Type 5 Divine Warrior would not be able to extinguish the flames easily.

The blood mist continued to churn around Wei Ming Qing, trying to put out the flames while enveloping Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong stared at Wei Ming Qing, his fists raining blows on Wei Ming Qing mercilessly. Under the enhancement of his Dark Dou Qi as well as the Type 5 Battle Suit, every single punch could penetrate even an armored vehicle. However, against Wei Ming Qing, he could not punch through.

Wei Ming Qing was breathless and could not recover from the constant attacks by Yue Zhong. He then opened his mouth, firing a long arrow-like blood mist towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong grabbed hold of Wei Ming Qing, twisting his body and slammed him down towards the ground.

When the blood arrow pierced through Yue Zhong's Devil Flames, it slammed into his shoulder, penetrating through the Type 5 Battle Suit, before being stopped by the Type 5 Mutant Sea Snake scale-armor.

He grabbed hold of Wei Ming Qing once more, kicking viciously at his waist. With his immense strength, the kick crushed the gonads of Wei Ming Qing.

"AH!!! IT HURTS!! IT HURTS!!"

Wei Ming Qing screamed in pain, even if he was a Type 6 expert, the precious family jewels of anybody would be a weak spot. Despite his strength, he could not help but scream.

At this time, the separated blood mist swarmed over, enveloping the both of them.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, his Devil Flames blazing upwards in a pillar. The blood mist started to burn up in loud crackling sounds, without any means to get close. He then grabbed Wei Ming Qing, and brought his knee up in a cruel fashion, slamming into Wei Ming Qing's bloody waist.

Being attacked at the same spot over and over again, Wei Ming

Qing's face was contorted in pain, his body trembling non-stop.

Yue Zhong continued to rain blows on Wei Ming Qing's head, his strength and Devil Flames exploding out.

Another mass of blood mist seeped out of Wei Ming Qing's body, congealing to block the Devil Flames.

Yue Zhong seemed to ignore everything and just continued to slam his fists viciously, turning Wei Ming Qing's head into a messy, bloody, pulp.

After dozens of blows, the blood mist suddenly dissipated, while Wei Ming Qing's head was incinerated into ash by the Devil Flames.

A huge orb of life force was absorbed into Yue Zhong's body.

The tyrant of Cloud Region died just like that at Yue Zhong's hands.

It was not that Wei Ming Qing was weak, but his experience in close combat was too lacking. As the Emperor of the Cloud Region, he had no need to act at all. Due to that, the moment Yue Zhong got close, he did not know how to deal with it. In the end, he was taken out by the weaker Yue Zhong.

Of course, if it was not for the previous 9 Type 5 Divine Warriors that had sacrificed themselves to separate Wei Ming Qing and the blood mist, Yue Zhong would have died in an instant.

"Congratulations, you have gained +20 in all attributes!"

"Congratulations, you have gained +4 skill points to be allocated."

The pure life force entered Yue Zhong's body and he heard the 2 notifications.

After pondering a while, he chose to enhance the Dark Dou Qi, pushing it to the Fourth Order +3 stage.

The Devil Flame was extremely powerful in offense, while the Dark Dou Qi raised Yue Zhong's strength in all aspect. It was an

auxiliary skill, which boosted both his offense and defense. If he wanted to survive better, the Dark Dou Qi was more suitable.

Dou Hua stood on a podium, eyeing the imperial city coldly before giving a cold order, "Is Wei Ming Qing finally dead? Very good, in that case, Yue Zhong has no use to us as well. Convey my orders, shut down all the electronics with clones! Launch the first volley of missiles!!"

"Yes!"

One of the signal officers quickly left.

With that order passed, a number of 235mm cannons started adjusting their aim in a jungle about 4km away from the inner city.

Although most of Cloud Region made use of the central computers to adjust their weapons, the weapons could still be adjusted manually.

Bai Yi suddenly appeared in Yue Zhong's watch, sounding out an alarm, "Warning! Warning! The clones near the inner city have been shut down! Based on conjecture, there's an 89% chance that the rebel forces have turned on you."

Yue Zhong's heart turned cold as a strong sense of danger arose in his heart. He quickly activated his Bone-Encompassing Armor, with White Bones stepping out a void and transforming into a carapace around him.

The bone spikes propelled him off the ground, sending him about 300m into the air.

Hong! Hong! Hong!!

After 3 breaths, there were loud, earthshaking explosions within the inner city, destroying many of the structures and buildings.

The might of those Energy Cannons were extremely terrifying, it was likely that only the energy shield could have blocked that.

Even a Type 6 Divine Warrior would have found it hard to

survive that barrage of firepower.

Those 20 heavy cannons were another trump card prepared by the 4 Great Clans. They had originally intended to use it against Wei Ming Qing. However, with the flow of the battle changing, since Wei Ming Qing was dead, Yue Zhong became their next target to be eliminated.

The guided Energy Missiles required the central computer or an A.I. to control to fire it accurately. Whereas the heavy cannons just required the adjustment of angles and trajectories. Against Yue Zhong and his Super A.I., the heavy cannons were the best weapons to utilize.

White Bones' spikes were easily shattered by that explosion, and Yue Zhong started to descend like a heavy rock.

At this moment, Yue Zhong activated his Summon Tamed Beast skill. A void appeared, and Greenie shot out from it, picking Yue Zhong on its back.

Standing on top of Greenie, Yue Zhong swept a sharp gaze downwards, and immediately caught sight of Dou Hua and the rest in the command center.

Without the use of a computer, Dou Hua and the rest could only make use of a high vantage point to observe.

Yue Zhong patted Greenie's back, and it immediately shot towards them in a flash of green light.

Dou Hua caught sight of them, and a cold feeling crept up his heart as he roared out, "Attack!! Wipe him out!!"

# Chapter 895: Fallout!

---

The soldiers by Dou Hua's side immediately raised their guns to fire at Yue Zhong.

Bright laser and electromagnetic beams shot into the sky, turning into a net that threatened to engulf Greenie.

The might of those beams were truly powerful, even a Type 4 Mutant Beast might not be able to withstand them. However, while Greenie's body was large, its speed had reached Mach-2. It traversed 680m in a mere second, allowing it to evade those beams.

If the rebel forces had the central computer to help them, there was still a possibility of injuring Greenie. Without the calculation abilities, the ordinary soldiers had no way to catch Greenie's profound movements.

In just 4 seconds, Greenie flew above the command center with a strong gust. It opened its huge wings and send blades of winds at the rebel soldiers below.

Under the torrent of wind blades, many of the rebel soldiers were sliced up in multiple parts, their limbs flying everywhere. It looked like hell.

Yue Zhong leaped down lightly, appearing in front of Dou Hua who had a bitter look right now. He asked with a dark expression, "Why did you act against me?"

Dou Hua's face fell, gritting his teeth, he replied, "It's all a misunderstanding. We just wanted to make sure that Wei Ming Qing was killed thoroughly. You know that a Type 6 Divine Warrior is terrifying. If he left here, we will all die. Let me apologize to you here, this was a decision made by myself. If you want to kill, just kill me."

Yue Zhong looked at the stubborn Dou Hua who did not want to admit his mistake, and his eyes flashed coldly. The Type 4 Flame

Blade appeared in his hands, and he swung it down in a flash, severing Dou Hua's right arm. Blood splattered while Dou Hua's face contorted in agony.

Yue Zhong laughed coldly in response, "You think that I'll believe such an absurd lie? If I'm not wrong, you bastards had already been prepared against my A.I. and was looking for a chance to kill me. Burning the bridge after crossing the waters, what a crude method used by politicians."

Dou Hua's face twisted, he knew that the lie had been exposed, and roared out loud, "That's right! The Super A.I. in your hands is too dangerous to us! As long as you're alive, and you possess that, our countless equipment and central computers would be ineffective. You're a cancer to the entire Cloud Region. As long as you exist, the tech of Cloud Region would never improve. Only by killing you will we be able to improve by leaps and bounds. Why don't you kill yourself? For the sake of humanity, someone like you should just die!"

Inside the Imperial Capital, there were many guided Energy Bombs, Reapers, and other terrifying super-weapons. However, they all required the central computer to calculate the maximum effectiveness in firing them.

Since Yue Zhong had Bai Yi, it was possible for him to gain control over everything in the Capital. As long as he was still in the capital, the 4 Great Clans would not dare utilize any of the weapons. Their fates were basically in his hands.

This time, the 4 Great Clans could attack Wei Ming Qing because they had received Yue Zhong's help in controlling the Reapers and guided Energy Missiles. Whereas Wei Ming Qing's side had to suffer from the absence of a central computer. The 4 Great Clans would naturally not allow Yue Zhong to continue existing with them.

"As expected. Since you guys want to kill me, I will not show any

mercy either."

With a cold look, Yue Zhong shot forward and knocked Dou Hua unconscious. At the same time, his right hand glowed, as a single Type 2 Puppet Rune appeared and entered Dou Hua's head.

Dou Hua was then slapped awake, his previous grim expression replaced with a respectful one, "Greetings Master!!"

Yue Zhong pointed at him, handing several Puppet Runes over, "Set off with White Bones, gather your subordinates, turn them into Puppets."

Dou Hua replied respectfully, "Yes! Master!"

After that, Dou Hua retreated with White Bones.

Yue Zhong's killing intent did not subside, "Since you guys want to force my hand, don't blame me for being ruthless!" He then asked Bai Yi, "Where are the 4 fogeys?"

Bai Yi responded, "Master, there's no information. The enemy has already cut off all power, I can't triangulate their position."

Those Clan lords were also slippery heads; since they knew of Yue Zhong's power, they would not stay in a dangerous place.

Yue Zhong frowned and asked, "What's the situation of the battle outside the city?"

Bai Yi responded, "Before I lost connection with the copies, the 4 Great Clans was gaining the advantage. General Wei Shou had already died. The rest of the City Guards were also surrendering, only a few are still resisting."

The 4 Clan lords were not fools. It was precisely at the moment when they had broken in, where Yue Zhong's strength did not matter, that they chose to fall out with him.

Yue Zhong then jumped back onto Greenie, "Let's head to the outer city!"

Greenie flapped once and turned into a flash of green as it soared

towards the outer city.

Soon after, Yue Zhong came to the airspace above the battlefield. He looked down, only to find the soldiers of the 4 Great Clan sweeping the battlefield while thousands of captives were being led out of the city.

In some alleys, there were still bright flashes and sounds of conflicts.

Yue Zhong patted Greenie's back, "Go down!"

Greenie flapped once and shot down.

"That is!! Open fire!!! Kill it!!"

One officer belonging to the 4 Great Clans caught sight of Greenie and exclaimed loudly.

However, it was much too late. Yue Zhong leaped down from Greenie's back, and with a cold glint, the Black Tooth Blade in his hands slashed out. He darted through the 40-man unit like a specter.

The blade continued to dance, as blood splattered everywhere. In barely a few breaths, all of them had been killed.

"Strong!!"

The surrendered City Guards looked at Yue Zhong with shock.

"I'm Yue Zhong, the 4 Great Clans would definitely not let you people off because of your loyalty to Wei Ming Qing. If you want to live, grab your weapons and come with me. We shall attack their armory and wipe them out! If you don't mind dying, then just surrender."

With a point, 2 Reapers appeared out of thin air.

Seeing this, their eyes widened in shock. Although Cloud Region's technology was advanced, it was not to the stage where spatial technology could be used in the way Yue Zhong did. It was beyond anything that they knew.

A burly officer with a long scar across his face stood up and said, "Sir, those rebels have a Super A.I., if these 2 Reapers were to meet their A.I., there's a possibility of it being stolen."

Yue Zhong stared at the officer and spoke coldly, "The A.I. was mine, to begin with. From now on, they will be the ones unable to use their weapons."

"What?!"

When they heard this, the faces of all the City Guards changed. This time, the main reason why they had lost was that of the Super A.I., causing them to be helpless.

If it was not for the Super A.I., then even if all the rebel forces joined hands, it was impossible to defeat the City Guards with their superior technology and firepower.

Yue Zhong continued to ask aggressively, "Wei Ming Qing is already dead. Are you intending to continue to be loyal to a dead man? Or to fight for your own freedom and your comrades to wipe out the rebel troops?"

The officer stared at Yue Zhong with bloodshot eyes, "Since you stood with the 4 Great Clans, why betray them now?"

The gazes of the City Guards fell upon Yue Zhong, they were obviously full of suspicion as well.

Yue Zhong replied blandly, "They acted to kill me first. Don't tell me I can't defend myself and wait for them to kill me? Are you willing to join me or wait for them to kill you?!"

The officer stared at Yue Zhong and spoke, "I'm Chen Tai. I'm willing to serve you, but you must promise me this: If you win, you must ensure the safety of my brothers, and you cannot make us slaves or refugees."

The winner decided the rules, while the losers in Cloud Region suffered. They were either slaves or refugees, their descendants doomed to be the same.

When thinking about the possibility of suffering such a fate, the soldiers could not help but tremble.

Yue Zhong replied solemnly, "If we win, I will definitely not mistreat you all. As long as you follow me, you will definitely not become slaves or refugees."

Chen Tai then faced back and barked, "Fine! Brothers! Arm yourselves! Let's fight!"

The City Guards swiftly regained their fighting morale, and equipped themselves, before standing by Chen Tai's side.

Yue Zhong then led this troop towards the heavy weapons of the 4 Great Clans.

"Those are Reapers, why did they suddenly appear here?!"

"Shit! Those are Reapers!!"

"..."

The moment the rebel forces of the 4 Great Clans saw the 2 Reapers, their faces fell. The next moment, the 2 Reapers unleash carnage upon the soldiers, punching them all full of holes.

# Chapter 896: Reversal of Situation!

---

The moment the rebel forces were killed, Chen Tai and the rest quickly rushed over, picking up the equipment on the floor. They then took over the heavy weapons area.

Yue Zhong surveyed his surroundings, "You guys stand guard here. Quickly activate the systems for those weapons. One of you, come with me to reorganize the City Guards."

Chen Tai barked out, "Zuo Gang!"

One soldier came up and reported, "Yes! Captain!"

Chen Tai then said, "You take some men to defend this location. I will follow Sir Yue Zhong to regroup those Central City Guards!"

Zuo Gang responded, "Understood!"

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong grabbed Chen Tai, before channeling his Dark Dou Qi. He charged through the battlefield at a terrifying speed of Mach-2. In a few breaths, he disappeared from the view of everyone present.

Zuo Gang was filled with shock, "Strong!!"

He reigned his feelings in, before ordering the rest, "Quickly activate the systems for the heavy cannons."

The City Guards had dealt with the heavy weapons before, and since most of their power supply was just cut, and not destroyed, they were quickly able to restart the systems.

Yue Zhong quickly came to the frontlines with Chen Tai in tow. Over 2,000 Central City Guards had surrendered by then, and they were being herded towards a large field. Many electromagnetic cannons were stationed, while over 200 rebel soldiers of the 4 Great Clans were eyeing the City Guards coldly.

The moment there was any strange movements from those City

Guards, the electromagnetic cannons would punch them full of holes.

Hiding behind some cover, Chen Tai eyed the 2,000 City Guards with his fists clenched tight. His breathing became ragged, as he eyed Yue Zhong with a pleading look.

Yue Zhong looked back at him and nodded slightly. His pupils narrowing, the Fourth Order Dark Dou Qi enveloped his body. With a tap of his foot, Yue Zhong transformed into a black beam of light as he charged towards the 200 rebel forces.

In a few breaths, Yue Zhong had already reached their midst. He immediately activated his Third Order Art of Fear, and a powerful Spirit attack spread out with him at the center. The soldiers who were engulfed in the skill immediately passed out.

To Chen Tai, all he saw was a flash of black, and the 200 rebel soldiers suddenly crumpled to the ground, causing him to feel shocked.

After dealing with the 200 rebels, Yue Zhong reappeared. He then waved his hand casually, sending his Puppet Runes into each and every one of those fainted soldiers.

In order to conquer the city, Yue Zhong alone was not enough. He needed a troop to support him. After these soldiers were turned into puppets, while their will and combat strength suffered, they could help maintain order and defend locations. They could even be used as cannon fodder.

Chen Tai stood up and exclaimed at the top of his voice, "I'm Captain Chen Tai from the Central City Guards. This is Sir Yue Zhong! We're here to save you! If you don't want to be killed by these rebels, nor have your family and loved ones become slaves, then stand! Take up your weapons, and eradicate these damned rebels!!"

"He's Chen Tai! I recognize him!!"

"They have heavy firepower, how can we fight against them?!"

"..."

Hearing Chen Tai's words, the 2,000 City Guards fell into a state of panic, as many of them began to grumble and question.

Yue Zhong patted Chen Tai's shoulder and ordered, "I'll leave here to you. You'd better organize them properly."

Chen Tai nodded with a grim but excited look, "Yes! Sir!"

He had just been a captain of a 100-man unit in this battle. Yet now, he was suddenly tasked to be the leader of a 2,000-strong troop. This showed how much power Yue Zhong was entrusting him. He was naturally excited.

After handing the 2,000 City Guards to Chen Tai, Yue Zhong brought the 200 rebel soldiers with him as he continued forward.

The group advanced for a few hundred meters when they coincidentally came across a 500-man team.

The leader of the other group looked towards Yue Zhong's puppets and asked with a frown, "Which unit are you guys from?"

Yue Zhong did not waste any time with them. He shot into their midst like a specter, as a powerful spirit wave spread out, knocking out more than half of the soldiers.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

Amongst these soldiers, there was one outstanding one in terms of Spirit that was not too badly affected by Yue Zhong's attack. He immediately screamed out at the top of his lungs.

A cold blade flashed past the Spirit-based soldier, decapitating his head, directly killing the soldier.

However, it was too late, the moment the soldier shouted, the signal was already sent into the skies.

"Enemy? How come there would still be an enemy? Behind us no

less?"

The soldiers of the 4 Great Clans saw the signal and their faces fell.

The rebel forces that had almost defeated the City Guards regathered, and they made their way towards Yue Zhong and his men.

After countless intense battles, their numbers already reached 40,000. These troops were like a flow of metal that surged towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong tried wiping out 2 emergency reinforcement units, moving choosing to retreat.

The 40,000-strong army was not easy to deal with, as countless experts were inside. The moment he got caught among them, no matter how strong he was, he would be killed.

The seemingly-invincible Type 6 Divine Warrior Wei Ming Qing had still fallen at the hands of a few Type 5 Divine Warriors. If a strong person was not careful, it was possible to be killed by other weaker people that joined hands.

Facing the incoming wave of rebel soldiers, Yue Zhong sent the puppets towards some of the alleys and streets. They made use of the simple covers as they pulled out their weapons and began to fire at the rebel soldiers.

The rebel soldiers had to take out the puppets with care and caution before they could continue advancing.

Both sides engaged in an intense fight. Without the interference of heavy weapons, with the death of each Puppet soldier, a few rebel soldiers would be killed as well.

The 40,000 rebel soldiers quickly gathered, before separating into 8 paths. Each unit was about 4,000 or so, as they slowly surrounded Yue Zhong's position.

On a high ground, there was a general who was in military uniform, standing straight as he touched his small mustache slightly. He ordered with a cold glint in his eyes, "Attack! Destroy the enemy, leave no one alive!"

This general was called Chen Du, the commander of the force attacking the outer city. He had led the operations against the Central City Guards.

"Yes!"

With Chen Du's orders, the 8 troops quickly launched a fearsome attack towards the area where Yue Zhong was.

Based on Yue Zhong's current military force, any of the forces could easily wipe out Yue Zhong's troops.

Seeing the approaching 8 units, Chen Tai's eyes flashed with fear. However, he stood by Yue Zhong's side resolutely. They already had no way of retreat, nor surrender. The rebel forces would not let them off.

Yue Zhong stood his ground, eyeing the surging forces with a cold laugh, "Shall we start?"

His pupils narrowed as he ordered, "Fire the cannons!"

Bai Yi's eyes flashed with data, "Understood! Firing is beginning! Calculating location... Target set!"

At that instant, the heavy cannons that Yue Zhong managed to snatch began to adjust their angles, firing off a volley of shots.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

A bright flash went off in the sky, before landing on the ground. With each bright explosion, a huge number of soldiers would be obliterated, swallowed by the flames and devastation. There was no room for escape, and countless elite soldiers were turned to ash in seconds.

In a few breaths, everywhere Yue Zhong glanced, there were

barely a hundred rebel soldiers at every corner. The rest had already been annihilated.

This was the true, terrifying might of a Super A.I. combined with advanced technology.

Yue Zhong spoke coldly, "Convey my orders!! Kill our way out!!"

Chen Tai was moved as he replied, "Yes! Sir!!"

"Kill!! Kill!! Kill!! Brothers, let's slaughter our way out!!"

With enraged roars, Chen Tai brought the 2,000 City Guards out, rushing towards the rebel soldiers that outnumbered them.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

A number of huge, white explosions blasted in the midst of the rebel soldiers, enveloping them.

The morale of the rebel forces fell apart. Without any fighting spirit, they abandoned their armor, trampling over themselves.

Chen Du eyed the crumbling rebel forces and muttered in a daze, "How did it become like this? How did it become like this?! We were just gaining the advantage!! Why did we lose?! Why?!!"

One of the vice-commanders barked out, "General!! Get yourself together!! We have not lost yet! We still have a reserve troop. Do we send them to battle?!"

Chen Du was arrogant, but he was an exceptional general. Even when faced with such a minor character like Yue Zhong to him, he still kept the reserve troops, not deploying them.

He recovered quickly and passed down a flurry of orders, "Retreat!! Retreat immediately!! We don't have any heavy weapons, if we fight with him, it will only wear down our fighting strength. Evacuate the troops, employ guerilla tactics to counterattack!"

# Chapter 897: Occupying the Outer City!

---

Under Chen Du's orders, the 8,000 reserve troops quickly dispersed out into countless smaller units, making use of the terrain to begin their counterattack. These soldiers were made up of the most elite soldiers under Chen Du. With their resistance, Chen Tai's City Guards were forced to slow their advance.

Yue Zhong ordered, "Go, eradicate those who resist."

"Yes! Master!"

Under Yue Zhong's orders, 20 Reapers appeared, forming a unit under Bai Yi's control. They rushed right into the fray of the battle.

When the 20 Reapers appeared, the energy shields absorbed the majority of the bullets from the rebel soldiers. At the same time, their lasers and electromagnetic cannons tore through the ranks of the rebel soldiers.

"Reapers!!

"It's the Reapers!!"

"..."

The moment the 20 Reapers jumped into the fray, the rebels felt despair, their morale dropping once again.

One officer muttered absentmindedly, "Heavy firearms!! Where are our heavy weapons? Our cannons, missiles, Reapers?! Where did they go?"

The rebels had no heavy weapons and were as helpless as gun-wielding soldiers facing tanks. They could only be slaughtered, especially since the Reapers were under Bai Yi's control. Thus, their accuracy was incredibly efficient. The rebel soldiers were simply defenseless.

After they resisted for a while, their defenses were finally broken

through, and the entire unit collapsed. Many chose to flee, while the rest abandoned their weapons and surrendered.

Yue Zhong did not choose to chase after those soldiers after crushing them, instead, he turned the spearhead of the attack towards the outer city gates.

Although the outer gates had been constantly assaulted by the 4 Great Clans, the city wall was still an important structure in the hundreds of years. As the final stand, it was not so easy to destroy it even with heavy weapons.

At the same time, there were many armories outside the outer city gates, with huge amounts of firepower, Reapers, laser gun-mounted vehicles, electromagnetic cannons, as well as other heavy weapons inside.

These weapons had not been utilized earlier because of Yue Zhong and Bai Yi. Many of the weapons were automated or used computers to control. If the City Guards had used them, Bai Yi would have gained control in an instant and used them against the Imperial City.

There were many soldiers of the 4 Great Clans stationed outside the city gates. Many of them were devastated by the assault of those terrifying Reapers.

After half a day of battle, Yue Zhong finally brought the entire outer city under his control.

Along the way, with Chen Tai's help, he had even enlisted over 5,000 City Guards, while making use of the Reapers to wipe out another 2,000 who were not willing to submit.

Once the gates fell into Yue Zhong's hands, he quickly deployed men to activate the automated defense systems.

The Reapers, Mech Fighters, automatic laser weapons were all activated, swiftly occupying the various vantage points.

In the city, the forces of the 4 Great Clans also swiftly gathered,

occupying the various defense points.

Inside a secret basement, the 4 Clan Lords were seated around a table.

Dou Meng's pupils narrowed, "What do we do now? That fellow already controls the outer city. With his Super A.I., they will be able to gather an immense armored force to attack us. We will not be able to hold out."

If the Super A.I. in Yue Zhong's hands could gain enough automated weapons, it would be able to unleash a terrifying might. The 4 Great Clans were extremely clear about this, it was precisely because of this that they had decided to do away with Yue Zhong right after Wei Ming Qing's death. However, they had underestimated Yue Zhong, failing to kill him. Instead, they had allowed him to counterattack with intensity.

Zhao Sheng hesitated a while before replying, "We can gather all the upper clans in the city to fight against him together. He has only about 10,000 people, while we can deploy 100,000. It should be enough to defeat him."

Lu Yi snorted coldly, "100,000. It's not as if you guys don't know what quality those 100,000 are. Among them, the only true soldiers number only about 20,000. And they were those who had just been beaten back by Yue Zhong. The rest of the 80,000 soldiers are just a motley bunch. There might be some experts among them, but against Yue Zhong's armored unit, they would be able to take down a few Reapers and that's it. Furthermore, they are just a bunch of wildcards. If we succeed, it's not too bad, but who knows if they'll stab us in the back if things go awry."

The moment the 4 Great Clans acted, most of the upper clans had joined in their rebellion. These various factions sent their own private armies and equipment. After facing Wei Ming Qing, over 20,000 of these soldiers had either died or were heavily injured, leaving only 80,000.

This 80,000 riff-raff, adding on to the 20,000 elites of the 4 Great Clans, formed the current army within the inner city.

The private forces of the upper clans had little to no training while bullying some citizens was no problem, in an actual military battle, they were weak. During the attack on the inner city, 5,000 City Guards were enough to slaughter over 100,000 of the private forces. This was already a testimony to the weakness of the private soldiers.

Hearing Lu Yi's words, everyone fell silent. They were clear, that in the face of Yue Zhong's armored units, the 100,000 would not be able to withstand.

As long as the casualty rate reached a certain degree, those riff-raff would likely submit to Yue Zhong, after all, the majority of them had no enmity with Yue Zhong.

After a moment of silence, Chen Mu suddenly spoke up, "Let's try talking to him."

Dou Meng voiced his concern, "I'm afraid that he's not willing. He already has the upper hand, if he's vicious enough, he could wipe us all out."

Chen Mu continued slowly, "As long as he accepts us, we can crown him the Emperor of Cloud Region!"

Zhao Sheng frowned and barked out, "I object!! It was enough with a single Wei Ming Qing, if Yue Zhong really became the Emperor, with his Super A.I., we do not have a shred of bargaining power against him."

Chen Mu replied coldly, "When Wei Ming Qing was around, was there anything our 4 Great Clans could do? If it was not for Yue Zhong and his Super A.I., we could not have overthrown Wei Ming Qing at all! And now, are we able to stop him from ascending the throne?"

Lu Yi retorted, "Even if we don't have the strength to stop him,

without us, he can forget about ascension being an easy feat."

Chen Mu nodded, "That's right, and that's the only bargaining chip we have, that we must take out."

Controlling a city was not an easy matter. Yue Zhong did not have a foothold at all. If he wanted to control the city, he would need a lot of energy. If he was to become King, many of the upper clans might proclaim their loyalty and obedience, but there would still be undercurrents.

Inside the room, silence fell upon them once more.

After a long while, Dou Meng spoke slowly, "Let's send Lu Hua over now"

Soon, an enhanced motorcycle shot towards the outer city gates like the gust of a wind.

On the city walls, a number of City Guards were standing at various vantage points, while Yue Zhong observed the surroundings while pacing up and down the place.

Phantom was following behind him, eyeing this man with a complicated gaze. This person had actually pulled out a troop from within the mayhem and took control of the most important city walls. Currently, with the help of his Super A.I., he had already become the person with the strongest military might within a day.

Chen Tai, who was beside Yue Zhong, suddenly asked, "Sir, may I ask, why aren't we attacking the inner city? With my troops' strength, it is definitely enough to crush the rebels."

Chen Tai had just submitted to Yue Zhong not too long ago. He hoped to use the various battles to prove his loyalty and gain merit.

With the various heavy firepower, Chen Tai had the confidence that with 500 men, they could annihilate the 100,000 men in the inner city.

Yue Zhong had the weapons and the Super A.I. It was practically

a fully armed U.S. troop against knife-wielding backward barbarians. There was simply no comparison between both parties.

Yue Zhong eyed the inner city and spoke slowly, "I'm waiting for some people. If they're smart, they would send some people over today. I will wait until tomorrow the latest. If those rebel heads are still stubborn, then, no mercy to them."

One soldier came running over at that time, "Sir! There's an envoy requesting your audience."

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "Bring him over."

"Yes!"

Soon, a smart-looking man with decent features appeared. He was wearing a suit and had short, black hair. He saluted as he saw Yue Zhong, "Zhou Xin greets Sir Yue Zhong!"

Yue Zhong turned around and had an indifferent expression, "Speak your mind."

Zhou Xin looked at him and spoke, "Sir, your talents are heaven-defying and you have eradicated the evil demon Wei Ming Qing, saving the lives of millions here in Cloud Region, and you're the savior of Cloud Region! Our Zhou Clan is representing the entire Cloud Region and hopes that you, Sir, can ascend the throne and become the new Emperor."

# Chapter 898: Seeking Peace!

---

"New Emperor?"

Yue Zhong laughed blandly when he heard it. He had never intended to become an Emperor. It was a position that was thrown into the various corners of history.

Right now, China was in turmoil, with zombies and Mutant Beasts roaming everywhere. Should Yue Zhong declare himself as Emperor, even his subordinates would give up on him.

Yuan Shi Kai had suffered greatly due to his obsession of being Emperor. In the end, he had died helplessly. It did not matter who the Emperor was through the ages, power changed hands constantly. If Yue Zhong really wanted to be the Emperor, he would have to slaughter many people, only then, could he truly become one.

When he had started establishing his cabinets, he was very clear about this from the get-go. It was meant to emulate the governments of prior to the apocalypse, without too much innovation. He just wanted to possess the most power and authority, dictating over everyone else. He was not interested in being an 'Emperor'.

Yue Zhong continued, "Forget about being an Emperor. Zhou Xin, I hope that your Zhou family can assist me in controlling the situation in the city. As long as you can accomplish this, I will not mistreat your Zhou family."

Zhou Xin's face fell slightly, as he raised his voice just a bit, "Your Majesty, you are the Heaven's chosen, the King of the people. Please ascend the throne and give the citizens a peace of mind.".

Regardless of whoever the Emperor was, before he ascended, they would usually pretend to push off the ascension. At that point, the subjects had to act their part and coax the Emperor-to-be

constantly.

Zhou Xin had assumed that Yue Zhong was just going through the formalities, and did not expect Yue Zhong to be disinterested in being the Emperor.

Hearing Zhou Xin's words, Yue Zhong frowned.

Just then, a soldier came up to Yue Zhong and reported, "Sir, the 4 Great Clans had sent an envoy."

Zhou Xin's face fell when he heard that. It had not been easy for their Zhou Clan to get this opportunity, he was not willing to give the opportunity to someone else.

Another middle-aged man in a suit and short hair with an elegant demeanor came up to Yue Zhong, saluting him, "Lu Hua greets Sir Yue Zhong!!"

The City Guards on the wall glared at Lu Hua, their eyes filled with animosity. This time, if it was not for the rebellion of the 4 Great Clans, they would not be in this mess.

Yue Zhong shot him a cold glare, his tony icy, "You still dare to see me? Aren't you afraid that I'll kill you?"

Not too long ago, the 4 Great Clans had stabbed Yue Zhong in the back. If it was not for Yue Zhong being constantly on guard against them, even if his strength was overbearing, he would have been killed by them. He was filled with disgust and hate for them.

"Sir Yue Zhong, it had truly been our fault. Let me represent the 4 Clans to express our apologies." Lu Hua bowed deeply.

Lu Hua then looked straight at Yue Zhong, "Sir, in order to show our sincerest apologies, our 4 Clan Heads had decided to confer upon you the Lord of Cloud Region, ascending to be the Emperor! With our support, it will naturally be easier to control the Capital. If you insist on battling us, then, even if you win, it would be at a huge cost!"

Yue Zhong frowned once more. He could not disagree with what Lu Hua said. In terms of a frontal clash, he held the advantage of the armored units and City Guards, enabling him to wipe out the 4 Great Clans.

However, they had built up their foundations for countless years, their relationships with the various clans deep and complex. Other than that, there were many pawns of theirs everywhere.

If Yue Zhong forcefully wiped out the 4 Great Clans, it would take a long time to restabilize society, as well as funds and resources into developing a department specially to weed out spies and rebels.

At this time, Yue Zhong's communicator on his wrist vibrated, He opened it up, only to see Han Qiong with a pale expression.

Han Qiong reported, "Sir, things are bad. The sentry officers at the Xue Luo Forts have discovered numerous Dino-people marching on towards the Forts. Zheng Yan He has already deployed a unit to go and impede them. However, the results are unclear at the moment. Based on his judgment, this time, there seem to be at least 2 Dino-Kingdoms that joined forces. He is requesting aid.

Yue Zhong's face turned ugly. He knew the strength of the Dino-Kingdoms. At that time, the Stego-King had just sent out a small part of his troops, and it was already enough to sweep through Green Region. Had Yue Zhong not made use of the Green Lake to flood the entire place, the Stego-Kingdom might have already conquered Green Region.

If 2 Kingdoms joined hands, then no matter how strong the Xue Luo Fort was, it would be hard to hold their ground.

Yue Zhong continued gravely, "Has our men verified it?"

Han Qiong's face was serious, "Lai Wei had already taken some men to go scout. It is as Zheng Yan He said, there are countless

Dino-warriors marching towards us. As to whether it is 2 Kingdoms or not, she isn't too clear."

Yue Zhong declared, "Hand the 3,000 soldiers that we had captured previously over to Zheng Yan He, together with their equipment. Once things happen, support him as best as you can."

If the lips are gone, the teeth will be cold. Should anything happened to the Xue Luo Forts, the entire Cloud Region would be at the mercy of the Dino-race. They will farm the humans just as Wei Ming Qing did, producing Blood Honey for their own sake. Cloud Region would become hell then.

Han Qiong responded, "Understood!"

After ending the conversation, Yue Zhong went over to Lu Hua and spoke coldly, "I can forgive the mistakes of the 4 Clans. However, I want you guys to hand over all your troops now. Otherwise, if it comes down to me having to break you guys, I will not leave a single soul alive. Is that clear?"

Right now, Cloud Region was about to enter its most dangerous period. If the humans within could not be united, then once the Dino-warriors arrived, humans would perish.

If all the elites could be commanded by Yue Zhong, he could produce another unit that would be fully equipped. If the 4 Clans insisted on keeping their troops, then Yue Zhong had to keep some troops aside to keep them in check. It was not acceptable to him.

Lu Hua's face turned incredibly ugly, "Sir, I don't have that authority."

Yue Zhong's expression turned dark as he waved his hands, "You can go and tell someone who has the authority. You only have one night. Do not test my patience. If you submit to me, I can guarantee that your personal wealth and people would be safe. Go against me, I shall be ruthless."

Lu Hua bowed and left, albeit with a bitter expression, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong then faced Zhou Xin, "Zhou Xin!"

"What does Sir have for me?"

Yue Zhong's gaze was cold, "Go tell your Clan to make sure to convey my orders. All the upper clans are to submit to me, and their military forces handed to me by tomorrow. Those who do, I will leave their personal property alone. If not, I will send my army out to wipe out those who disobey."

Zhou Xin detected the strong bloody intent in Yue Zhong's words, and his body trembled, "Your Majesty, relax, our Zhou Clan will definitely convey your words. We will lead the rest in handing our forces over as well."

Yue Zhong patted his Zhou Xin's shoulders, "Good! As long as you're loyal, I will not mistreat you."

Zhou Xin trembled in excitement, "Thank you, Your Majesty, thank you!"

"You may go."

"Your Majesty, this is the most beautiful 'pearl' of our clan, Zhou Xuan. We hope that you will take her in as your imperial concubine."

Zhou Xin retrieved a projection box, and with a bright flash, an image of a beautiful 16 or 17-year-old appeared. Her skin was fair and her figure voluptuous, while her legs were long and slender.

The projection box utilized the most advanced holographic technology, allowing a person's image to be captured and displayed in an extremely life-like manner.

Yue Zhong replied blandly, "I'm not interested in becoming an Emperor. However, I can allow her to be my woman."

Right now, a political marriage could appease Zhou Clan, and it was a necessary move. Although Yue Zhong was not a politician, as he grew and matured, he learned some things as well.

Zhou Xin was excited as he grinned, "Thank you, Your Majesty!! Thank you!"

If they could join the future lord of Cloud Region through marriage, the Zhou Clan would definitely have a bright future. As long as they were careful, riches and power would be theirs.

The Zhou Clan knew that Yue Zhong had the Super A.I. Bai Yi and he had already gained the loyalty of the Central City Guards. With the weapons in the outer city, it was not impossible for him to reign with an iron fist. By relying on such strength, as long as he did not make a stupid mistake, it would be soon when the whole Cloud Region was his to command. It was because of this that the Zhou Clan decided to stake their all on Yue Zhong.

Within a basement inside the city, Lu Hua conveyed Yue Zhong's words to the 4 leaders.

Dou Meng asked in a sullen voice, "What do you guys think?"

Chen Mu replied, "Agree. As long as our people can be spared, everything can be restarted."

Lu Yi spoke up after a while, "We can agree. He needs our help in maintaining order right now. That way, we definitely have cards for our comeback."

Their gazes fell on Zhao Sheng.

Zhao Sheng fell silent for a while before sighing, "Looks like we can only agree now."

# Chapter 899: Government!

---

After the 4 Great Clans chose to submit, the control of the forces was quickly handed over to Yue Zhong. With their current military might and weapons, it was impossible to contend with Yue Zhong and his Super A.I. If they insisted on battling, their blood would flow and to Yue Zhong, he just had to spend more time to gain total control over the capital.

When they had passed the authority of the forces to Yue Zhong, the rest of the upper clans were convinced by the Zhou Clan to also hand over their forces.

There were some clans that were not willing to submit, but they were quickly taken care of with some deployed troops. Since blood was shed, the rest began to cooperate obediently.

Those hooligans and thugs seeking to take advantage of the mayhem to rob, rape, and pillage were all rounded up and executed swiftly.

The 4 Great Clans and Zhou Clan also kept their word, activating their forces to help maintain peace in the Capital. With their help, the chaos in the Capital was quickly quelled.

Inside the Capital, a military vehicle stopped right outside of the Zhou Clan. The doors opened, and Yue Zhong got out quickly, dressed in a black outfit.

In front of the Zhou Manor, the people of the Zhou Clan were all gathered and awaiting Yue Zhong's arrival.

Seeing Yue Zhong get down from the vehicle, Zhou Wang came forward and announced with respect, "Your Majesty has graced us with your presence, your subject Zhou Wang is lacking in manners, please pardon your subject."

The rest of the Zhou Manor also chimed in unison, "Greetings your Majesty!"

Although Yue Zhong did not officially ascend to the throne, within the Capital, everyone had taken him to be the Emperor already.

After he had gained his authority, he did not mistreat his subjects nor indulge in pretty women and luxury. Instead, he enforced strict military training, implementing laws for the better of the people, carrying out his duties diligently. This led everyone to feel more assured.

With his current strength, unless he committed something as crazy as Wei Ming Qing, it was not impossible for him to consolidate and unite the whole Cloud Region.

Yue Zhong swiftly replied, "Zhou Clan Head, enough with the formalities. This time, it was mainly due to your family's contributions. I will not forget this."

Zhou Wang's heart was elated, but he continued to wear a respectful expression, "Thank you, Your Majesty."

Within the crowd, a little girl who had extremely adorable looks shot a gaze over at Yue Zhong.

He returned the look, and the girl lowered her head flusteredly, as her face flushed.

Yue Zhong chuckled and went into the manor.

Zhou Wang, who had been observing carefully, smiled till his eyes were shut, keeping this little exchange between Yue Zhong and the girl in mind.

In the hall, Yue Zhong sat on the main seat, while Zhou Wang sat beside him.

Yue Zhong immediately went straight to the point, "Zhou Clan Head, this time, I'm here hoping that you'll join the government that I'm setting up, and work for me."

Zhou Wang frowned when he heard that, "Why a government?"

Yue Zhong chuckled and explained to him the structure and responsibilities that came with it.

When Zhou Wang heard it all, his face glowered in excitement, replying, "Thank you Your Majesty! Your subject Zhou Wang will not let your expectations of me down!"

The government or cabinet held most of the authority and power over the citizens, with every single member owning a voice or vote.

When the past system of Cloud Region was the imperialistic rule with a single Emperor, all the power belonged to Wei Ming Qing alone. He made the decisions for a vast majority of things. However, Yue Zhong was now willing to place that authority in the hands of a cabinet, this was naturally good news to Zhou Wang.

After he calmed himself down, he asked, "Your Majesty, how many people will the cabinet be made up of?"

Yue Zhong replied, "11. Currently, there are 5 people confirmed. The 4 Clan Heads as well as yourself. I'll gather the rest in time to come."

With the 4 Clan Heads delivering the private troops to Yue Zhong, taking the initiative to help Yue Zhong calm the chaos within the Capital, he had to give them something back too.

Zhou Wang nodded, he could not help but admire this move of Yue Zhong.

Right now, the Capital needed stability the most. By allowing the 4 Great Clans to be in the cabinet, they know that they possess some authority, and hence, it would help stroke their ego. At the same time, with 11 people in the cabinet, the 4 of them would not possess too much of a power, overriding anyone else. The 6 empty seats would thus provide an opportunity for the other upper clans to submit to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong then looked at Zhou Wang directly, "Zhou Family

Head, this time, I'm here for another matter as well. I heard that your ancestor helped to design and construct the Imperial Palace. I would like to know where the armory is?"

The Imperial City was where the Emperor's Wei Clan resided in. Yue Zhong had already sent men to comb the area over and discovered many Mutant Beast nuclei and weapon storage facilities. They even discovered an underground missile base, and yet, there was no treasury that belonged to Wei Ming Qing alone.

Due to the intelligence from some insiders, Yue Zhong knew that Wei Ming Qing possessed a Type 6 Mutant Beast nuclei. It was the energy source that could power the ultimate weapon Raytheon cannon.

The Type 6 Mutant Beast nucleus was extremely important to Yue Zhong. If he could gain it, any of his Type 4 Mutant Beasts could directly evolve to the Type 5 stage. He could also create a Type 6 Puppet Rune, then seek an opportunity to bring a Type 6 Mutant Beast or Type 6 Divine Warrior under his control.

Other than the Type 6 Nucleus, there was likely various strange stones that the Wei Clan had accumulated over the years, once Yue Zhong gained them, his strength would undergo another transformation again.

Zhou Wang thought deep, his brows furrowing as he went through the various rooms mentally. His eyes suddenly brightened, "The Bi Tao Lake! If Wei Ming Qing had hidden anything, it will most likely be there!"

Once Yue Zhong obtained his information, he immediately turned to leave, "Bi Tao Lake? Ok, thanks!"

Yue Zhong had seen Wei Ming Qing emerge from the lake and originally thought that Wei Ming Qing had been cultivating at the bottom of the lake. Now, it seemed that it was likely that Wei Ming Qing was training in his secret room within the lake.

After Yue Zhong left, Zhou Wang's eyes scrunched up in a smile, as he ordered, "Get Zhou Xin over here."

Zhou Xin came quickly, "Clan Head, what's the matter?"

Zhou Wang spoke lowly, "Go arrange for Zhou Xuan to be sent to the Imperial Palace."

Zhou Xin was taken aback, "Clan Head, didn't we agree for her to be sent over only after everything settles down?"

In response, Zhou Wang sighed, "It's different now. Yue Zhong is, after all, a young hero. Those old foxes will catch on. In order to secure a seat in the cabinet, they will resort to any means available. If Xuan'er goes too late, I'm afraid she might not stand a chance with Yue Zhong. I think that he took a liking to her, so we'd better strike while the iron's hot."

It was not too long ago where the upper clans were still maintaining wariness against Yue Zhong. They wanted to see what kind of a leader he was. A person with strength might not necessarily be a good leader. If he had turned out to be some brawn-with-no-brain, they would not bet on him.

However, once they ascertain that he was someone capable of great things, they will fight to offer their daughters out, to make him a family member through marriage. Although Zhou Xuan was cute, it was unlikely that she could win the other females. If she could first leave an impression on Yue Zhong, then it will help her future.

"Yes!" Zhou Xin responded respectfully and dismissed himself.

When Yue Zhong left the Zhou Clan, he went directly straight to the palace.

After the rebellion, many of the structures within the palace had been damaged. Holes could be seen everywhere, but even so, the entire place still looked remarkable.

Yue Zhong did not seem to mind those holes and chose to stay

reside within the palace. After all, it was the center of the Capital, and there was nowhere else like it.

As he passed through the corridors, he finally came to the Bi Tao Lake.

The lake was vast, almost twice as large as China's West Lake. The surface of the lake was somewhat green in color, as though it harbored some terrifying monster underneath.

Yue Zhong eyed the lake and could feel that there was some threat from the lake, although he was not too sure what it was.

It was precisely because he felt that danger, that he did not immediately jump into the lake to investigate.

After a moment's hesitation, Yue Zhong put on the Sea Mask, channeling his Dark Dou Qi, and jumped into the lake.

It was unclear how deep the lake was, and underwater, the scenery was almost entirely black. There was no light, and it seemed extremely insidious.

However, to Yue Zhong, who had Night Vision, he could peer deep through the waters, noticing that there were plenty of Mutant Beasts at the bottom of the lake. They were like snakes, about 10m long, and were covered with black scales. Most importantly, they had no eyes.

Yue Zhong's Eye of Perception kicked in and revealed information on these beasts, "Type 4 Mutant Beast, Eyeless Beast. Incredibly ferocious water-based Mutant Beasts. Their speed is extremely fast and live in swarms. Their teeth are sharp, and can tear through the scales of Type 6 Mutant Beasts."

He stared at them and felt his scalp go numb.

# Chapter 900: Eyeless Beasts!

---

The bodies of these Eyeless Beasts seemed no different from ordinary Mutant Beasts. However, they were Type 4 existences, and that meant, there was definitely something terrifying about them.

What caused Yue Zhong's scalp to go numb was that from what he could observe, there were more than a hundred of them in his line of sight.

The lake was extremely vast, and if he were to estimate the number based on the proximity that he was seeing, it was likely that there were over a thousand of them.

If a thousand of these monsters were to be unleashed, even a Type 5 Mutant Beast would be consumed till only the bones were left.

Although Yue Zhong was strong, facing a thousand of these freaks would spell his death.

When he saw these Eyeless Beasts resting, he twisted around and swam towards the shore.

At this moment, a Mutant Black Fish of about 10m swam near the bottom of the lake.

One of the Eyeless Beast about a hundred meters away from it suddenly sprang into action, It reached the Mutant Black Fish in seconds and opened its jaws to chomp down on that unsuspecting Mutant Black Fish.

With a loud crack, the Mutant Black Fish could not even react and its head was directly crushed by the jaws of the Type 4 Eyeless Beast. Fresh blood spread out in the water.

The blood immediately attracted the rest of the Eyeless Beasts, each of them shooting towards the corpse of the Mutant Black Fish like lightning bolts.

In a matter of seconds, the entire Mutant Black Fish was consumed.

Yue Zhong saw this and his heart turned cold. In the waters, his combat strength would not even reach such a terrifying level. The Mutant Black Fish was so easily taken out by those Eyeless Beast. If it were him there, facing those Eyeless Beasts, he would likely be destroyed in a second as well.

Yue Zhong swam to the shore and frowned while pondering, "What do I do?"

Yue Zhong did not know how Wei Ming Qing got in and out freely. This was a lake where even a Type 6 expert could be torn to pieces. Now that Wei Ming Qing was dead, finding out how to reach the bottom of the lake had become a difficult thing.

"Drain the water out?"

Yue Zhong continued to stare at the lake with a vexed expression. If he drained the waters, he could deploy the army to clear up all the beasts in the water. However, it would take an indeterminate amount of time, and what he lacked now was time.

He thought hard and long and did away with a few conjectures. He suddenly thought of the scene where the Mutant Black Fish was torn to bits, and his eyes brightened up. With a communicator device, he issued an order to Bai Yi.

Soon, under Bai Yi's deployment, all the battle personnel were in place.

Having made his preparations, Yue Zhong came to the side of the lake, pulling out a bottle full of Type 5 Mutant Beast blood, and poured it slowly into the lake.

The blood of a Type 5 Mutant Beast was a huge boon to most Mutant Beasts, helping to push their evolution. The moment the blood entered the water, the lake started to churn. Many Mutant Prawns, Mutant Crabs, and Mutant Lice swam over, fighting to

take in the blood of the Type 5 Mutant Beast.

One particular Type 3 Mutant Water Centipede charged out with its sharp pincers and sucked in deep. A huge number of the smaller Mutant Beasts were all drawn into its mouth. It then clamped down and crushed down on those Mutant Beasts.

The various aquatic Mutant Beasts swam over.

In order to obtain the Type 5 blood, many larger ones began to attack the weaker Mutant Beasts, sucking them all into their stomachs.

Yue Zhong poured half the bottle into the lake, before pouring the rest outwards.

Attracted by the scent of the blood, many more low-level Mutant Beasts began to swarm over.

Yue Zhong watched the horde of low-level Mutant Beasts and frowned. He pulled out his Type 5 Black Tooth Blade and slashed out, slaughtering them with ease. The precious Type 5 blood was not for these low-level Mutant Beasts.

The low-level Mutant Beasts were killed easily by Yue Zhong. With his Type 5 Divine Warrior strength, it was not tiring to deal a thousand of them.

After killing a hundred of them, the water suddenly churned violently. At that instant, one of the Eyeless Beast shot out from the water, opening its huge jaws to bite down on the Type 3 Mutant Water Centipede. The jaws of the Eyeless Beast crushed the head of the Mutant Water Centipede like it was nothing.

The water churned even more, as numerous Eyeless Beasts shot out from the water, pouncing on the various large aquatic Mutant Beasts. They opened their jaws and clamped down on those defenseless beasts.

Yue Zhong was about 20m from the shore. He saw one Type 3 Mutant Black Fish that was over 30m in length, the size of a house,

being pounced on by one of the Eyeless Beasts. The monster bit out a hole in the head and burrowed in.

The gigantic Type 3 Black Fish struggled for a while, before floating lifelessly. The Eyeless Beast emerged from another part of the body, covered in blood, looking extremely terrifying.

These Eyeless Beasts were obviously the overlords of this Bi Tao Lake, the moment they appeared, the rest of the Mutant Beasts began to flee.

Yue Zhong saw the rest of the Mutant Beasts disappearing, and hurried to scatter the remaining Type 5 Mutant Beast blood. At the same time, he took out some slabs of Type 5 Beast meat and threw them to the ground.

The moment the blood splattered, the Eyeless Beasts swarmed over like flies, pouncing towards Yue Zhong as well.

When they got on land, their speed was still as terrifying, slithering on the ground viciously. It was a horrifying scene that caused people to fear.

Yue Zhong dodged and continued to throw out slabs of Type 5 Beast Meat, attracting those Eyeless Beasts.

In just a few breaths, Yue Zhong had lured over dozens of those beasts to leave the lake.

At that moment, numerous Mech Fighters and 20 Reapers appeared, firing their lasers and electromagnetic beams at the Eyeless Beasts.

With Bai Yi's accurate calculations, the beams rained down on the Eyeless Beasts, punching them full of holes.

Immediately, 7 of them writhed in pools of blood, struggling violently.

In retaliation, some of them lunged towards the Reapers that had appeared in front of them.

The Reapers opened up their energy shields, and the teeth of the Eyeless Beasts sunk into the shields but were unable to proceed further.

The electronic eyes of the Reapers flashed, as they slashed out with their alloy blades. The large blades came slashing down with immense force, slicing up the Eyeless Beasts, leaving them writhing in agony.

A Type 4 Mutant Beast nucleus was a rare resource in places like the Green Region. However, in Cloud Region, with the existences of the powerful Reapers, it was not uncommon to obtain Type 4 Nuclei.

At the same time, due to the abundant resources and technology, Cloud Region was able to produce many experts, thus there were a decent number of Type 5 experts.

With Yue Zhong's specially set up ambush, the battle lasted for about 4 minutes, and 30 Eyeless Beasts were either killed or heavily injured.

When the remaining 7 Eyeless Beasts saw that things were not going well, they swiftly fled towards the lake. Although Type 4 Mutant Beasts were generally still low on the intelligence quotient, when they meet an existence they could not defeat, they would flee as it was in their nature to survive.

As the 7 Eyeless Beasts were fleeing, Yue Zhong swiftly turned around, activating his Summon Tamed Beasts technique. Turtle climbed out from the void and opened its huge mouth, blasting cold air and freezing one of the Eyeless Beast.

The moment Turtle appeared, it channeled its innate ability. The freezing field spread out and caused 4 of them to freeze instantly.

Yue Zhong channeled the Dark Dou Qi, wielding his Black Tooth Blade as he charged towards the remaining 3 Eyeless Beasts.

In a flash, Yue Zhong had already appeared in front of one of the

## Eyeless Beast.

The Eyeless Beast snarled and opened its huge mouth, lunging towards Yue Zhong with its jaws opened. Its speed was extremely quick, and a Type 5 Divine Warrior might not be able to evade. The strength of the Eyeless Beasts might not be able to match Type 3 Mutant Beasts, but when they pounced, their speed was terrifying.

Yue Zhong did not dodge nor evade. His Dark Dou Qi covered his entire body, he waved his Black Tooth Blade at the Eyeless Beast, channeling the Dark Dou Qi into his Black Tooth Blade. His flurry of attacks immediately sliced the Eyeless Beast into two from its head down.

After the Dark Dou Qi was enhanced to the Fourth Order +3, Yue Zhong was able to enhance any weapons he used with it, exhibiting more of its might.

After killing one of them, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a cold glint, as he charged for the 2 remaining ones. With his blade trailing behind him, the 2 Eyeless Beasts were soon made short work of.

# Table of Contents

## God and Devil World

Synopsis

Copyright

Chapter 801: Emissary!

Chapter 802: Trap!

Chapter 803: Type 5 Diplodocus!

Chapter 804: Monstrous Threat!

Chapter 805: The Sun Alliance City is destroyed!

Chapter 806: Treasury!

Chapter 807: Killing Shinya Takahiko!

Chapter 808: Battling the Type 5 Diplodocus!

Chapter 809: Taming the Type 5 Diplodocus!

Chapter 810: Storm Valley Queen Luo Qing Qing!

Chapter 811: The Entrance of Storm Valley!

Chapter 812: Beautiful Willianna!

Chapter 813: Lingering Emotions!

Chapter 814: Storm Imperial City!

Chapter 815: Choosing a Consort!

Chapter 816: Abnormal Change!

Chapter 817: The Oriole Behind!

Chapter 818: Yue Zhong's True Strength!

Chapter 819: Slaughtering Zheng Zhen!

Chapter 820: Subjugating Liu Mei'er!

Chapter 821: Cracked Tooth Gorge!

Chapter 822: Mutual Destruction!

Chapter 823: Controlling the Storm Battleship!

Chapter 824: Ambush!

Chapter 825: The Army Enters the Fray!

Chapter 826: Building a Dam!

Chapter 827: The Intense Battle at the Gorge!

Chapter 828: The Brink of Collapse!

Chapter 829: Huge Flood! Turn the Tides!

Chapter 830: Clash of the Titans!

Chapter 831: Type 5 Mount Tai's Might!

Chapter 832: Intense Battle with a Mid-Grade Dino-General!

- [Chapter 833: Killing Ku Kinken!!](#)
- [Chapter 834: The Dino-people Retreats!](#)
- [Chapter 835: Eradicating the Type 4 Mutant Water Snake!](#)
- [Chapter 836: Cloud Region!](#)
- [Chapter 837: The Winged Race!](#)
- [Chapter 838: Winged Queen Shailene!](#)
- [Chapter 839: Courtship Offering!](#)
- [Chapter 840: One-Move Victory!](#)
- [Chapter 841: Genius Lai Wei!](#)
- [Chapter 842: Type 4 Prehistoric Monitor Lizard!](#)
- [Chapter 843: Intense Battle!](#)
- [Chapter 844: Morale!](#)
- [Chapter 845: Survival from Danger!](#)
- [Chapter 846: Dino-General Ku Feng!](#)
- [Chapter 847: Killing Ku Feng!](#)
- [Chapter 848: Type 5 Metamorphosis!](#)
- [Chapter 849: The Lion Opens Its Jaws!](#)
- [Chapter 850: Assault!](#)
- [Chapter 851: Victory!](#)
- [Chapter 852: Alliance!](#)
- [Chapter 853: Entering the Type 5 Realm!](#)
- [Chapter 854: Shock!](#)
- [Chapter 855: Mutant Green Gulls Flock!](#)
- [Chapter 856: Dominating the Green Gulls!](#)
- [Chapter 857: Cloud Region!](#)
- [Chapter 858: Gloom!](#)
- [Chapter 859: Five Ghosts Gang!](#)
- [Chapter 860: Wiping out the Five Ghosts Gang!](#)
- [Chapter 861: Rebel Army!](#)
- [Chapter 862: Reapers!](#)
- [Chapter 863: Siege!](#)
- [Chapter 864: Tyrannical Yue Zhong!](#)
- [Chapter 865: Situation Under Control!](#)
- [Chapter 866: Tyrant's Orders!](#)
- [Chapter 867: Co-operation!](#)
- [Chapter 868: Sneaking in!](#)
- [Chapter 869: Seen Through!](#)
- [Chapter 870: Danger!](#)
- [Chapter 871: Forceful Breakout!](#)

[Chapter 872: Striking it Rich!](#)  
[Chapter 873: Control!](#)  
[Chapter 874: Gaining 8 Forts!](#)  
[Chapter 875: Han Qiong!](#)  
[Chapter 876: Capital City!](#)  
[Chapter 877: Phantom!](#)  
[Chapter 878: Threat!](#)  
[Chapter 879: Red Dragon Pill!](#)  
[Chapter 880: Phantom Chase!](#)  
[Chapter 881: Strange Movements from the Tyrannosaurus Kingdom!](#)  
[Chapter 882: Sneaking into the Capital!](#)  
[Chapter 883: Choice!](#)  
[Chapter 884: The 4 Great Clans!](#)  
[Chapter 885: Helpless!](#)  
[Chapter 886: The Destruction of 1st Prison!](#)  
[Chapter 887: Deployment!](#)  
[Chapter 888: Guided Energy Missile!](#)  
[Chapter 889: Intense Battle!](#)  
[Chapter 890: Sneaking into the Heart of the Imperial Capital!](#)  
[Chapter 891: Earth Manipulation!](#)  
[Chapter 892: Invincible Wei Ming Qing!](#)  
[Chapter 893: Massacre!](#)  
[Chapter 894: Killing Wei Ming Qing!](#)  
[Chapter 895: Fallout!](#)  
[Chapter 896: Reversal of Situation!](#)  
[Chapter 897: Occupying the Outer City!](#)  
[Chapter 898: Seeking Peace!](#)  
[Chapter 899: Government!](#)  
[Chapter 900: Eyeless Beasts!](#)